



REALMS IN THE FIRMAMENT

BOOK 01

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Realms In The Firmament

(天域苍穹)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Ye Xiao was a superior cultivator in his previous life. The three factions of the realm kill millions of people every time they attempt to seize cultivation resources. Wealthy towns turn to wastelands in just a single night. They cover up their crime with an assertion that the towns were suffering from pestilence and disasters.

They forcibly hold all the resources for cultivation, monopolize all valuable practice materials, and keep outsiders from cultivating so that only their three factions could cultivate in the realm. Ye Xiao declared war against the three factions in retaliation for their actions. He fought alone and ended up dying in vain. However, he is reborn into the mortal body of a 16-year-old boy. He will use the powers he cultivated in his last life and slaughter his way back into the Realm. The story begins!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rain @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Chrissy / Arch @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1: If Only I Had an Afterlife to Wield My Sword Again, I Would Slaughter All Evil and Laugh out Loud to the Firmament

BOOOOM!!! It sounded as if the entire world was shaking.

A large mountain was crushed into pieces as countless broken rocks flew into the air, creating clouds of dust obscuring everything.

Suddenly, with a shout, a figure broke out from the dust clouds. This figure, who was emitting a dazzling light like thunder and lightning in a stormy night, was quickly flying forward. His tremendous speed produced a long streak of dust trailing him with the shape of a Chinese Dragon crawling forward.

Behind this figure, a crowd of people flew through the clouds, creating countless long streaks of dust. They were madly chasing after the person in front, as if they have lost their minds!

"The three largest factions had ganged together. A total of 3496 cultivators chasing me through thirty-seven thousand miles! Aha... You guys are really taking great efforts to eliminate me!"

A loud explosion echoed out as Ye Xiao - the man flying in front, suddenly stopped on an enormous rock, before quickly turning around with a wild laughter. An extremely sharp sword light flew out of his hand at full speed, like a flashing streak of lightning in the firmament.

It was the last of the power he had!

The light flew into the crowd like a lightning strike, causing pitiful cries to burst out. But as one fell, another rose. Some of them bled in the skies before falling to the ground, all the while swinging their hands and feet!

Ye Xiao, who was now bleeding profusely, was rendered unable to fly because of his previous strike.

"Sitting like a lofty mountain, standing like a great rainbow; acting like a storm surging, moving like a thunderbolt."

Sitting, standing, acting, moving, the four lines are excellent descriptions about the cultivators who have reached the Dao Origin Stage.

Although Ye Xiao was among the most powerful Dao Origin cultivators, after this last amazing sword strike, he had become nothing but a spent bullet. At the moment, he was like a lamp out of oil - he had no energy left for flight. When he landed, the rocks under his feet were quickly stained with his blood!

Panting heavily, Ye Xiao's eyes were still filled with scorn as he sneered, "Humph, even if I have reached the end of my life today, even if this Monarch is doomed to fall, do you really think that there will be many of you who will survive here?"

The rock where he stood was on the peak of a huge mountain.

When Ye Xiao looked back, he was like a king in the sky, looking down with imperceptible stateliness even in this imminent predicament!

Fearing Ye Xiao's aggression, the hundreds of cultivators chasing him stood still in front of him! They were looking at him with misgivings in their eyes. Far behind them, beyond the limits of one's eyesight, there was a path. It was the path they had travelled along which was currently made of countless corpses. Suddenly, an unexpected howling wind came over, and a few decapitated heads with open eyes were blown and sent rolling.

The cost they paid for Ye Xiao's death was obviously shown by this path of carnage which was built of flesh and blood, covering thousands of miles over mountains and rivers!

Although the Xiao Monarch was clearly at the end of his rope, and although the surrounding people knew that the Xiao Monarch would find it impossible to get away, for the moment, none of them still dared to take a step forward!

All of them clearly knew that, at this moment, whoever dared to take a step forward, would instantly get killed, get buried along with the dead, and go to hell with Ye Xiao!

No matter who, there would be no exception!

It was a clear point with no room for any doubt.

Because the guy standing in front of them, was the Xiao Monarch!

Laughing out loud at all the heroes under the firmament, he was the monarch of the universe!

The Xiao Monarch was a legend in the realms of the firmament!

The 3496 cultivators from the three factions had set up huge traps and used countless approaches to hunt him down, travelled thirty-seven thousand miles and destroyed nearly every mountain and river they had passed, however, Ye Xiao, on his own, had unexpectedly killed almost all the 3496 cultivators behind him, leaving countless broken lands and piles of dead cultivators' bodies wherever he went!

Who could dare to look down upon such a formidable man?

Even when he had reached his end, nobody would dare to challenge his sword!

"Xiao Monarch! We wouldn't have ganged together to hunt you down like this if it were not for your perverseness against us." A sage-like old man in the crowd sighed, completely exhausted, "I just don't understand why... our well known Xiao Monarch... would suddenly declare war against us and try to kill us. What you did has led to losses on both sides. Since it won't do you any good,

why are you doing this?"

Although the three factions finally had the chance to slaughter their shared enemy, Ye Xiao, the cost they had paid for it was totally unbearable. They had lost almost ninety percent of their warriors in this battle. The losses they had suffered were so massive, to the point where they would find it impossible to revitalize themselves within the next one thousand years.

The three factions would lose their top faction status in the Qing-Yun Realm once other factions begin to rise - it must be the worst situation for them. Besides, there were still the Palaces and the Temples aiming for their heads like tigers stalking their prey!

After everything that occurred, they were still muddle-headed. They still couldn't understand what the problem was with this horrible Xiao Monarch?! This was truly harming others without benefiting oneself!

Had the domineering Xiao Monarch, who persisted his old ways and had never cared about anything, gone crazy?

Ye Xiao sneered, "So you don't get it? You really don't get it? Aha..."

He looked down at the huge pit on his chest through which his entrails could be seen and actually stretched his wounded body. He chillingly said, "No matter what dirty business you three factions did, I didn't give a damn about it. Except you forcibly occupied all the cultivation resources, changed the energy sources and

monopolized all valuable practice materials! You kept other people from cultivating themselves so that only you three factions could practice in the Qing-Yun Realm... Your actions are so overbearing, even going as far as breaking people's futures. I just detested this! Since I detested it, I must discipline it!"

"No, Xiao Monarch! You are wrong! Only the virtuous should own the treasures in this world. Those who want to cultivate themselves should follow the law of the jungle. We did nothing wrong!"

"What -hah!" Ye Xiao laughed out as he coughed, "The virtuous you were saying? That is right. The treasures in the world belong to anyone. No matter who, the one who seizes them has the right to own them. On that I agree. However, you slaughtered millions of innocent people just because you wanted to control the miraculous mountains, using those souls of the dead as sacrificial offerings to build the power vein! You made large wealthy towns turn into wastelands filled with death and coldness. Then you would cover up your crime with a claim that those places were suffering with pestilences, and you had to do that to save the rest of the realm... How many times did you mindlessly murder a whole town and distort facts in these years? How dare you claim to be virtuous? Such bloody virtuous! HAHAAHAH!!"

He wildly laughed as he spoke. He had an undisguised tone that was full of provocation.

"All cultivation resources are yours. Anyone who dares to take some will get no mercy, and all his relatives will also be killed - no one lives! You guys acted excessively first, I am just fighting back

the same way. How difficult could it be to understand?"

He bended his mouth and smiled sarcastically.

After Ye Xiao spoke, the three leaders of the crowd - the heads of the three factions, had hideous expressions.

"So that's it... The reason you fought against us is simply to fight for justice... to defend cultivators against our injustice? Aha, what a noble man, Xiao Monarch! Even so, after your death today, who on earth would stand up and face us? We three factions may have suffered a great loss, but we are not destroyed. After no more than a thousand years, we will fully recover! What a pity. After today, there will no longer be a famous Xiao Monarch!" The sage-like old man sneered.

"As long as I am still alive, I will never let you proceed with it! If I die... the world would have nothing to do with me." Ye Xiao smiled indifferently, "As long as I can still breathe, the only thing I would like to do, is to wipe all of you bastards out!"

Even though he was speaking with disdain, he still felt sorry in his heart because he couldn't wipe out the three factions to avenge his brother!

It was his life's greatest regret!

"I see. We get it." The old man nodded slowly with a crazy murderous look, "Enough talking, we will end your life! We won't

let you stay alive!"

Grinding his teeth, he waved his hand as he shouted, "Go! Kill him! Whatever the cost!"

All the warriors attacked at the same time with their full power! Hundreds of the warriors risked their lives by using all of their power in this final attack. Countless lights and noises mixed together with countless strong powers, striking Ye Xiao like a huge storm!

The power created by the three factions together had really shook the earth and the sky. All that could be seen was dust flying up in the air as the land underneath seemed to crack. The mountain where Ye Xiao previously stood was instantly crushed into pieces as dust now covered everything. With countless broken rocks flying up, the mountains in between them were completely destroyed all at once.

Ye Xiao laughed out loud. After this one-month long battle, he was truly too exhausted. Even moving a single step felt like climbing the highest of mountains. He could do nothing to defend himself against all these destructive attacks, so he looked carelessly at his enemies with a smile on his face.

At this instant, he and the mountain below his feet were about to be hit by this immense tidal wave of attacks!

His voice reverberated through the air right before he was hit.

"It is a pity that I was fighting alone and failed to kill all of you! If I am given a second chance, I promise, I will cut down all your heads... Fighting alone and letting you bastards get away with your lives is my lifelong regret!"

At the last moment of his life, the unbeatable loner Xiao Monarch finally realized his greatest weakness!

He was solitary!

Even though he had already become one of the supreme masters in this world, when facing the force of the three largest factions, he himself was simply not enough!

BOOOM! An extremely loud explosion turned the entire sky-high solid mountain into a dust rain of pebbles and rocks.

Dust overflowed and rocks rolled.

The Xiao Monarch left his last words with his last breath,

"I don't regret my life even though it was so tough, but I hate that I couldn't wipe the evil out. If only I had an afterlife to wield my sword again, I would slaughter all evil so that I could laugh out loud under the firmament."

In the mist, the sage-like old man looked at the mess; he murmured with a sullen expression, "Even if you realized it... you would still never stand a chance... and now, you will never know

of the truth..."

He sneered, "If only I had an afterlife to wield my sword again, I would slaughter all evil so that I could laugh out loud under the firmament... Humph, what a pity, Xiao Monarch, there is no such thing as an afterlife!"

"Off we go!" The old man waved his hand. All the warriors turned back and left.

No one had noticed that the moment when the Xiao Monarch died, a thin purple light had flashed briefly in the sky.

As the wild wind was howling, all the dust was blown away. The mountain had long disappeared, and there were only the broken rocks on the ground.

Only in the air was there a faintly discernible voice.

"If only I had an afterlife to wield my sword again, I would slaughter all evil so that I could laugh out loud under the firmament..."

.....

Ye Xiao suddenly woke up!

His entire body was screaming in agony. But while he was

focusing on the pain, his mind fell into the endless confusion!

"What is going on? Wasn't I fighting against the three factions? Didn't I die? My body was destroyed and my spirit was extinguished. My soul has already dissipated. How could I still survive after facing that destructive attack..." He opened his eyes and a luxurious room entered his vision. Then, he felt like he was lying on a soft bed...

"I... didn't die?"

He had suffered such immensely powerful attacks while having absolutely no power to fight back or even resist. He was surely smashed to pieces. How could he still be alive?

Ye Xiao couldn't help but scratch his head, "Oh right, my body... Wait a second!"

His eyes almost fell out of their sockets as he stared in shock at his stretched out arms.

Hands with white skin and long bony fingers; they were even lovelier than those beautiful hands a girl possessed...

"These are not my hands!" Ye Xiao was in a daze as he stared at his hands.

The next moment, he quickly sat up, grabbed the mirror beside the bed and lifted it up to his face. And then he cried out.

In the mirror, he saw an unknown youth who was about 16 years old, with white skin and sharp eyebrows. It was a handsome guy with red lips that looked as pretty as a lady's .

"Beautiful..."

He stopped with a click of his tongue. He realized that it was not the right word to describe a guy, so he decided to correct himself.

"Very handsome..." He nodded, "That's better... But what the hell's going on?"

Then he felt an excruciating pain in his head. A memory forcefully flowed into his mind like a tidal wave, almost making him lose his consciousness once again.

Ye Xiao grasped his head while gasping for air. Only when he had finally absorbed the whole memory did he calm himself down.

"Oh, I see..."

Chapter 2: Weirdoes Make Weird Friends

Ye Xiao was too shocked to close his mouth. Even though he had been calm all along, he could have never imagined that this seemingly impossible miracle had actually occurred.

This body... actually belonged to someone else...

At the moment, where Ye Xiao stayed at was the [Land of Han-Yang](#), the mortal world as it was known in the Qing-Yun Realm.

Although his body originally belonged to a stranger, he still retained the name Ye Xiao, as he and the former owner of the body coincidentally shared names. The previous Ye Xiao was the son of the Northern General Ye Nantian in the [Kingdom of Chen](#).

It was in the General's House where our main character, Ye Xiao, awoke in his second life.

Yesterday, the original owner of the body had been drinking all night long with his disreputable friends, before he got home and died because of an excruciating pain in his belly.

At that time, a tiny piece of Xiao Monarch's soul was still active and coincidentally flew into the dying body.

"I think I can understand my situation right now... No... I still don't get it..." Ye Xiao frowned while kneading his temple, "I did feel my soul fading away... There was no way I can still be alive.

How did I survive and get reborn in this body? Unbelievable...”

Even though he was quite a knowledgeable man, he still couldn't figure out what was going on.

It was absolutely impossible for this kind of thing to happen... but, it had really just happened to him.

“Well, fair enough... One who is alive has hopes, and now I have mine. With my extensive experience, as long as I cultivate myself correctly, I will soon become the great Xiao Monarch once again! When that day comes, I will take my revenge on the three factions and kill them all! NO MERCY!!”

He gnashed his teeth with a combative look.

The three factions had spared no efforts to deal with him, and they had finally beaten him to death. However, they could have never thought that the Xiao Monarch they had painstakingly killed was still breathing at this moment.

“Bastards, one of these coming days, I will surprise you all!” He thought.

While he was collecting his thoughts, he was suddenly assaulted by a pain inside his belly, causing his expression to turn ugly. It was an unbearable pain that felt like his intestines were being torn apart.

“Damn! Now I know how this kid died... He was poisoned...” Ye Xiao immediately realized what was happening to him, since he had lots of similar experiences. Even though he had realized what was happening, he couldn’t stop the influence of the poison on his body. He was in too much pain that he couldn’t even wipe the sweat off of his forehead.

The boy, the son of a general, had actually been poisoned to death.

At the moment, even though Ye Xiao had taken over the body, the poison still existed, and it still had the function of causing death. However, while the poison was strong enough to have killed the boy, luckily, it was not strong enough to kill Ye Xiao!

“It’s just nothing but a [Qing-Ming Fruit Poison](#)... humph.”

Ye Xiao thought; he didn’t fully treat the poison as some sort of threat, because he had identified the poison in an instant. Suddenly, his vision went black. Realizing that the poison had started working again, he decided to quickly use his spiritual qi in order to clear up the poison, but in the next moment, he was astounded to feel nothing in his body. That was when he realized that he wasn’t the Xiao Monarch of his former life anymore. Now he was just a playboy of a general’s family, who seemed to have practiced some spiritual martial arts but had no spiritual qi at all.

Thinking of this, Ye Xiao nearly yelled out painfully while performing a face-palm.

It would be a bad joke if the Xiao Monarch, who had just survived a huge disaster, would get killed by a trivial Qing-Ming Fruit Poison!

The pain was turning more and more severe as Ye Xiao gnashed his teeth. He knew that he should try to survive first before considering anything else. For now, he had no choice but to use the very last piece of his soul power to deal with the pain.

Then, he sat still with his legs crossed and grimaced due to the pain. Afterwards, he transferred all the soul power out of his mind as he quickly targeted it to the poison's location and then pressed it right on the poison...

“Puff!” Sputter.

He spat out blood as his face turned as white as a corpse.

“Damn... my last soul power... was actually used to deal with some lame poison. Now I really am dizzy... Who would have thought that there would be a day when I would actually be so embarrassed...” He wiped away the blood on his mouth and thought, “For now, I have to remove the poison first... otherwise, this body would rot in a few days... not to mention my revenge...”

“But... even if I survive this stupid poison... I don't have my former strength to go with my cultivation... My experience... my classy formulas... are all wasted.”

He murmured dolefully, “Right now, I am like a wealthy man walking in a brothel. I have the money to spend, and there are also girls, but I turned out to be a eunuch... A gloomy thing like this has actually happened to me. How can I be the Xiao Monarch? Why don’t I claim the title of Xiao Moron...”

Complaining wouldn’t help. He realized that he should just figure out a cure.

.....

“Who’s the steward? Come quickly!” He yelled, “Go buy me some herbs.” He handed over a script where he had written a list of herbs to the steward. For the educated Xiao Monarch, spiritual qi wouldn’t be needed to cure the poison. He surely had some other way.

Looking at the obsequious steward, he felt satisfied, “Aha, well, at least it feels good to be a toff, giving orders and waiting to be served.”

“Uhh... well... sir... I am afraid...” The steward held the script, looked at it, then twitched his mouth and scratched his head with a dazed look.

“Um? What?”

“These herbs... I am afraid that I have never heard of them...” The steward spoke humbly, “My lord, I have learned many of the

herbs in the world. I have also read the [Ben Cao Collection](#). Yet these herbs... Ice-fruit, Fire-leaf, Phoenix Bloom... I have never heard of them. Where did you learn these from, if you don't mind me asking?"

"Ur..." Ye Xiao slapped his own forehead.

Ye Xiao had almost forgotten that these herbs only existed in the Qing-Yun Realm. There should be none in this mortal world.

"No, no, no, I was kidding buddy..." Ye Xiao sighed, "Off you go."

The steward scratched his head and left while feeling confused. He wondered if his young master had gone crazy. He thought, "He actually sent me for some herbs? The guy thought he could pretend to be educated after writing some strange names? Really? I don't have any words to say."

Ye Xiao then hurried over towards the General's study room.

He entered the room, walked to the bookshelves and began his search for some medical books in order to find a cure for the poison.

"I knew it," sighed Ye Xiao.

The Qing-Ming Fruit Poison wasn't a notable poison for someone like Xiao Monarch, but it was still something from the Qing-Yun Realm. There could never be any cure for it in the mortal world.

“It seems that whoever poisoned me didn’t spare any effort.” Ye Xiao thought, “However, if it stays like this, then I am in serious trouble. There is no cure here and I am unable to reach the Qing-Yun Realm. Do I really have no choice but to wait for death?”

“Oh right, if the poison only exists in the Qing-Yun Realm... Then, how can it be here? Maybe the culprit has a few connections with people... up there?” Ye Xiao thought as a cold light shone in his eyes.

“My lord! Lord Lan has come for a visit!” A guard standing outside the door reported.

Only at this moment did Ye Xiao finally realize that the General’s House was a really weird place.

There were no females present, not even housemaids. All the people working and living here were guys.

There were a few of them who looked spirited, but they were actually disabled.

It was said that these disabled men were all ex-soldiers who had fought for General Ye.

What a virtuous General, cherishing his soldiers!

That was the first thing that Ye Xiao noticed about his current father!

“Lan? Oh, I see!” Ye Xiao stared blankly for a while before a new memory came into his mind. Lan’s full name was Lan Langlang. He was the son of the Southern General. Ye Xiao and Lan Langlang’s fathers were the two backbones of this kingdom, one ruling the north and the other ruling the south.

Ye Xiao and Lan Lang-Lang were both sons of generals. Oftentimes, their fathers would be away from home for years at a stretch, so they, at some level, shared similar feelings. That was why they hung out with each other and had eventually become bros. However, while the former Ye Xiao was a free nut, Lan Lang-Lang was unable to act too improper because of his mother.

There was even the full origin of Lan Lang-Lang’s name.

The Southern General was a stammerer. The day before Lan Lang-Lang was born, he was riding a carriage on his way home when he fell asleep.

He had a dream while he was sleeping. A dream about sailing in the rough seas on a ship.

When he got home the next day, Lan Langlang was born, and the family wanted his father to name him.

At that time, he was telling the others about his dream, but he

suddenly felt so thrilled when he heard the birth of his son that he stammered, “[La... Lang... Lang... Lang Lang...](#)”

Then the steward turned around and yelled, “The General has decided... My young master is named Lan Langlang...”

And that’s how it was. Lan Langlang got his name and became famous for it.

The difference between Lang and Langlang was like south and north, heaven and hell!

“Xiao-Xiao, I heard that you were intoxicated last night.” The girly voice of Lan Langlang came in before he could even step into the room, “Hah! Only a wise man like me would have gotten away early, and thank god that I did... otherwise, I would have been led to become a bad guy by you playboys...”

Ye Xiao got angry and cursed, “Lan Langlang you prick! Stop calling me Xiao-Xiao or I’ll beat you to death!”

Lan Langlang shrugged his shoulders and stepped into the room while grinning cheekily, “Were you not extraordinary last night? You actually got yourself senselessly drunk in a brothel... I have to say I admire that bro, I do!”

“Humph!” Ye Xiao rolled his eyes, “How did you know? Did you put a spy in my house?”

“Hah, hah...” Lan started laughing, “I wouldn’t bother to do that in your shitty place.”

After exchanging a few words, Ye Xiao observed his current best friend. Although Lan Langlang was born in a wealthy family, he was skinny, so skinny that his clothes seemed to be oversized, which was not actually true. The slim robe on his body clattered when he walked. There couldn’t possibly be more than 100 grams of flesh on his body. He had weirdly curved eyebrows, a flat nose, big lips and funny naturally crossed-eyes.

He was even wearing a big thick hat on such a sweltering day.

Ye Xiao learned from the new memory that there was a reason why Lan Langlang would always wear a hat. His head had been affected with [favus](#) earlier in the year. He had lost most of his hair and had now become bald, so he could not help but wear a hat...

Ye Xiao sighed, thinking, “Oh no... I was reborn in a weirdo’s body, and now I have to be friends with another weirdo!”

“Oh my bloody god...”

Land of Han-Yang: A realm known as the mortal world where Ye Xiao’s second life starts, which is far below the Qing-Yun Realm. People who live are all normal persons or low-level practitioners.

Kingdom of Chen: A kingdom in the mortal world - Land of Han-Yang, where Ye Xiao’s present father Ye Nan-Tian is a general.

Qing-Ming Fruit Poison: One kind of poison that only exists in the Qing-Yun Realm.

Ben Cao Collection: A Chinese medical book from the old days.
Ben Cao means all plants.

Lang: A word refers to 浪, means sea waves.

Favus: a disease usually affecting the scalp, but occurring occasionally on any part of the skin, and even at times on mucous membranes.

Chapter 3: Heavenly Crystal Marrow

The former owner of this body was a real weirdo, and so was his friend... Look at this fellow with an undisciplined personality, wearing a thick hat on a sweltering day, actually considering himself a romantic with an immensely proud attitude...

“Come on, let’s go! Last night before I left, I put some drugs into Zuo Wuji’s drink. I have to check on him in any case.” Lan Langlang loudly laughed then winked, “That bastard has always been opposing us. He’s getting really annoying. After he lost the [jade ruyi](#) of his father, he had been placed under house arrest for like centuries. He has been released recently, and I will never let this chance slip by...”

“I am not going... Wait. There is the possibility...” Since Ye Xiao was worried about the poison being too difficult to eradicate, how could he be interested in hanging out with this guy? But then he cheered up. In his memory, this Zuo Wuji was one of his disreputable friends that was drinking with him the night before, so it was possible that this guy was the one who had poisoned him.

This Zuo Wuji, as far as he could remember, was also a weirdo. Although he was called ‘one of the three lords’ in town alongside Ye Xiao and Lan Langlang, he always opposed the other two, fighting against them every time they met. It was hard for them to make peace.

‘The three lords in town’, was, of course, a derogatory term.

There was a even a doggerel created to describe them:

The three lords in town, how wonderful; they were short in businesses, but good at squandering their family fortunes; they had gold, and silver too, but gave it out for mirth; they had no faces, but they were foppish. The Northern General, he had a son named Xiao; a dog mothered by tigers, was such a punk. The Southern General's House was like a rough sea; the man, who was named Lang, was a black sheep; The minister Zuo was talented, with a son named Wuji, who had mortgaged the jade ruyi; what he used the mortgage for was food, drinks, toys and gals; he was such a lord, the top of the three!

There was something about a jade ruyi mentioned in the doggerel. Several days ago, Zuo Wuji had squandered so wantonly that he ran out of money. And in desperation, he actually mortgaged a jade ruyi of his father's collection when a bunch of his friends egged him on. The jade ruyi might not be very rare, but it was still a treasure worth at least 500 taels of gold nonetheless. Zuo Wuji squandered it for a measly 50 taels of silver. Later, he was nearly beaten to death by his father, eventually becoming the No.1 black sheep in the Kingdom of Chen.

This great Lord Zuo stood out among the three lords, which included Ye Xiao and Lan Lang-Lang, and became the champion black sheep in the group. He could really despise all the others and turn up his nose at them.

He exchanged something worth 500 taels of gold for just 50 taels of silver, and he even spent it completely in just three days... The way he squandered and dissipated his family's wealth was really

second to none.

“Come on!” Lan Langlang was so excited that his crossed eyes spread. He pulled Ye Xiao outside the house feverishly.

The two dandies got on the carriage. Ye Xiao had not yet gotten used to this luxurious life, while on the other hand, Lan Langlang was glancing left and right, enjoying the scenery through the raised curtain with his crossed eyes. He rubbed his lips and whistled loudly. The loud whistle scared the women and girls on the street, causing them all to flee.

While the carriage was proceeding, Ye Xiao suddenly felt something. This feeling made his heart madly tremble.

It was an exclusive ability which he had used a lot of times, but had never understood how he came to possess it. This ability was used to detect treasures and items of value, and when such items were nearby, he would feel his heartbeat rise.

He didn't expect to possess this ability even after rebirth. This should be a massive advantage in this new life.

However, Ye Xiao felt confused. This was the mortal world. What was this treasure that could actually make the great Xiao Monarch use his ability?

As they moved further, the feeling got stronger.

When they stopped, he felt that the treasure was right beside him, just within his reach.

When he got off the carriage and looked up, he saw three words written in gold, [Zuo Xiang Fu](#), on the gate of the House of the Minister.

.

The feeling actually came from inside this house!

.....

“Lan Langlang! You bastard!” Zuo Wuji shouted distressfully, “Did you drug me last night? Fxxk you! You nearly got me killed!”

As soon as Zuo Wuji saw the duo, he immediately began to curse them.

Obviously, the grudge this guy held against Ye Xiao and Lan Langlang had been deeply engraved into his bones, unable to be erased.

They fooled around with each other all the time, and no one of them had admitted defeat yet. Although he too had set traps for Ye Xiao and Lan Langlang, it was merely playful... he couldn't believe that they actually drugged him...

Besides, the three lords used to be neck and neck, but now he had claimed the title for the biggest loser, much to the delight of the other two. Zuo Wuji now couldn't help but grind his teeth every time he saw them.

However, Ye Xiao didn't pay any attention to Zuo Wuji. All his energy was used for observation. He focused at a table in the living room of the house again and again.

On the table, there was only a white jade bottomed case, and on top of this case, there sat a white stone. The surface of the stone was rough, making it look ordinary. It was totally bland except for a pair of fully spread wings engraved on it.

It seemed that this was just one of the ordinary ornaments in the House of the Minister, and it was never regarded as a treasure.

While Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji were busy quarreling, Ye Xiao was observing it with all his heart.

As he observed it, he could not stop himself from becoming delighted!

“YES! It is! I couldn't be wrong! That's the Heavenly Crystal Marrow!! It's actually a very precious treasure!”

He couldn't believe that he had found such an incredible treasure so soon after reincarnating.

Without a doubt, the Heavenly Crystal Marrow was something which only existed in the legends. It took 10 thousand years to shape up, and then another 1000 years to grow 1 inch. It was something which only existed in the tales of old. People of the Qing-Yun Realm could only dream of encountering this crystal, let alone the people of the mortal world!

In the Qing-Yun Realm, a tiny piece of this stone had caused a massive war between the factions. They crazily fought which caused countless of deaths.

Ye Xiao was puzzled about why such a large piece of this crystal appeared in a mere mortal world such as this. And somebody had actually carved a pair of spread-out wings into it?!

“This... this is such a fxxking waste of resources, it’s infuriating,” he thought.

If anyone from the Qing-Yun Realm saw this situation, they would certainly pass out with heartburn. And if said person had a short temper, it would be a very easy decision for him to kill every resident in the city and burn everything down.

Take our Xiao Monarch for example, he was frozen solid after witnessing such a colossal waste.

It was like a pie that suddenly fell from the sky into the hands of a starving man.

He needed to consider his actions in order to have the capability to take a bite. He didn't need to be greedy, just one bite will do...

There must be something over the surface of the The Heavenly Crystal Marrow which covered its true exterior.

And, according to where it was placed... they truly seemed to treat it as something trivial...

“Only if they can give it to me... no, not necessarily give the whole piece to me... Just only one bite, even if I just scrape a bit of powder for myself, it will be enough to cure me and become the foundation of my super power at once!” Ye Xiao murmured as he felt completely thrilled.

What a treasure!

It was good to be the son of a privileged government official.

But what should he do to get this thing?

Such a challenge!

Sensing the high security in the House of the Minister, Ye Xiao was agitated... His body was as weak as a drugster, so either stealing or robbing... was not a possible option for him.

“Ye Xiao!” Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji were yelling at him,

“What are you smirking for, you fool? What beauties are you imagining?”

No wonder they were astonished.

They had quarreled fiercely for quite a while, and they had even spat a bit when they quarreled, so they had become really thirsty. And when they turned around, they found Ye Xiao was smirking, daydreaming and even drooling...

“What’s wrong with him?” Both Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji felt weird, “Why is he suddenly smiling with a goatish look...”

“Wake up dude!” Zuo Wuji waved his hand in front of Ye Xiao’s eyes.

“WHAT?” Ye Xiao returned to reality while feeling annoyed.

“Come on my dear Lord Ye, this is my house...” Zuo Wuji, while looking at the “fool”, eccentrically said, “What the hell are you planning? Do me a favor all right? Don’t make the satyr-like look again. We don’t have any women here!”

“Well, there are still guys. I think Lord Ye might be interested...” Lan Langlang laughed wretchedly with his eyes rolling around. What he said just now had drawn the fury of Zuo Wuji.

Ye Xiao also scolded him while rolling his eyes. Suddenly, he came up with an idea.

“Oh hey, Zuo Wuji, I heard that you had sold the jade ruyi recently. Is it true?” Ye Xiao asked while blinking his eyes.

“Shxt...” Zuo Wuji rushed forward and covered Ye Xiao’s mouth tightly, and with a panic-stricken face, he spoke in a low voice, “Damn you! Fxxk you dude! How dare you talk about this thing... How could I know it was worth that much? I was really out of money that day, and I just took whatever was nearby to get some. Then I was enjoying it with a bunch of people for days... I didn’t know it was my dad’s treasure and had medical purposes until I got home a few days later... Come on man, I have been through a rough time for it... The whole family treated me like a sandbag... Don’t even mention it man, please. It will get me killed...”

“Hmm... hmm...” Ye Xiao’s mouth was covered. He struggled quite hard to free himself. He planned something in his mind and said, “It was said that there will be an auction in Ling-Bao Hall the day after tomorrow, and... there will be a jade ruyi in the auction... hah, it even looks just like your father’s. No, it’s even better quality...”

“Yes! Yes! There will be one.” Lan Langlang unceasingly nodded, “In the auction the day after tomorrow, I will be there to enrich my experience.”

ruyi: a curved decorative object that serves as a ceremonial sceptre in Chinese Buddhism or a talisman symbolizing power and good fortune in Chinese folklore.

Zuo Xiang Fu: The Chinese pronunciation of 左相府, which means the House of the Minister - the house of the Minister Zuo.

Chapter 4: If You Need Money, I Can Lend You Some...

Zuo Wuji's eyes brightened, but soon they immediately became dispirited, "It won't be that easy... I didn't know that it was so precious. Such a little thing could actually be worth 500 taels of gold... How pathetic that I was incited by you pricks to steal it and sell it for only 50 taels of silver. Such a huge loss..."

And while grinding his teeth again, he said, "You pricks have made me the No.1 black sheep in the world... [I should have never mentioned it and just swallowed it with my teeth and blood](#)... Now there is another jade ruyi present, but what can I do to get it?"

Ye Xiao lowered his voice and said, "Heh, heh, heh... It's just about money, isn't it... That's not a problem. I just want to ask you, do you want that jade ruyi?"

"Of course! What a stupid question. Why wouldn't I want it! When I get it, I will finally get rid of the title 'the No.1 black sheep in the Kingdom of Chen'... Only god knows how desperately I want to do so..." Zuo Wuji nodded and gritted his teeth, "But I ran out of money when that shxt happened. My allowance has been reduced from 15 taels of silver per month to just a quarter tael... What the hell can I do with a quarter taels of silver?!"

[You want to get rid of the No. 1 black sheep title... It is actually quite easy, only... You are about to be the unprecedented No. 1 black sheep in the universe...] Ye Xiao thought.

"Hah, Hah!" Ye Xiao laughed out loud and struck his chest while speaking nobly, "If you really want it, I could lend you some money..."

"Really?" Zuo Wuji was surprised, so was Lan Langlang.

Did the sun rise from the west?! Since when did Ye Xiao become so generous?

"Absolutely!" Ye Xiao nodded with a serious look.

"What on earth are you planning?" Zuo Wuji looked at him suspiciously as he did some calculations in his mind, "This prick, he isn't really planning to do some business with me, is he? Could there be the possibility that he really is in love with me?"

"You bastard!" Ye Xiao shouted as if his dignity and honor was on the line. Acting as if his kindness was wasted, he said with bitter hatred, "Zuo Wuji! What the hell did you just say? I want to help you because I treat you like my brother. I am also taking a big risk doing so. Who knows when a bastard like you could give me my money back? And you... you dare to suspect me. Fine! I'll let you rot!"

"Forget it! I can save the money for gals, can't I... Lan Langlang! Let's go!" In anger, Ye Xiao stood up and prepared to leave, "We no longer have a friend like this bastard that never appreciates our kindness!"

Lan Langlang was always good at kicking up a row. He wouldn't let this chance go, so he stood up with a woosh while shouting cheerfully, "Absolutely! We are never going to talk to this prick as he doesn't want to be our friend!"

"No... Please don't... brother Ye, brother Lan, stay! Ah! Please my dear brothers..." As fast as he could, Zuo Wuji rushed forward and held Ye Xiao's waist tightly and apologized with a flattering tone, "Ohhh, I only said a single wrong word... Oh please, we are brothers right? We are brothers forever. You wouldn't really be mad at me, would you? Ahhh, come on just stay! Steward! Bring us some tea! The classy one! The best! The imperial tea that the king awarded my grandpa with! Quick, quick..."

Then he respectfully had Ye Xiao seated on the masters' chair of the house, and while bowing with a servile smile, he said, "Hey, hey... brother Ye, hah, hah, master Ye, brother, my dearest brother... Would you seriously lend me some money?"

Ye Xiao was sitting with one ankle on his other knee, "I was going to..."

"Oh, you can't change your mind bro..." Zuo Wuji nearly kneeled down.

He wouldn't give up the hard-found chance to rectify his mistake. God knows what kind of rough life he had been living for the past few months... and he couldn't even escape because his tormentors were his own family.

"Humph, fair enough." Ye Xiao blew the leaves floating on the tea as he said with a poker face, "Since I have already said it, why don't you write me a receipt and give me something as a guarantee. With that, I will just give you 750 taels of gold... Let's make it clear that you should return the money someday. Don't even try bargaining!"

"Absolutely!" Zuo Wuji said with a happy face, then he realized a problem and asked with a disconsolate look, "But what should I give you for guarantee?"

"Do you understand human language? Anything can do, just give me something. We are brothers! I don't really want anything expensive from you, do I?"

Zuo Wuji suddenly felt relieved, "It is a good way indeed... Let me see. What should I steal this time?"

He was rolling his eyes. Obviously, he had decided to become the family thief one more time.

"Oh my!" Ye Xiao instructed him while feeling disappointed, "Can you just be quick and pick any one of these collections in this house. It doesn't have to be costly. Anything will do..."

After Ye Xiao's stark instruction, Zuo Wuji finally came to a realization, "Well... then is it alright to be a guarantee?"

"Forget about the guarantee thing. That was what I meant. Come on, we are brothers!" Ye Xiao was showing generousness as he

spoke such considerate words.

Zuo Wuji was too happy to even close his mouth. He finally couldn't get rid of the burden in his heart. He laughed heartily, "Well then! Although every piece of this collection here was collected by my grandfather, and he loves them all... it wouldn't matter if one or two went missing... Bro, tell me which one you like. I'll directly give it to you! We won't take that back! I will surely pay back the money and you can keep whatever you choose!"

Zuo Wuji was truly very generous.

Ye Xiao rightfully answered with a frown, "What do you mean? What do you think I am? I am only trying to help you. Do you think that I am hankering after your collection... You could give it to me as a gift after you get the money, as that shows your thankfulness. The gift itself may be small, but the goodwill is transferred. But for now, if I accept it, then it will be seen as you bribing me!"

"Bribing?" Zuo Wuji thought as his mouth twitch, "How could he talk like he was an honorable officer."

"I am done with your delays. This one. I like the feeling of flying." What he was unconcernedly pointing at was exactly the Heavenly Crystal Marrow.

"That... That is too cheap, isn't it?" Zuo Wuji was suddenly moved and thought, "It looks like Ye Xiao is really trying to help

me. There are so many treasures in the house, and he has actually picked one of the cheapest. What a good man. Why didn't I realize it..."

"All right, all right. You know my heart. That is enough." Ye Xiao said profoundly, "What are we? Brothers should help each other... By the way, you should keep it as a secret. In case someone else knows that I have lent you lots of money... and they all come to me, it will be troublesome for me if I have to decide whether I should lend money to this one or that one."

"You can count on me. I will keep my mouth completely shut!" Zuo Wuji promised, "I am not that kind of person, am I..."

"Why don't you... just take it now?" Zuo Wuji was afraid Ye Xiao would change his mind, so he tried to force his hand.

"Moron!" Ye Xiao reproached him with a low voice, "Can you not think for yourself? If I take it now right under these people's eyes in your house, how can we keep it a secret?"

"Right, right." Zuo Wuji then whispered to Ye Xiao, "How about I bring it to you when the day turns dark?"

"Great idea!" Ye Xiao answered full of praise, "At that time, I will go to the corner of the alley south of here, and I'll be waiting for you with the money."

Zuo Wuji smiled when he heard this, "I should thank you for this

bro... As long as it saves my reputation in the family, I will get the money from the business and pay you back. Set your heart at ease. I am a man of my word!"

"All right dude. Would I give you my money if it were not for my trust in you?" Ye Xiao and Zuo Wuji were holding each other's shoulder as if they were the closest of brothers.

Beside them, with his jaws on the floor, Lan Langlang was stupefied with the new developments.

After all the details were finalized, Zuo Wuji respectfully saw Ye Xiao and Lan Langlang off with endless gratitude while they left with smugness.

"When the day turns dark, just remember it bro." Zuo Wuji shouted. Ye Xiao and Lan Langlang heard the shout from Zuo Wuji even though they had already travelled quite far.

.....

"Hey listen, are you really going to give him the money?" Lan Langlang watched Ye Xiao suspiciously, "Come on... you are not a kind-hearted guy, are you? Are you going to walk away and betray that guy..."

"What are you talking about? You are such a flunky, while I have a tolerant heart! Do you think that I am someone like you who always breaks his word?!" Ye Xiao looked at Lan Langlang with

disdain, "Go home and prepare a note worth 500 taels of gold for me. I need it!"

It seemed that he didn't have enough money to lend to Zuo Wuji...

"Oh, do you need it? Sure I will. Wait... What? What did you just say? You told me to prepare a note worth 500 taels of gold, so that you can lend it to Zuo? Why should I? Give me a reason first!" Lan Langlang exploded with fury when he had realized the implications behind Ye Xiao's words.

[For me to lend him the money so that he can do some good deals. Why should I?!] Lan Langlang thought.

"A reason? You can't even understand that! If you don't prepare the note for me, what will I lend to Zuo Wuji? Isn't it obvious? You're being too talkative!"

Ye Xiao rolled up his eyes as he unconcernedly and slowly said with a threatening tone, "Lan Langlang, if you don't bring me the note and caused me to break my word, that's ok. I will just tell your grandfather, your father, your mother and your aunt that you fought with Zuo Wuji for a gal's favor in the brothel and ran around naked... If that is not enough for you, I can even paint some graffiti about you on every wall on the street! I shall make sure that you will become famous. The whole city, no, even the whole world will know about you! I will let your reputation rise to the same level as Zuo Wuji's!"

"What? You!" Lan Langlang was so angry that he nearly passed out. His crossed eyes even turned normal due to his anger. He shouted in abuse, "How vicious are you? That is just using my darkest experiences..."

"Urrr... Stop it! How dare you refer to your infantile life as an experience? This deal won't eventually cost you anything. Let me ask you again, will you do it or not?"

"I WILL DO IT! What other choice do I have?" Lan Langlang was nearly crying, "I will bring it to you..."

.....

Swallow ... with one's teeth and blood: A metaphor, means someone have gotten through something bad but can not say a word about it.

Chapter 5: Treasure in Hand; Disturbance Begins!

Ye Xiao received the note from Lan Langlang and rushed to the suggested place - the corner of the alley near Zuo Xiang Fu.

The sun had already set when he was halfway there, and the darkness was quickly settling in.

Not far from where he stood was the Zuo Xiang Fu. Ye Xiao smiled with satisfaction and turned left so as to make a detour into the alley. But just as he reached the corner, his senses were invaded by a terrifying feeling.

"Hmm?" Ye Xiao stopped immediately.

He sensed immense danger!

It was the instinct he had gained after experiencing countless life-and-death situations and ambushes. He had absolute trust in these instincts which he had developed after a lifetime of fighting.

Ye Xiao knew that his instincts would not warn him with time to spare unless the situation was one of extreme peril.

He could sense a large wave of cultivators converging towards him.

And he was very near the place where the cultivators would converge.

"Are they coming for me?" Ye Xiao frowned and then shook his head, "They shouldn't be... I am not qualified enough for them to make such a big move. They wouldn't be thinking too highly of me, would they?"

At the same time, impatient footsteps approached from the opposite end of the alley. A murmur could be heard, "Ye Xiao will come, will he not? He won't play me off, right?"

It was the voice of Zuo Wuji.

Obviously, he had arrived earlier, and he was now waiting anxiously for Ye Xiao.

His presence here made Ye Xiao eliminate him as a suspect. It meant that this ambush was planned by an unknown entity.

"Aha... You..." Zuo Wuji couldn't help but shout out loud when he saw Ye Xiao, and he practically skipped towards him.

"Hush!" Ye Xiao covered his mouth hastily, "Did you bring the item?"

Zuo Wuji nodded as his mouth was covered, and then he took out a package from behind him.

Ye Xiao could tell that this was the crystal without seeing it, he could feel it!

Zuo Wuji had pinched the crystal quite easily, perhaps as a result of him becoming used to thievery.

"Here's the note for 750 taels of gold. Remember to pay me back." Ye Xiao said as he exchanged the note for the package. He felt a huge sense of accomplishment.

"Thank you sooooo much..." Zuo Wuji nearly cried, "Brother, a real good brother... From now on brother Ye, you are my best brother. I... I..."

He stuttered due to excitement.

Thinking about giving the ruyi back to his father, saving his reputation and no longer remaining a sandbag for his father and grandfather... Zuo Wuji had become very emotional "... sniff, you really are my benefactor..."

"Oh thank god! The title of the number one black sheep in the kingdom will be taken away from me soon. God knows how stressed I have been these past few days..." He thought.

"All right now. Off you go quickly. Save your thanks for another day." Now that he got the crystal, Ye Xiao didn't want to spend another second in this alley.

His instincts were practically screaming at him to get away.

Luckily, Zuo Wuji was even more eager to leave, "Bro, after the auction the day after tomorrow, I will be free again. After that, we must get a drink together." Zuo Wuji said while running away.

Now that he had a chance to save his reputation, he felt that he could no longer waste even a second of his remaining life.

"Screw that..." Ye Xiao was impressed, "The bastard runs even faster than me..."

Now that the crystal he had dreamt of was finally in his grasp, Ye Xiao was one hundred percent satisfied. He turned around to leave the alley as he petted the crystal in the package.

Suddenly, he felt a strong dizziness which made him sway on the spot, forcing him to hold his forehead.

The remnant of the poison within his body had gotten out of control and begun its attack.

"I had completely suppressed it before. How could it flare-up again so quickly?" He thought.

The dizziness in his mind got stronger and stronger, and it even showed a slight eagerness, as if it was alive... He, however,

wouldn't dare to consider its threat insignificant. He gnashed his teeth and took out his knife. He currently had no choice but to cut off a piece of the Heavenly Crystal Marrow and use it against the poison, as it had already grown vicious enough to take his life at a moment's notice. At this point, he really couldn't care about wasting some of the crystal because what he prioritized foremost was his own survival.

A grinding sound could be heard as he cut off the surface of the crystal. But he soon discovered that its insides were extremely hard. With his present strength, he could only manage to scrape off a little powder from its surface.

"It is actually that hard!" Ye Xiao felt helpless as he swallowed the powder.

Ye Xiao only had some second-hand knowledge about the crystal, and prior to today, he hadn't even seen it, let alone swallow some of it. It was only at this moment that he found out about the crystal's hardness.

It felt even harder than diamond!

The moment he swallowed the powder, a fragrance emerged from the crystal in his arms. It made him feel refreshed. He inhaled the sweet smell with a deep breath and felt relaxed, and then...

Another kind of dizziness invaded his head. He saw some golden words flashing within his mind. The very next moment, he felt

that the package had become weightless. The crystal was gone!

The package was indeed still in his arms!

How could the crystal inside it disappear? It had actually vanished into thin air!

Ye Xiao was gobsmacked! "What the fxxk is going on?" He could clearly feel that it wasn't a superhero who had stolen it right under his nose!

Although he had lost all his powers, he wasn't lame enough to not notice someone whisk away his crystal!

Maybe the crystal wasn't gone, but instead had merged into his body!

But... How did it get inside his body?

The size of this crystal was considerable. How did it get inside? From where?

Ye Xiao really felt faint at the moment; not just physically, but also mentally. Suddenly, a flow of energy rushed up from inside his dantian!

It all happened in a flash. Ye Xiao turned sweaty at once, which was a result of a huge amount of spiritual qi flowing inside his

body! He clearly felt that his pulse had become erratic, but struggling against it was futile.

"Oh no! This is bad!" Ye Xiao was crestfallen.

As an expert of cultivation, he had a very good idea of what was going on. The suddenly arising energy definitely wasn't anything good. It was very likely that he would be screwed this time.

The reason for this analysis was simple. The adventitious energy which had poured into his body was too rampageous. Ye Xiao was unable to contain it with his present condition. Although he had desired for more power, but this surely was overkill... he had no possibility of controlling it! He now regretted that he had made contact with this thing. Although he had known the crystal to be very powerful, he had vastly underestimated its effects!

The current situation was a million miles - no, even further away from what he had predicted... The only way to solve this problem was to let the rampaging power out of his body and let it disperse. Otherwise, his body would be ruined. If the poison didn't kill him, the energy would... It had become a really shxtty scenario!

And at that moment...

BOOM! A bang was heard nearby. Fire was rolling up in the sky!

The piercing sound of battle could now be heard. The sounds of the weapons colliding against each other could be compared to

thousands of blacksmiths forging their iron together. Ye Xiao now truly felt like crying.

The thing he had feared the most was now occurring. His intuition had been spot on - a battle was taking place in the Zuo Xiang Fu!

And it was taking place right when he was in this awkward situation!

Fortunately, those cultivators, whom he had perceived earlier, turned out to be aiming for the Zuo Xiang Fu, not him.

Unfortunately, the place where he was standing at right now was right next to the infiltrators...

He was already going through a lot, and now he had even managed to crash into this mess.

He decided to do the only thing he was capable of doing, which was to cover his head using the package in his arms, creating a makeshift hood...

And then, he tried to get away...

The messy battle had absolutely nothing to do with him...

The sound of fighting was getting louder and louder. It could be

easily made out that the force of the Zuo Xiang Fu had begun to fight back and currently held an advantage.

Suddenly, a peculiar whistling sound echoed out. Ye Xiao frowned, "A long sound, which is then followed by three short sounds, should be a sign of retreat..."

A lot had happened just now, and yet he was able to reach the end of the alley - not that he didn't want to move faster, he just wasn't able to. Suddenly, a swordlight slashed right in front of him.

It turned out that one of the infiltrators had already strayed out and arrived here.

He hacked his sword and indiscriminately tried to kill all who opposed him.

And he easily succeeded in killing everyone standing in his path.

Ye Xiao suddenly turned bitter, "These guys who wear black and cover their faces could never be with Zuo Xiang Fu. They move quicker and are way fiercer than some ordinary warriors - they should be some extremely well-trained assassins!"

Maybe even more menacing than some well-trained assassin!

While Ye Xiao was collecting his thoughts, the assassin didn't stop his merciless lightning-like sword hacks!

On account of the spiritual force of the assassin moving forward, the power of his sword actually released a shiny green light. The surface of the alley wall was now hacked into pieces while some fissures had appeared on the ground. It was as if the sword's breath had even torn the air apart.

Chapter 6: Out of Nothing, the Purple Qi in the Skyline!

The sword was definitely going to hit Ye Xiao on the face, and its sword breath would reach him even before the blade would. With such an overbearing sword breath, the blade would not even need to connect, just the sword breath alone was enough to kill him!

Although Ye Xiao had no powers left, he had retained his vision. He was seeing everything with great clarity at the moment. This particular attack was called the Mountain Cracking Strike in the cultivation of swordplay. If this sword actually hit him, nothing in his body would be left intact. It would be completely torn apart. There would be nothing left unbroken!

“You want to kill me with no reason at all and you even want to tear me apart?”

Ye Xiao was angry. He was really furious.

At this moment, the raging power within Ye Xiao's body had no means of dissipating. It was currently circulating within his body, providing him the illusion of regaining his lost strength. He instinctively wielded his sleeve, and without thinking too much, he performed a “Laughing Eight Blast” in order to defend from the attack and fight back.

He began to laugh while performing the Eight Blast!

This was precisely the Xiao Monarch's signature move.

But it hadn't occurred to him until he had already executed the move, [Damn it! I am no longer the Xiao Monarch of my previous life. No matter how surging my strength is, the spiritual qi inside my body is all dependent on an external source. I can't use this power as I wish, I need to be frugal. But if I don't exert this power now, how can I defend and fight back?]

However, even he was surprised by what happened next.

Now that the endless raging power had found a way to burst out, it began to pour out continuously and showed no signs of stopping!

With a sharp sound, a powerful wind emerged, which was then followed by a burst of purple light.

At that moment, Ye Xiao had a feeling; it felt like an illusion where he was back to the best condition of his prior life!

The Xiao Monarch who had laughed at all heroes, had he come back?

Puff...

A slight sound came out. The guy who was rushing towards him was now incapable of executing any more crazy sword-moves. He was unable to attack anymore, because he was rendered completely immobile by an invisible force which had emerged

from Ye Xiao's Laughing Eight Blast. When faced with such force, even the sword in his hand was repelled, and it was made to turn around and smash the head of its owner with an unstoppable power!

The force from the Laughing Eight Blast had made the sword strike many times fiercer than when it had originally been released.

The assassin, facing such misfortune, besides being scared enough to lose his countenance, was actually terrified to the extreme. Unfortunately, the assassin was also experienced in battle. With quick reactions, he forced himself to correct his stance to block the blade. Kacha! Both his hands were cut off at the same time. This action caused the back of the blade to hit his head instead of its sharp edge, yet it still made him bleed at once!

Receiving a powerful shock, his whole body was sent flying away like a kite with a broken string. With a bang, he crashed into a wall and rebounded back to the floor. Although all his bones were likely to be broken, he had dealt with this crisis correctly and had managed to preserve his life.

Ye Xiao had just wielded his sleeve and actually managed to get such a frightening win! He had managed to redirect the fearsome Mountain Cracking Strike just by a flick of his sleeves!

“The Sky Origin Master! Who is he?” The surrounding assassins were shocked to a standstill. They were now facing a situation which had caused even the tone of their voice to change!

“My bloody god. Being called out for a mission, I had almost finished it and returned, but now I just casually met someone in a narrow alley, and he turned out to be the stuff nightmares are made off... What fxxing luck do I have...”

The power inside Ye Xiao’s body was still raging like before. It hadn’t slowed down at all, and even after the strike just now, it was still going berserk. At any moment, it was going to explode. Ye Xiao gave a humph and casually reached out with his hands into the air and grasped it. With the sound of a sword being unsheathed, the space in front of him distorted into a familiar shape. He had actually conjured a sword from thin air!

When the spiritual qi turned into a sword, everything would become his weapon!

The special move of the Xiao Monarch, Long Sky Laugh!

While smiling, this attack was used to take lives and chase after the souls of the dead.

“That move! Creating a sword from thin air?! You can’t be...” The assassins in the enemy camp shouted out in panic, completely terrified while stepping back at the same time. They obviously knew that they were not qualified to fight the other party, so they could only attempt to flee in order to save their lives.

But it was already too late.

Ye Xiao's eyes were filled with rage. He stepped forward and stabbed.

Suddenly, a splendid ball of purple qi appeared, which then burst out, like some purple gorgeous fireworks were exploding in the night sky. The sword breath had instantly disappeared, as if it was trying to get back to one thousand years earlier!

“Urh...” Weird stuffy sounds echoed out. The assassin, who had swung the sword earlier, as well as the other two assassins following him had their necks slashed. With their eyes popping out, they used all their strength to hold on to the wounds before eventually falling down on the floor with a flow.

Triple kill with one sword move!

“Out of nothing, the purple qi in the skyline!” The leader, who was standing the farthest from Ye Xiao, had the chance to observe earlier. As the only survivor in the group, he was extremely anxious to get away. However, he had received a large wound on his chest, and his eyes were filled with alarm. He was looking at Ye Xiao with a horror-stricken face, “It is actually you! Ning Biluo! How dare you fight against us. Even though you are the No. 1 assassin in the world, our lord highness would never let you get away with this!”

Ye Xiao was puzzled, “Ning Biluo? Who is he? The No. 1 assassin? There's actually an elite cultivator in this mortal world...”

That aside, the lord highness? What lord? Who is he?

When he was about to finish this guy with another attack so as to avoid future troubles, he felt that the plentiful power, which had been running restlessly in his body, was now actually quickly calming down like ebbing. The crisis of his [Jing and Mai](#) exploding had passed, and the rampage he had gone through had drained the power acquired through the powder from the Heavenly Crystal Marrow.

The spiritual qi, which never truly belonged to him, was not able to persist.

Without the support of the continuous supply of spiritual qi, the sword in his hand disappeared. Ye Xiao yelled, “Humph, you’ve mistaken my identity.”

The Xiao Monarch was a proud cultivator who travelled the world above. What was right was right, and what was wrong was wrong. He wouldn’t let others take the blame!

However, the more he denied the truth, the firmer the guy believed he was Ning Biluo. With the mountain-like bearing of a master cultivator and the recognizable fighting style he had, if he wasn’t the No. 1 assassin, who else could he be?

The assassin humphed and said, “Ning Biluo, there will be a chance for us to meet again. Wait and see!” He said as he did a backward somersault. Under extreme fear, he actually burst forth with unbelievable potential as he twisted his body to disappear

into the darkness.

He thought that it was fortunate that the monster - Ye Xiao - didn't attack again... The face-covered assassin had cold sweat dripping all over his body, believing that he had escaped with his life...

The sound of soldiers was getting closer and closer.

“I absolutely can't stay here any longer!”

The assassin was unaware that Ye Xiao was also secretly elated, “The assassin didn't attack me. I have really escaped with my life!”

In Ye Xiao's estimation, the escaping assassin was actually the one with the greatest strength among them, even greater than the one who had attacked him. If he had been brave enough to attack Ye Xiao, a fight would have been impossible with the power left within him.

Although the last bit of his power that hadn't disappeared was insufficient to fight against the enemy, it was barely enough to run for his life. Ye Xiao faded like a ghost, disappearing at once from the alley.

This movement was actually the skill from which he was known for in his prior life as the Xiao Monarch: One Laughter in Skyline!

Ye Xiao had gone over a hundred meters with a single movement

and heavily fell on the ground. The accidentally-gained power in his body was now completely used up.

The Xiao Monarch, in his best condition, could go dozens of miles whenever he used the One Laughter in Skyline at full power, but now he could only go on for about a hundred meters. It was a difference similar to heaven-and-hell.

Although Ye Xiao felt like sighing with a certain dissatisfaction, he felt a surprising pleasure about escaping from the central zone of the battle. Besides, as a master of martial arts, he understood the reason why he had only moved for such a short distance. It was not that his One Laughter in Skyline was lame, but it was because he was in a really poor condition, and the spiritual qi in his body was just inadequate. With all these disadvantages combined, it was no wonder why the distance he moved for was so lame.

But in truth, no expert had witnessed the god-like skill of moving for hundred meters with a single breath. If they had, they would have been surely shocked enough to drop their jaws to the floor!

What he was unaware of was that - at the moment, it was not only the Zuo Xiang Fu which was in disarray. In fact, the entire capital was already falling into disorder!

There were people shouting and horses neighing. Countless soldiers rushed on the street conducting a search for the escaping assassins.

“Catch the assassins!”

“Do not let the assassins go!”

“Search carefully! Let no suspects go!”

“Rather kill an innocent than let them escape!”

This corner of the capital was the epicenter of the disorder. It was as if a huge rock had fallen into a peaceful lake, and the ripples had spread across the whole city. The situation had shown signs of getting more and more serious!

Inside Ye Xiao's body, although the spiritual qi was depleted, he still had the strength to move his legs, which was barely enough to enable him to walk on the street. By the time he got home, he was utterly exhausted to the point where he couldn't even move his little finger...

In fact, he had gotten through god knows how many questioning kiosks, but everyone had recognized the foppish son of the Northern General. When they saw him walking closer with an overly drunk pace and a pretentious look, what interest did they have to bother with him?

Even if they were searching everyone, they would never suspect that one of the three lords would be involved. As such, they didn't bother to interrogate him.

The Xiao Monarch had just reached the door at home, when he

heard a voice yelling with anger, “Where have you been? At such a dangerous time, you’re actually still lingering around. I’ll beat you to death! Arghhhhh.....”

Although the voice was filled with anger, it was delicate and sweet-sounding. It was the voice of a girl.

Ye Xiao looked towards the source of the voice and saw two girls standing gracefully erect under the lanterns hanging in his house. The one in front was pouting her lips while furiously staring at him, but this angry look had an indescribable charm and glamour.

The guard standing beside the door was showing a bitter face, “My Lord... The princess has come to see you...”

Ye Xiao immediately felt that his scalp was burning. From the successive memory, he learned that this girl in front was indeed the fiancée that his present father selected for him. She was the daughter of the Prince Hua-Yang, the well-known [Princess Yeyue](#) in the capital.

“Hmmm, isn’t it claimed that she is gentle, soft and virtuous? She just yelled like a female lion when she saw me. What is going on...”

Before he could react, his ear was grabbed by a soft and small hand, “Why don’t you get in here!”

The maids beside her giggled away while covering their mouths.

Ye Xiao was grabbed on the ear in an extremely awkward fashion and led through the door.

“Oy, oy. Take it easy...” Ye Xiao had a bitter face. All his power had been recently exhausted, and because of that, his body was now at its weakest. He was really not going to make it...

“Speak! What have you been up to? Bastard!” Princess Yeyue was looking at Ye Xiao in front of her with a tiger-like face.

It really felt different to see a beauty under the light. Princess Yeyue had a face like flowers, curved eyebrows, clear and clever eyes, firm nose and a little mouth like a cherry. Her hair was slightly rolled up on her head... She was really like a beauty from poems and paintings. Even though she was hosting an evil and scary look, she was still a stunning beauty; only one in millions. She had the ability to make a thousand faces, and no one could recognize her true face.

Jing and Mai: Jing is the Chinese word for “essence”, specifically kidney essence. Mai is vein.

Princess Yue. Su Yeyue (苏夜月, 苏 is her family name; 夜 means night; 月 means moon). The daughter of the Prince Hua-Yang (The Royal Highness Hua-Yang).

Chapter 7: Peerless Lord of the World and Primal Spirit in Chaos

“I uhh... I was just hanging out...” Ye Xiao explained weakly.

An explanation like this was really too powerless!

In terms of dealing with girls, the Xiao Monarch was clearly inferior to the previous Ye Xiao - the foppish playboy. The Xiao Monarch had spent his entire prior life cultivating the [Pure Yang Martial Arts](#), so he had never spent any time with women. As for now, there was a beautiful girl standing in front of him; a girl who was pretty no matter if she was angry or happy. His mind suddenly felt a little blank as his tongue seemed to have twisted.

Thuck!

Su Yeyue swung her hand and struck Ye Xiao's head. She shouted hysterically, “There is a disturbance going on right now, and you were actually hanging around outside? Don't you know there is a serious event happening in the capital today? If you keep staying out on the street, you may carelessly get yourself killed somewhere! Uncle Ye had given me a whip when he left, so I have the right to discipline you. If you dare to oppose me, I will lash you with it!”

Ye Xiao thought, [You sure have some guts! How dare you threaten me - the Xiao Monarch?! Maybe I should lash you to death instead!]

But he decided to feign ignorance, “Really? What is going on in the capital?”

Su Yeyue humphed, rolled her eyes and said while gloating, “I heard that Zuo Xiang Fu was raided... Many thieves had broken in, and Minister Zuo, who has now lost a lot of priceless things, is in a violent temper... At this moment, all military forces in the capital are mobilized to guard the nine gates of the capital, so that no one can get in or out. They are searching for the assassins and trying to arrest them with their loots.”

The princess was actually giggling, and then she caught herself losing manner and stateliness in front of Ye Xiao, so she pretended to cough slightly to regain composure and said, “It looks like the Lord Minister Zuo have suffered a great loss. Catching the assassins and retrieving the stolen goods to recover his loss are proving to be really difficult...”

Ye Xiao rolled his eyes and said, “Do you know what treasures were stolen from him?”

“I have no idea, but it should be something very valuable. Otherwise, why would he make such a big movement?” Su Yeyue shook her head.

Ye Xiao thought, [The thing I got... Could it be what they were aiming for?]

He thought and thought again, [I should probably make a

duplicate of this sculpture with a different material when I get the chance. In case Zuo Wu-Ji asks it back sometime in the future. Carefulness keeps a boat sailing for thousands of years...]

“Listen! You are not allowed to attend the auction taking place the day after tomorrow. I have invited some of my sisters to go and play with me. If you are there, you will definitely bring shame to me! Furthermore, you are not allowed to go to the Wen-Hua Event later this week either... Anyway, there is nowhere you can go in this period of time. Do you understand? Will you keep it in mind? Do you hear me?!”

The girl made threatening gestures for a while before feeling satisfied as she saw Ye Xiao nod repeatedly. She stood up and prepared to leave.

Then she sighed and said with a nearly inaudible voice, “Ayy... You are actually not that annoying... but if only you try to behave yourself and change all those shortcomings, how nice would it be... Ayyy...”

Under Ye Xiao’s gaze, Su Yeyue got on the [sedan chair](#) and went further and further in the dim light of night.

Ye Xiao felt vaguely helpless from deep within his heart towards this girl.

Following orders from her parents, listening to the words from the matchmakers, a girl would never have the right to choose her husband. Although the girl was born in a noble family, she had no

right to make a decision in regard to her own marriage.

Since her parents had betrothed her to Ye Xiao, she would marry him sooner or later.

However, it was unlucky for her that her fiancé was such a foppish playboy. There was nothing she could do but sigh...

But it could be seen that Su Yeyue wasn't totally heartless to the prior Ye Xiao. After all, they grew up together... Otherwise, she wouldn't have to worry so much that she even had to come here to show her concern at such a dangerous time...

Her sweet scent was still lingering in the air. Ye Xiao couldn't help sighing, his heart was filled with an indescribable feeling - it was a feeling he had never felt before...

.....

Ye Xiao lied down when he got back to his room. He briefly dropped the alertness of his mind and suddenly felt completely exhausted, as if he was dying. He felt faint as if his body was empty; he did use up all of his energy to escape a few hours ago... Besides, he had even coped with Su Yeyue just now, so the moment when he relaxed, he instantly felt difficult to hold on.

The poison in his body was not yet cured. It was like a sharp blade hanging around his neck. However, because of the Heavenly Crystal Marrow he had recently swallowed, the poison had already

been restrained to a certain extent - and now, with just a push, the poison could be totally forced out of his body.

The sooner he removed the hidden danger, the better. Ye Xiao calmly and patiently controlled the remaining spiritual qi in his body. Although the extreme burst before had consumed ninety-nine percent of the spiritual qi which had originated from the Heavenly Crystal Marrow, a tiny little bit of it still remained in Ye Xiao's body. Fortunately, Ye Xiao scored a lucky hit. This tiny dissociative spiritual qi was actually an amount which he could control and apply freely at present.

Ye Xiao guided the spiritual qi to completely engulf the poison in his Jing and Mai. Tiny pieces of the dissociative spiritual qi from the Heavenly Crystal Marrow converged in his dantian. After which, the spiritual qi went through his Jing and Mai then all around his body from his dantian. The stubborn Qing-Ming Fruit poison was soon engulfed and directed to flow out through his Jing and Mai.

The poison that was acknowledged incurable in the mortal world was actually engulfed by a thin layer of spiritual qi and expelled out of his body! If cultivators in this world saw this, they would definitely be shocked enough to drop their jaws to the floor!

Ye Xiao felt a swelling pain in his whole Jing and Mai, and with a puff, he finally opened his mouth and spat out some black blood. The blood dropped to the floor with an indescribable stink!

The whole floor suddenly turned black.

At that moment, the Qing-Ming Fruit poison had finally been dispelled completely!

Ye Xiao felt relieved, “This god damn poison has been finally expelled out.”

The relief he had felt at this moment was truly indescribable.

He could finally have a good night's rest after this... At least, he wouldn't need to worry about getting killed by the poison anymore.

Ye Xiao lied down and relaxed his whole body to have a good night's rest and restore his strength...

But the next moment, - Wooosh! - he suddenly got up and sat on the bed.

Because the moment he lied down, he felt several words appearing in his mind.

Those were some golden words!

Where had he seen them? ...Ye Xiao recalled that when he first got the Heavenly Crystal Marrow, he immediately felt dizzy, and there seemed to be some golden words appearing in his sight, before the crystal had suddenly vanished...

Ye Xiao hastily sat upright and tried to transfer his soul power. Then, to his delight, he discovered that he could actually circulate his soul power once again!

Besides, from within his sea of consciousness, there came a strong attraction force...

Shock instantly replaced the usual calm and collected gaze on Ye Xiao's face.

His sea of consciousness was enshrouded in mist. Above the mist, there was a peculiar sphere shining in all its splendor.

One after another, waves of purple qi coming from the sphere flowed away.

“This... Isn't this the sphere that I had randomly stumbled upon when I was exploring the Death Domain in Qing-Yun Realm? When did it get into my sea of consciousness? What is going on?!”

Ye Xiao's pupils dilated. He had no idea how such a thing could have possibly happened.

However, a plausible explanation started to brew in his mind, “Is it even possible that... In the final battle of my prior life, I should have died completely, but instead I got reincarnated here without any reasons. Could this be the doing of this peculiar sphere?”

“Or could it be, that this Heavenly Crystal Marrow consequently fulfilled a certain requirement of this peculiar sphere... so it finally decided to reveal itself?”

Ye Xiao was very well-informed. He admitted that his theory was ridiculous, but he was ninety percent sure that his guess was indeed correct. Otherwise, everything would become unexplainable.

If something as ridiculous as rebirth could happen, was anything else really impossible?!

There was another faint thought brewing inside Ye Xiao's mind - this sphere could not be something simple!

Neither its origin nor its functions would definitely be simple!

“Maybe... It is highly possible that after I failed to walk on the road to the top in my prior life, I will once more proceed on the path of cultivation in this new life, and the path starts with this sphere?”

Ye Xiao was imagining with whimsicality. Although he knew that his idea was quite ridiculous, he was still filled with eagerness. Even the well-informed Xiao Monarch had never heard of such a strange thing before!

Ye Xiao gazed at the sphere in his sea of consciousness and remained puzzled after pondering over it a hundred times.

Something which he had randomly found before was actually an earthshaking treasure? How could he not have realized it before?

At that moment, Ye Xiao's eyes suddenly lit up!

It felt like a huge bolt of lightning, which could split the earth and the sky, was striking him!

After the lightning struck, everything turned white!

Right at that moment, Ye Xiao felt his entire body tremble as a ball of light appeared in his mind!

The light turned bigger and bigger. Step by step, he found that all the lights originated from this ball!

It was like a rising sun in the horizon of his sea of consciousness.

The ball rotated and ten golden words abruptly appeared, shining in front of the ball! It shined right into Ye Xiao's eyes!

All of the pain in his body had vanished, as if a miracle had happened at that moment.

[“Peerless lord of the world and primal spirit in chaos!”](#)

In Chinese philosophy, yin and yang describes how opposite or contrary forces are actually complementary, interconnected, and interdependent in the natural world, and how they give rise to

each other as they interrelate to one another. Yang means male in gender. Pure Yang Martial Art is only for boys - males never have sex, to cultivate.

Sedan chair: A wheelless vehicles, a type of human-powered transport, for the transport of persons.

The ten Chinese words are “天地无双主，混沌第一灵！”

Chapter 8: Purple Qi from the East, Ablution of Muscles and Bones

After a while, the ten words turned smaller and smaller and eventually shrank into the sphere. What terrified Ye Xiao was the fact that his soul followed the shrinking words and was also drawn into the sphere!

"The sphere is obviously inside my body. How could it draw me in? What is going on?" Just as confusion aroused in Ye Xiao's mind - Woosh! - his consciousness fell into a mysterious space.

After staring blankly for a short time, Ye Xiao quickly regained his composure. He looked around and saw a huge palace towering like mountains with clouds curling around!

Right below the palace, there were two giant doors made of two huge white jades. The surface of the doors was smooth like a mirror - there was nothing on it!

When Ye Xiao was checking the doors carefully, he suddenly heard a sound - Whoosh! - A character, which was like a meteor, flew from beyond the horizon and crashed on the blank doorframe of the left door!

Tian!

And then another character fell.

Ye Xiao was already prepared to see them. He looked at those characters flying down and embedding themselves on the doorframe of both sides. They were exactly the ten words he just saw - Peerless lord of the world and the primal spirit in chaos!

After that, more words started showing up one by one on the white-jade doors.

"From heaven to hell, there is only one absolute ruler. But who is he?"

"When the universe turned into existence, the sphere showed up. To create this sphere, all the energy, lives and power of the universe were used. Everything was created because of it - the sun, moon and stars in the sky, and the mountains and rivers on earth..."

It was such a long text.

Ye Xiao read it and felt confused, "The words inside the sphere are really overstated, are they not? The sun, the moon and the stars were all created by you, huh?"

That... is impossible...

Who do you think you are, a god? A sage? Or a sovereign being?"

The next moment, the closed doors suddenly opened!

An extremely dense fog flooded out!

And beyond the fog was a long tunnel.

As Ye Xiao was about to enter, golden flashing lights suddenly appeared in front of his face, showing a line of words.

"Enter! Gain absolute power or face total annihilation!"

Ye Xiao stopped walking and looked at them attentively.

After the eight words, there came another twelve words flashing like they were directly carved in his mind.

"Either become the absolute ruler of the universe or yet another insignificant speck of dust in the world!!"

Ye Xiao was shocked deep inside his heart!

It was a clear statement: If you enter this place, you have decided to accept this legacy, and you will only have a single way out - by becoming the absolute ruler of the universe.

If he couldn't succeed, he would become a speck of dust!

Withering away!

In simpler terms: If he failed, he would die!

The condition was really taking it to the extreme.

Live or die!

There was no other option to consider.

Ye Xiao stood silently for a while and said with a low voice, "A single man in the world should dominate everything! Even if I fail, at least I would have fought once. I may die, but I will have no regrets! A speck of dust, so what? A deadwood, so what? Life is inherently like a leaf living through autumn!"

"If I succeed, I will be the absolute ruler!"

He leisurely walked through the doorway with his hand folded behind his back.

He actually disdained looking at those warnings flashing around him.

Success would let him look down upon the universe while failure would lead him to annihilation!

He felt as if his blood was boiling, and he was filled with an indescribable desire!

"There it is, a method, a way back into the Qing-Yun realm. The three factions, wait and see! I, the Xiao Monarch, will return soon!"

A place filled with warnings like these were just a perfect fit for his personality! - Succeed or die!

That was actually what he had done in his previous life!

However, the present Xiao Monarch was perhaps even more resolute than he had ever been!

"Here it is!" Above the empty main hall, there was a strange zone. The Heavenly Crystal Marrow was right at its center and was slowly spreading waves after waves of heavy fog. This heavy fog was filling the main hall, and the purple qi from the hall was slowly entering the Heavenly Crystal Marrow.

"I was right! They are connecting with each other, stimulating each other, and then building up a regular cycling pattern." Ye Xiao pondered. Although he didn't understand what was really going on, he could see that inside the sphere, the Heavenly Crystal Marrow was actually the catalyst for the sphere...

Ye Xiao tried to take the Heavenly Crystal Marrow, but he found himself unable to reach it.

"What the hell is this?! I had battered my brains to obtain that thing, and now I can't even touch it?" Ye Xiao was a bit pissed.

After finding the Heavenly Crystal Marrow inside the sphere, Ye Xiao started to look at his surroundings. He realized that even though he had entered a huge palace, he had actually only explored a very small part of it. The rest of the buildings behind were still shrouded by the heavy fog. He couldn't even see his fingers clearly, let alone tell directions.

DAANGG! Suddenly, a ringing sound filled the air, like the melodious sound of an evening drum or a morning bell...

Ye Xiao felt his mind go blank after hearing this ring. He attained a shocking enlightenment which had truly appeared from nowhere. He could clearly feel that the bell's ring was leading him through thousands of his past lives!

At that moment, the thousands of lifetimes turned into a ray of light that rapidly flew through Ye Xiao's sight!

It seemed both real and dreamlike at the same time; seemingly existing in front of him, yet impossible to reach...

The purple qi continued to expand till the ringing sound died out. A wave of the purple qi thrust up from the central grounds and formed ten words!

"At the very beginning of the universe, only the purple qi from the east was in existence!"

An extreme dense purple qi suddenly rose with splendid lights surrounding it. As sudden as lightning, it thrust forward and landed in between Ye Xiao's eyes!

Instantly, Ye Xiao felt that his head had become heavy as a martial arts method quickly took shape within his mind

"The creation of the universe relied on the East-rising Purple Qi!"

"At the beginning of the universe, there was a purple qi rising from the east. It is the mother of the world and the benefactor of the firmament... The method of cultivating the purple qi strengthens the heart and refines the soul. My heart is the heaven; Yin and Yang are revolving; three lights are converging; my soul is crystal clear; the purple qi rises from the east."

.....

"The East-rising Purple Qi!"

Ye Xiao read this method word for word and sentence for sentence. Within his mind, he eventually found enlightenment. It felt like finding a treasure!

The Xiao Monarch had earned such a great title in his prior life. While the strong basic cultivation he had was an ascent to transcendence, the method of martial arts he had been using was also something out of the ordinary. His discernment was also surely a transcendental skill. In Ye Xiao's eyes, no matter if this

East-rising Purple Qi was the first martial arts method in the universe or not, it was much better than the Pure Yang Martial Arts he had used in his prior life. The two methods were totally not in the same level; they were like cloud and soil. Even saying that the East-rising Purple Qi was in the sky and the Pure Yang Martial Arts was on the earth was actually flattering the latter one. They absolutely belonged in different realms!

Just by reading the beginning of this method, it had made him feel its endless power.

He was sitting on the bed, wholeheartedly performing the new cultivation method again and again. He was transferring the poor small piece of spiritual qi into the route of the new method as he began cultivating...

The scattered spiritual qi in the world converged towards his body, then it gradually entered within him and flowed towards his dantian...

Inside the sphere, the Heavenly Crystal Marrow was still persistently emitting pure qi. The space materialized while the purple qi kept on spreading...

Ye Xiao sat on his bed the entire night!

Ye Xiao clearly remembered that when he was performing the new martial arts method for the 1999th time, his soul seemed to have shaken with a buzz, and all his [acupoints](#) opened at once! The spiritual qi from all over the world crazily rushed into his body.

His dantian held the scattered qi from the world, and there was even a wave of faintly discernible cool energy forming an extremely tenacious thread flowing into his Jing and Mai!

That was an energy created by the mixture of the sphere and the Heavenly Crystal Marrow - the first piece of the saint spiritual power!

When ordinary spiritual qi entered his dantian, they merged together. If both strings would be compared, then the normal string would be made of some normal silk, while this saint spiritual power would be a strand of superior silk that could hold a thousand kilograms.

That was like the absolute difference between a god and a mortal!

The difference between heaven and earth!

While Ye Xiao was cultivating by absorbing the East-rising Purple Qi, his skin gradually excreted layers of sticky mucus which was black and smelly...

Ye Xiao didn't move one bit, seemingly unaware of his body getting dirtier and dirtier. An inexplicable excitement was engulfing his mind!

His condition right at this moment, was actually what most cultivators could only dream about - ablution of the muscles and

bones!

This was the first step on the long journey of cultivation. If he had been using normal methods, he would need to reach an unimaginable high level before he could enter the ablution stage in order to transform his mortal body into a saint body.

Surprisingly, the East-rising Purple Qi actually started the ablution right at the beginning!

He had really found an unimaginable treasure.

Maybe it was true that this method was the first martial arts method in the universe, like it was said in its description!

.....

The next morning, when the sky was still dark, Ye Xiao hurried out from his room and jumped into the pond.

Splash!!!

In the pond, several big fish were scared by the unexpected visitor and walloped around.

Ye Xiao actually had no other choice. He had just woken up from cultivation and discovered that he stank like a shxt hole!

God knows how much dirt was inside the body of this foppish playboy. This time, all the filthy things had been exuded, and they even formed a heavy layer on his body...

Ye Xiao even felt that his eyes were totally covered by filth...

He casually rubbed his body and removed a handful of dirt... and he rubbed again only to get a strip of them which was about 30 centimeters long and the same width with a finger... People who didn't know what was going on would think that Lord Ye was catching a catfish in the pond of his house...

The stinky smell was being spread out by the wind. Anyone who smelled it would definitely puke immediately!

The smell was just too strong! There was even a guard who, while covering his nose, had come to see what was going on, but he was berated away by Ye Xiao, "Don't you see I am having a bath? What have you come for?"

The guard began to run away in an attempt to save his nose while scolding, "Shxt! I know you are having a bath, but there are two questions ok? The first: Don't you think it is too early to take a bath before sunrise? The second: I fxxking know you are taking a bath, but it smells like somebody's washing the toilet!!!"

The pond in the General Ye's house was really big. It was enormous!

However, when Ye Xiao got out of the pond and looked back, all the fish in the pond were floating on the surface of the water. Their white bellies were revealed as they breathed the fresh air as if suffocating, with their mouths moving...

If those fish could talk, they would cry before talking, "What the fxxk?! This is some nasty shit... I-Is this the end?"

Acupoints: Acupoints are locations on the body that are the focus of acupuncture, acupressure, sonopuncture and laser acupuncture treatment. In Traditional Chinese Medicine, several hundred acupuncture points are claimed to be located along what practitioners call meridians.

Chapter 9: A Peculiar Bead A Strange Egg

Ye Xiao slowly put on his clothes and felt his whole body relax. He had finally begun the journey of cultivating the number one martial arts method since the beginning of time - the East-rising Purple Qi!

He tried using a normal method to circulate the power he had gained from cultivation. As he guided his qi towards his palm, it started to shine with a bright primrose yellow light.

"Level 1 in the Earth Origin Stage!"

Ye Xiao felt relieved. What a nice surprise!

He had realized that this mortal world was quite different from the Qing-Yun Realm where he had stayed in during his previous life. In Qing-Yun Realm, the considered lowest stage in the path of cultivation was the Spirit Origin Stage. In his prior life, he had reached the peak of the Dao Origin Stage, which was also the highest level in the Qing-Yun Realm.

However, in this mortal world, it began with the Mortal Origin Stage.

The Mortal Origin Stage, Earth Origin Stage and Sky Origin Stage were the only three stages in the mortal world at the moment. Above the Sky Origin Stage, it was the Spirit Origin Stage which only appeared in the Qing-Yun Realm.

The nine levels in the Mortal Origin Stage were the nine steps to become a hero. The nine levels in the Earth Origin Stage were like nine mountains that were, one after the other, harder and harder to climb. The nine levels in the Sky Origin Stage were like nine different clouds at various heights, while each upgrade equaled a step closer to heaven!

"Level 1 in the Mortal Origin Stage allows people to establish themselves in the mortal world; level 5 would allow one to get wealthy; aside from life and death, all routes in this world lead to the 9th level. The level which will officially let you stand apart from ordinary people!"

A man in the Earth Origin Stage could be called a real cultivator. People who had reached this grade usually had already achieved numerable accomplishments... However, in the Earth Origin Stage, levelling up could be compared to climbing the tallest and most challenging mountains in the world...

"So at this moment, I have already become stronger than ordinary people... I deserve to be called a real cultivator now..." Ye Xiao actually started to show a slight trace of complacency.

In his prior life, he had spent a full year to cultivate himself from level 1 in the Mortal Origin Stage to level 1 in the Earth Origin Stage. This time, however, it only took him a single day!

"Such speed..." Ye Xiao was rubbing his chin and felt a bit light-headed. A cultivation speed like this was something he wouldn't

dare to dream about in his previous life.

Although he knew that it was the benefit of cultivating the East-rising Purple Qi, he was still satisfied enough that he wouldn't regret dying again for it. Only those who had cultivated themselves would know the difficulties of increasing their strength...

Although the former Ye Xiao - the foppish playboy - was ignorant, he had practiced some spiritual martial arts under pressure from his father. He was more or less at level 3 in the Mortal Origin Stage. There was a silver lining found after living in the General's House after all. The departed lord Ye had a certain amount of spiritual power inside his body, however, there were too many impurities in it.

"It is good that he had created a foundation for me, although he had debilitated his body so much that I don't even want to look at it... However, at least I have a body and I am still alive." Since he was very satisfied at the moment, he didn't wish to dwell upon it.

"I wonder... does the sphere have any other functions?" Ye Xiao was in good spirits.

While enjoying the progress he achieved in cultivation, he was more interested in the Heavenly Crystal Marrow. He had only entered the space inside the sphere and used the qi obtained from the Heavenly Crystal Marrow, yet the ablution of his muscles and bones had already taken place. This was truly wondrous! Moreover, the originally waste-like body had broken through the Earth Origin Stage because of it.

"What if... What if I take another piece, what would happen... like, I want to laugh hehe, hehe, heh..."

Thinking of that, he reentered the sphere. Ye Xiao walked straight to where the Heavenly Crystal Marrow was located and looked up. He rubbed his chin and thought, "Shall I... cut off another piece?"

Ye Xiao thought of something and immediately took action. He jumped up and reached his hands out to grab the Heavenly Crystal Marrow...

He had previously failed to cut the crystal with a knife, but now that he had the power of the Earth Origin Stage. He thought, "This time, I can finally fiddle with this tough thing no matter what!"

However...

Booom!

Purple lights attacked him at once.

Ye Xiao was blown onto the floor and nearly got his hip decimated into eight pieces. The shock, however, made him oblivious to the screaming pain of his body.

The Heavenly Crystal Marrow was right in front of him and

could be clearly seen.

However... He might be able to lay his eyes upon it, but it was still far beyond reach. He couldn't reach it no matter how he tried!

That wasn't all, the moment he had tried to lay his hands on it, he was cruelly beaten away by the purple lights coming from within the Heavenly Crystal Marrow...

"What the hell is going on? This thing had costed me innumerable hardships to obtain, and now that it has finally become mine, I can only look at it from a distance?! Is there still justice?!" Ye Xiao was kneading his hip with frustration flashing across his face.

He wouldn't give up just like this. As such, he gave it another shot, but the results were still the same.

Ye Xiao was frustrated after being beaten down again and again. With dirt smeared all over his face, he exclaimed, "It's really impossible to reach!"

Looking up at the high-profile Heavenly Crystal Marrow, Ye Xiao sighed and groaned, "I've never seen something like this shit... I got it, and here should be my place. It is obviously mine, but it actually won't let me touch it! You... ratty space in the sphere, can you be reasonable?"

After trying a few more times, Ye Xiao feebly lied down on the

floor of the space.

He finally understood. Even though he could get the Heavenly Crystal Marrow into this sphere, his level was too low to take charge of the space inside it. He didn't have the right, or should we say power, to rule this place.

Ye Xiao clearly knew that using such a treasure like the Heavenly Crystal Marrow right now would really be a huge waste! Although it could immediately boost his cultivation to unimaginable heights, it could also bring some hidden troubles along. After all, if strength didn't come from arduous cultivation, then a cultivator's foundation was doomed to be weak. It would be a difficult journey for him to increase his power endlessly.

However... the chance to achieve a meteoric rise in a single night was so alluring that no one would be able to resist it at all. Though for Ye Xiao, because it was within his sight but beyond his reach for now, he no longer held any interest for it.

"Fine. This place will make a fine storage room." Ye Xiao settled for the second best option in an attempt to comfort himself.

Then, he left the space, grabbed a chair outside and tried to bring it back into the space within the sphere...

"Erhh, no?" Ye Xiao looked at the chair in his hand and scratched his head.

"Is it too big? Maybe a smaller one will do."

Ye Xiao grabbed a stone about the size of an egg.

But... it failed once again.

"What is the problem?" Ye Xiao was really confused.

"Even I can get in, how come this small stone can't?!"

He tried it once again!

He had tried for several times, but failed nonetheless. It was only when he shifted his attention to a jade-crystal which contained the essences of the universe and was left to him by his father. After attempting to bring it inside the sphere, something finally happened...

It was not that the jade-crystal could enter the space, however...

"It lost some..." Ye Xiao looked at the jade-crystal in his hand and discovered that something had changed, making him feel both happy and annoyed.

Normal people might not have been able to tell the difference, but Ye Xiao on the other hand obviously felt it. The jade-crystal didn't look different - it retained the same scale and the same sheen. However, the most essential spiritual power it was

harboring was gone, so it had now become nothing more than a pillow with an embroidered case - pretty to look at, yet absolutely useless.

"Could it be that this space only accepts certain higher-class things..." Ye Xiao started to analyze it, "That means, every fancy treasure needs to be higher than a certain class to be able to enter this space. This jade-crystal is quite an example. Except for the most essential part of it, the rest is below the required class, so it can't get in!"

Ye Xiao rubbed his chin and was thoughtful for a while, "This thing is picky with its food, isn't it?"

"To absorb the essence of the sky and the earth and to gather the qi from everything, so as to expand the space and feed yourself. Only then can you become the unparalleled Monarch of this unbound space... This is the first temple of the unbound space. To open the second temple, you need to master the second degree of East-rising Purple Qi." Ye Xiao had finally found some words on the wall.

In other words, it was telling Ye Xiao that he should first acquire more valuable things to expand the space in this sphere before it could feed him back. Such circulation would cause both of them to improve.

"Hmm humph, so there it is..." At this moment, Ye Xiao couldn't help but frown, "I have just started cultivating the East-rising Purple Qi, and I am not even in the first degree; I am only at the beginner's degree."

As for the present circumstances, he had no idea what the requirements would be to enter this second temple.

The Earth Origin Stage only corresponded with the beginner's degree; it should at least be the supreme master's level in the Sky Origin Stage to achieve the second degree.

A question started to form in his head, "How many degrees does the East-rising Purple Qi have?"

Followed by another question, "What degree would be the maximum he could possibly reach?"

"This is..." Ye Xiao sighed deeply.

A vast and hazy future had appeared in front of him. There was still a seemingly endless road for him to travel!

But in any case, the East-rising Purple Qi was absolutely thousands of times stronger than what he had been practicing in his previous life! Anyway, he would practice it to the supreme level and cultivate it even further!

The urgent question now was... where could he get all of the treasures he was going to need?

From all the things around him in the General's House, only the

jade-crystal could be barely considered worthy - yet it was only a partial pass at best - what a tragedy!

"If you give me nothing, how can I obtain countless treasures?" Ye Xiao felt depressed and sighed deeply at the space, "Even if a treasure shows up, it will be in the hands of a noble family, and it will just be used as a tribute to coax someone like the king. Even if there's one worthy enough... I will still need the money to make the deal. If I were at a higher level, I could just go and rob it... but I am a mere weakling for now. If I go rob a top-level treasure to expand this shitty space, I am afraid that a single fart from the enemy will instantly kill me. What am I even complaining about?" A wonderful housewife could never cook a meal if she had no rice [1; just like Ye Xiao now, he also couldn't do something if he wasn't capable.

No one knew whether the space was disgusted by the pathetic tone of some Monarch or not, however, a purple qi floated in the air as the space suddenly trembled. On the western corner of the space, a deep and serene tunnel appeared.

Ye Xiao went blank when he saw this. He was just simply grumbling; he didn't actually expect any reaction from it.

"Is it because I am too pathetic so the gods showed pity for me? Oh no, I mean the space showed pity for me!"

He walked through the tunnel and saw a purple-colored table at the end of it. On this purple-colored table, there was a lotus pedestal, and at the center of the pedestal, there was a... an egg?

Endless purple qi was coming out from inside the lotus pedestal and going into the egg, while the surplus qi was frantically flying away...

"Erhh... an egg? No... a duck egg?" Ye Xiao was looking at the egg on the table and felt really confused.

It was obviously an egg!

Yet it was slightly bigger than an egg. Well, if there was an egg with two yolks... it could be about this big.

"What kind of being could be in this egg?" Ye Xiao stretched out his hand to pick up the egg in order to examine it. However, the moment he grasped it, he shockingly found himself unable to do so. He quickly exerted all his strength to pick it up apprehensively...

BAMM!!!

Ye Xiao fell down on the floor!

He still couldn't pick it up. He actually still couldn't do it!

It was nothing but a small egg! For Ye Xiao's current cultivation - he could at least carry up to a thousand kilograms - yet he actually couldn't pick it up!

"!!!!!" Ye Xiao's mouth was widely opened, unable to utter a single word.

The next moment, he felt a burning sensation in his heart.

Chapter 10: The Marvelous Supreme Dan?

"This egg... Could it be some mythical creature's egg? What if it hatches... heh, heh, heh..."

All of a sudden, Ye Xiao's eyes were filled with an endless desire.

Such happiness!

[Hahahahahaha... How could I ever imagine that anything inside this quirky place would be ordinary?!

Only a super mythical creature would be able to brazenly leave its egg here, wouldn't it?

Look at the table... Hmm, obviously, all the spiritual qi in this space is gathering here to feed the egg. Only a fraction of the spiritual qi arriving at this egg are rejected and thrown away after entering the egg...

It turns out that all the purple qi I was using for cultivation is actually the inferior spiritual qi which this egg doesn't care about...] Ye Xiao was left speechless.

"I wonder when this egg will hatch..." After spending some time imagining what sort of creature was inside the egg, Ye Xiao carefully inspected the purple table, expecting that some other surprises might show up.

It must have been his lucky day, because yet another surprise dawned upon him.

There was a small delicate purple box under the table. Inside this box, there were about a dozen round beady pills with the size of soybeans. They were all enveloped by a weak white halo of light.

"This is [Pei-Yuan Dan](#)." Ye Xiao was knowledgeable and clear-sighted. How could he not know this stuff?

However, Pei-Yuan Dan was nothing extraordinary in the Qing-Yun realm...

But these Pei-Yuan Dan were at a very high level - they could very well be of the highest quality. When they were created, there wasn't any efficacy lost due to it being restrained by spiritual qi. They had almost broken through the limits of dan!

Anyway, Ye Xiao had never been able to produce something at such a high level in his prior life.

However... even if it was of the highest level, it was still just a Pei-Yuan Dan.

The cheapest of the dans!

"And this is the only benefit I can get?" Ye Xiao felt speechless as he put the Pei-Yuan Dan beads into a jade bottle and left the space while sighing and groaning.

"The spiritual qi I get is the discarded spiritual qi from that strange egg, and the extra profit I get are actually some cheap dan beads. I really can't think of a word to say!"

.....

"Steward, how much money do we have in the family? How much can I use?" Ye Xiao asked the steward.

"Uhh... Well..." The steward seemed to feel awkward, "The money in this family naturally all belongs to you, my lord, but the salary of the general and the spoils of war are all for some certain uses. As for those left for you to use, they are... are all in your own closet."

What he meant was obvious: For those given by the general, he could freely use them; but for those that wasn't given to him, he'd better not plan on touching them.

Ye Xiao stared and sighed feebly.

He knew about his father. General Ye was truly an extremely nice boss to his soldiers. Most of his income was used to pension the relatives of the soldiers who had sacrificed themselves in wars, as well as those who were left disabled...

This family didn't really have much money left for their own use...

Thanks to the departed Lord Ye who had saved some gold and silver by acting recklessly, Ye Xiao still had about 500 taels of gold. But because he had lent some money to Zuo Wuji, he only had 250 taels of gold left.

He also took another 500 taels of gold from Lan Langlang by blackmailing him...

"Poor! Truly poor!" Ye Xiao was struggling.

"Forget it. Go on with your own business. Just leave me alone." Ye Xiao waved his hand and instructed the steward to move away.

Ye Xiao collected his thoughts for a long time and eventually decided to change his appearance. For him who used to be the world-renowned Xiao Monarch, it was child's play to change his appearance by transferring his spiritual qi. Besides, now he was... an expert of the Earth Origin Realm.

Although the Pei-Yuan Dan wasn't good stuff in Ye Xiao's eyes, it should still be considered as a one-of-a-kind tonic in this mortal world... So it would be for the better if he wasn't discovered as the one who released them to the public...

Otherwise, there would be endless troubles for him.

A face with a dark and rough look, whiskers that seemed to have been growing for over 30 years, and an extremely muscular body.

That was exactly what Ye Xiao looked like after disguising himself. After checking himself out in the mirror over and over, he eventually nodded with satisfaction, and then he put on a bamboo hat as an extra form of insurance to keep his true identity hidden.

"The Ling-Bao Hall Salesroom!"

Ye Xiao was standing in front of the biggest salesroom in town. It was where tomorrow's auction was scheduled to be held. It was already bustling with people concerning themselves with decorating this salesroom in preparation for the auction that would take place the following day.

What Zuo Wuji wanted, would appear at this auction...

"Well, the name of the salesroom... is truly decent." Ye Xiao observed the busy staff as he deeply thought. He then murmured in his head, "Wasn't there a Heaven Attaining Salesroom in... I wonder if all these salesrooms are connected to each other, perhaps they're just branches?"

He threw his thoughts aside for now and stepped through the door.

"Please hold on, warrior." A man with a goatee from the salesroom came up to him and smiled fawningly, "The auction will not start till tomorrow..."

It was an obvious statement: Don't come here before tomorrow.

"I came to bring business." With a raucous voice, Ye Xiao continued, "How can I not know that the date for the auction is tomorrow? That is exactly why I am here today. Go fetch me your boss. Ask him if he wants some supreme dan on his auction. If you don't do this quickly, I will turn around and leave!"

"Supreme dan?" The man with the goatee frowned lightly.

In the Land of Han-Yang, there would only be one in every one thousand people capable of making drugs. For a drug-maker to reach a level at which he could create a dan, not even one in ten thousand drug-makers would reach such a level! As for a dan, it was a wonderful thing that even an unfathomable cultivator couldn't easily obtain!

Moreover, it was the supreme dan!

But this guy...

"If you don't mind me asking sir, the dan you are talking about... Could you show it to me?" This man with the goatee changed the way he addressed the other party at once; from warrior to sir.

Ye Xiao let out an annoyed grumble, and without further ado, he shook the bottle in his hand, before taking its lid off.

Suddenly, a dense wave of wonderful scent wafted out.

The supervisor could only manage to get a measly sniff before Ye Xiao had decided to reseal the bottle. Even so, with just a sniff, he already felt his entire body relax as a comfortable feeling filled his heart.

"Please follow me. I will bring you to our most capable connoisseur immediately." Only with a sniff, the supervisor could judge: This supreme dan was very likely genuine!

As the supervisor of the salesroom, he was naturally well-informed, but today was still the first time that he got to appreciate this wonderful scent.

All the ordinary tonics, even other valuable materials that were nearly upper-grade, were unable to be as precious as this!

Ye Xiao sat on a fauteuil as if he was a warrior carrying a golden sword and riding a giant horse. He unhurriedly tasted the tea with a certain serene and confident expression on his face.

In front of him, the supervisor had returned in haste, "Sir, Master Guan from our salesroom is here. Master Guan is the number one connoisseur in our Ling-Bao Hall! He'll definitely be able to tell if the dans you're intending to sell are authentic or not."

Behind him, there was a white-bearded old man radiating vigor.

"May I have your noble name please?" The white-bearded Master

Guan smiled gently, "And your title?"

Ye Xiao smiled flatly, "Old gentleman, are you considering... the possibility that there is a dan-maker in this kingdom? Or should we say... that there hasn't been a dan-maker of such a high level for many years in this kingdom??"

Master Guan laughed, "I didn't say that. There is always a smarter person, and there is always a higher heaven. There is always what we cannot imagine, but nothing that cannot be done... However, I have been staying here in the Chen-Xing City for 20 years. If you, sir, have actually brought some real dan... it would only be the third time that I would have the opportunity to auction a dan in these 20 years! That is not only a great honor for the salesroom, but also for me!"

Ye Xiao was deeply shocked by his words!

He had still underestimated the value of dan in this mortal world!

Although dan was something ordinary and common in the cultivation field, that was when it was in the Qing-Yun Realm!

A dan with the efficacies of fortifying and nourishing the body was almost the same as rubbish in the Qing-Yun Realm. Who of all those elite cultivators in the Qing-Yun Realm would need such a thing? They wouldn't even bother bending over to pick it up from the ground!

But in the mortal world, a dan like this was enough to be called an immortal dan!

Only one portion could cure hundreds of illnesses!

Only one portion could bring fitness!

Only one portion could heal all wounds!

Moreover, the Pei-Yuan Dan brought by Ye Xiao was actually the top-quality supreme dan!

"Here I congratulate you on having such great luck today. You can be sure that this is your third time to auction dan." Ye Xiao said flatly, "Besides... If I can get a good deal this time, maybe you will... have the fourth and the fifth great honors like this one!"

Master Guan trembled as he stroked his white beard and started to observe Ye Xiao. He carefully went over Ye Xiao's characteristics: his dark skin and the bamboo hat which he had worn despite being indoors, and then he said solemnly, "I am Guan Wanshan. I dare ask how I should call your honor?"

Ye Xiao smiled, "I am... Feng Zhiling."

"Greetings, brother Feng." Guan Wanshan nodded and smiled with a [fist and palm salute](#).

Ye Xiao calmly nodded while retaining his previous posture. He would have never thought that the false name he had casually picked up just now would turn out to become world-famous and renowned in the entire universe... Many, many years later, it would become a legend in this world: The most honorable, the most handsome, the most unrestrained, the most elegant and the most magnanimous... The [perfect-five](#) dan-maker in the world. (Eh-hem, let me play the role... I should be handsome and unrestrained somehow...- words from the author)

"However, I should still inspect the dan first." Master Guan straightened his clothes and sat properly. His words might be tactful, but what he meant was obvious.

Ye Xiao wasn't surprised. He took out the jade bottle from his clothes and casually put it on the table.

Guan Wanshan looked surprised, "If it is really a supreme dan, how can he keep them in such an inferior bottle?" He suddenly started to question the authenticity of these dan. But when he took the bottle and opened it, a dense stream of qi flowed out, causing a drastic change in his expression!

His hands were vigorously trembling as he tried to seal the bottle very cautiously. It seemed that he was afraid to let even the slightest scent to flow away!

Guan Wanshan took a deep breath to calm down his palpitating heart. The dense scent had only barely reached his nostrils, yet he had already felt the [qi of life](#), which was the most potent qi he had ever seen in a dan. He realized...

As of this moment, even the thought of suspecting or disdaining the items taken out by this man in front of him had turned into a massive joke.

This was the most valuable dan he had ever come across in his entire life!

The very next moment, he started giving a quick sequence of orders, "Somebody, anybody, quick! Bring me my Purple Crystal Plate quickly! And my Purple Jade Bottle... Bring me my Dan-Yang Mirror, hurry!. Quick, quick, quick..." Then he turned around and asked Ye Xiao in a straightforward manner, "Brother Feng... The urh... How many pieces of this kind of high quality dan are you looking to sell? Just one? Or maybe two? Or..."

His voice was quivering. A 50, maybe 60 years old man, had his face flustered all over, and his eyes were even filled with earnest eagerness and even a tinge of insanity.

Dan: One kind of medicine, mostly with miracle efficacy. Pellet-shape pills.

Fist and palm salute: To cup one's hands in obeisance or greeting. The right hand is clenched in a fist. The left hand thumb is bent, and the four fingers are stacked and straight. The palm of the left hand is placed over the fist.

Perfect-five: Used to describe Ye Xiao because he has five qualities maxed out-The most honorable, the most handsome, the most unrestrained, the most elegant and the most magnanimous

Qi of life: A form of qi which is found in all living beings.

Chapter 11: Oh, You Want to Buy It? Guess What, I Don't Want to Sell It!

As soon as Guan Wanshan spoke, he immediately regretted opening his mouth. Finding such a valuable piece of dan was worth the good fortune of three generations, and he was actually hoping to see more. He really felt that greed had taken over his rationality. However, if he could obtain more than one of such a precious item, it would definitely be the best day of his life.

The old man's reaction startled Ye Xiao, but he still managed to reply indifferently, "Well I didn't count how many are present. It should be about fifteen.... maybe sixteen. Though, I truly didn't count..." He felt drops of sweat appear on his forehead as he started to worry, [I truly don't think of this as something valuable. Why would it draw such a big reaction from this old man? This is such a hot-headed old man!] He was really taken aback by this kind of a reaction.

"WHAT?! F-fifteen... o-or sixteen?!? And you didn't even count it?! Seriously?!" Guan Wanshan stared at him like he wanted to hit Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao felt helpless as he innocently threw his hands up in the air...

Guan Wanshan truly wanted to curse this man in front of him, but he still managed to keep his words to himself. He thought, [A single item is valuable enough to shake the world, yet he actually has more than fifteen of them. He has such a ridiculous amounts of good luck to be able to acquire such valuable dan beads, yet he

doesn't even seem to value it. He had even brought it to an auction, and yet he couldn't even be bothered to count it?!

That was such a reckless waste of God's good gifts!

This... this guy... is truly... a humongous black sheep!

The three lords? They were simply three good kids compared to this guy!

One could really not be compared with the other!]

Guan Wanshan's lips were trembling. He turned around and yelled, "... G-go bring me twenty Purple Jade Bottles!"

He couldn't scold Ye Xiao at the moment, so he vented his anger on his subordinates.

Many loud shouts were heard one after the other, then they were followed by footsteps which belonged to an approaching crowd.

It had been at least a dozen years since they had seen the master connoisseur so agitated.

By any chance, if they acted too slowly, then at the very least, they would be reprimanded. However, in the worst case scenario, they might even lose their jobs.

Only a few moments later, Guan Wanshan had received all the equipment he had demanded.

Then he took out a clean white towel and wiped his hands completely clean. He put a purple plate made of crystal on the table, and after which, he took out a strange transparent cover and placed it over the plate.

After that, he took the jade bottle from Ye Xiao and placed it on the plate through a strange opening in the cover.

With that, only his hands could reach through the cover. They fitted perfectly into the opening, making sure that none of the spiritual qi that was given off by the dan bead would be able to escape.

"This is some incredible equipment. It really is of great quality." The Xiao Monarch clicked his tongue in admiration for the structure of the cover.

However, he didn't realize that his praise had made the old guy Guan nearly fall down in anger, [The story about '[keeping the casket and giving back the pearl](#)' has become a laughingstock for over a thousand years. Now there is another living example. The cover is an artful thing, but it can never be compared with the valuable dan beads. You think little of such treasure but admire a common cover. What a bloody world-class joke!]

When the jade bottle was opened, the wonderful scent spread again. Moreover, from inside the bottle, a mass of white mist

emerged, and it couldn't even disperse because of its density!

"Dan... cloud!!!"

The white beard of Guan Wanshan quivered. His eyes nearly popped out of their sockets and dropped to the ground.

There are nine grades of dan, and only those over grade 7 could release a dan mist. At the highest grade 9, this dan mist would even contain visible dan veins.

However, only the legendary, limit-breaking dan that had broken through the limits of the 9th grade could produce... [the legendary dan cloud](#)!

The cloud as well as the mist actually shared the same essential attributes, however, the mist would usually disperse, but as for the cloud, according to the legends, the cloud would keep on rising while continuously changing its shape!

That was similar to the difference between heaven and earth!

The dan cloud was something that only appeared in those legendary stories from eons past. Only stories were told about it in this mortal world, but it had never been seen before!

At this moment, Guan Wanshan was witnessing the legendary dan cloud that he hadn't even dared dreaming about. He could smell its extremely dense smell which brought the greatest joy to

both his body and mind. He was nearly crying out in excitement.

"My dear ancestors!" Guan Wanshan murmured in jubilation, "Today, I...I have finally seen the legendary dan cloud with my own two eyes! Oh, this dan cloud... It is worth three-generations of good fortune... I no longer have any regrets and I can die willingly..."

The Xiao Monarch was slightly stunned, [What the hell is going on? He is just identifying some dan beads. How could such a simple thing make him go crazy... Die willingly he says... That is just a simple dan bead, not some lethal incurable poison!]

The bottle was carefully leaned forward in order to let a soybean-sized dan bead roll out. The soybean-sized dan bead was still enveloped by the dan cloud as it was rolling around on the plate. After a while, the dan bead could be clearly identified as a golden dan bead with mysterious veins covering its entire surface...

Guan Wanshan lightly closed his eyes which were filled with satisfaction.

No further inspection was needed.

Veins were densely covering this dan bead, while the dan cloud was still ever spreading

This was - something that could only be produced by the supreme immortals from myths - the legendary magical grade 10 dan!

Although it was just some Pei-Yuan Dan, with such quality, a grade 9 dan-maker from the myths would want to buy it even for an exorbitant price and take it for research, because... more than just about the grade of dan, it was about opening an entrance to a tough path towards supreme dan-making!

Even learning a tiny bit of the technique could bring a big upgrade to the dan-maker.

Almost acting like a devoted fanatic, Guan Wanshan quickly grabbed a purple jade bottle and placed the first Pei-Yuan Dan bead inside it. Followed by the second Pei-Yuan Dan bead entering a second bottle, the third one in another bottle... and then the fourth...

"Fifteen in total!"

Guan Wanshan was utterly shocked by the number.

Although Ye Xiao had mentioned it, Guan Wanshan still had a hard time believing this man in front of him, especially after he had confirmed the quality of the dan beads that even released the legendary dan cloud. It could be said that creating one of these at a time in a sealed furnace would be a matter of unbelievable luck. But, it was obvious to him that the fifteen were produced from the same furnace at the same time, and they actually all had the same legendary quality!

"This... Brother Feng!" Guan Wanshan turned around, looked at

Ye Xiao like a ravenous wolf, and eagerly said, "Brother Feng, these dan beads are so outstanding. Make a price! These dan beads, no matter what price you make, we will take them!"

"Master Guan..." The supervisor standing beside them was greatly startled as he thought, [WTF! He must have gone crazy...]

Normally, as the connoisseur of the salesroom, even if he had confirmed the facticity of the dan beads, at least he should have depreciated it, declined it a little, and then take it with feigned difficulty. This was his known tactic to greatly lower the price required to acquire new items for the auction.

However, now that he had said that... it was so far beyond outstanding that they would take it regardless of the astronomical costs...

If Ye Xiao gave a sky-high price... what was he supposed to do about it?!

"Heh heh, these dan beads, I'm not interested in selling them." Ye Xiao glanced at the supervisor with a mocking smile, "Master Guan, you really do have some exceptional capabilities. With such spirit, heh, heh, you must have achieved great heights."

Guan Wanshan understood the hint as he hurriedly turned around and shouted, "Get out! Not even a single word about today should leak out! If there is any information that leaks outside, you can forget about your puny life!"

The supervisor quickly gave Master Guan his word, before quickly making his way out as he wiped large beads of sweat off of his forehead.

He might not know anything about the grades of dan, but even he had realized the seriousness of this situation.

Guan Wanshan turned to Ye Xiao and said with an embarrassed smile, "Sorry. My underlings are underbred. They don't understand the rarity of these legendary dan beads... Please forgive them with your lenience."

Ye Xiao nodded lightly.

Guan Wanshan clearly knew the meaning behind Ye Xiao's words: If he tried to force down the price of such supreme dan beads like he dealt with some ordinary things... then, Ye Xiao might feel sullen and just leave, leaving him empty-handed and losing this three generations worth of good fortune.

An opportunity like this one... over ten generations of his family had been connoisseurs, yet it wasn't until now that such a valuable item had appeared in their auction house!

Besides, if he were to lie about his opinion, he would feel like he was desecrating the legendary dan beads that this man had brought; for such high-quality dan beads, even if he had intentionally tried to force down the price, he would have very likely offended all the dan-makers in the world at the same time!

Once it spread out that he had done such a vile thing, his reputation would be ruined - people might say, "You had actually dared to force down the price of the legendary dan beads that even produced an actual dan cloud?! Then what about those ordinary dan beads which were in your possession? Would you expect to be given money for taking those?!"

"Brother Feng, you just said that you don't want to sell... What do you mean? What plan do you have? Please, could you say it out, please!" Guan Wanshan asked humbly and then immediately called for tea, "The good one. The best tea..."

"My plan is simple. I just want some treasures in exchange for these dan beads." Ye Xiao said honestly, "And you must have realized that I haven't produced these dan beads myself. The production of these dan beads is far beyond my capabilities."

Guan Wanshan looked at him as thoughts quickly rushed through his head, "Hmm, he doesn't have any traces of flames on his hands, any traces of gentle and mass roasting on his face... or the unique smell of a dan-maker on his body..." He nodded and nearly said something offensive, "I dare you to... Eh-hem... Brother Feng you are being humble..."

Instantly, he felt that his face had started to burn as a dark red color quickly spread on his face. He had somehow managed to hold the second part of his sentence in his mouth, however, the half of what he had already spoken out had such a clear meaning that even a fool could guess where it was going.

Ye Xiao humphed, "It isn't me who produced these dan beads..."

but, the dan-maker who was able to create such dan beads is unwilling to show up, let alone be in contact with ordinary people in this mortal world..."

What he meant was that Master Guan could do whatever he wanted, but he was simply unworthy to meet this legendary dan-maker.

Guan Wanshan didn't doubt these words at all; instead, he tacitly comprehended and took it for granted, so he showed a humbler attitude, "Yes... Yes. Yes. Such an expert must absolutely be absorbed in his dan-making cultivation. He will never have some spare time on hand to get in touch with us mortal people. Brother Feng, what you say is very reasonable..."

"Whenever we could get the favor from an honorable dan-making master, we would accept any proposal from him or her, no matter what was proposed. However, to exchange dan beads for treasures... This salesroom truly has never had such a case in our long history..." Guan Wanshan said, "Brother Feng, I am sure that you're aware of the laws concerning trade in our Land of Han Yang. Everything has to be valuated with gold or silver, and in every trade, the salesroom must give the government a fixed... expense as tax. It is not that I don't want to make this deal, but..."

Ye Xiao nodded. He understood.

If they used treasures as payment, how could the government take a percentage of the deal? What would the tax be in a scenario like this? Would it be equal to the value of a golden leave perhaps?

Salesrooms were strictly overseen by the government, so they wouldn't dare to make such deals.

Once they did, they would lose their qualifications, and they would even get persecuted.

Even though Guan Wanshan knew he that he might end up offending this legendary dan-maker, and even though he truly wanted to do anything to make this deal work, under such circumstances, he had to think of those relying on him and turn this offer down!

Ye Xiao muttered, "I understand your concern and difficulty... but, the senior dan-maker is eccentric. Gold and silver, he turns his nose up at them. If I go and tell him about your difficulty, the deal will certainly be cancelled. I am afraid you will not be happy to see that happen!"

Keeping the casket and giving back the pearl: A Chinese idiom. It is an analogy meaning a lack of judgment and making the wrong decisions. It also refers to people who attach more importance to the appearance than the inner beauty or the quality.

A jewelry dealer put his pearls in small caskets so as to make them look precious. The caskets were made of precious wood and luxuriously decorated with perfume and gemstones. A person was very fond of these exquisite and beautiful caskets and bought one. After paying the money, he opened the casket, took the pearl out and gave it back to the dealer. He then left with just the casket.

Author's Note: The appearance of the dan cloud is, however, not a certainty! That is to say... even those legendary dan beads might only have a layer of 'dan mist', rather than a full dan cloud.

Chapter 12: Lifting a Stone and Dropping It on One's Own Foot

Guan Wanshan knowingly said, "You are right. Of course I know that it is a great honor to be given this opportunity by a master dan-maker... Hmm, look, can we figure out something... to do it diversified and indirectly. What do you think?"

Ye Xiao frowned, "How diversified? How indirectly?"

"The diversified and indirect way is actually not that complicated. We can pay you some money for the dan beads first, and then you use the money to attend to the auction or just purchase the treasures... Isn't this an easy way for both of us to achieve our goals?"

Ye Xiao squinted at him and seriously replied, "What if we fail to get the treasures in the auction?"

Guan Wanshan smiled bitterly, "Brother Feng, it seems you are well aware of the auctions... Alas, it is not all that easy these days. However, the treasures may be held on tightly by different groups, and the government has also announced that some of them should be handed in. However, since we can stand mighty in the capital, we surely have our own secretive means... Otherwise, how can such a great amount of treasures from all over the world be gathered together?"

Saying those words, Guan Wanshan gave an impression of being proud.

Ye Xiao was slightly shocked and answered, "Since you say so, I can only trust you. But you clearly know about the quality of these dan beads from the master dan-maker and their value. Are there really that many treasures present over here? Besides, even if you manage to take out enough treasures this time; what about next time; or even the third time? I don't think you want this deal to be one-off, right?!"

All the while, Ye Xiao was continuously racking his brains, "How many objects in total could there be regarded as treasures in this world? Could this salesroom actually possess such resources?"

"I think that perhaps your opinion is slightly inaccurate. Stalactite and Starlight are of course treasures. Well, then ginseng and [ganoderma](#)... are also treasures, aren't they?" Guan Wanshan said with confidence.

"Urh..." Ye Xiao couldn't help but stare blankly at this old man.

If some 10 years old ginseng could be considered a treasure... then the treasures in this world would really be uncountable...

However, Ye Xiao didn't expect getting a lot of top-level treasures all at once. It was just that the more the better, so he agreed with Guan Wanshan, "What you are saying is reasonable. As for these dan beads... What price can you offer for them?"

Guan Wanshan bitterly smiled and said after muttering for a while, "For some ordinary Pei-Yuan Dan beads, we usually spend

no more than 2500 taels of silver each... and then we sell them on the auctions. Anyway, although the dan beads you bring are also simple Pei-Yuan Dan, it has the sky-top quality! Of course they couldn't be mentioned in the same breath, so... look, what about 25,000 taels of silver for each, what do you think?"

[Are these dan beads really that valuable?!] Ye Xiao was shocked and shouted out in his mind.

But his face only showed a serious frown as he answered with an irrefutable tone, "100,000 taels of silver each!"

Difficulty was clearly shown on Guan Wanshan's face, "Brother Feng, for these Pei-Yuan Dan beads that were produced by your master dan-maker and has reached the legendary grade 10, it is indeed worthy of 100,000 taels of silver. As a matter of fact, it could very well be worth even more... But, because these dan beads are really so precious, we will not sell them at the auction; instead, we will keep them... Heh, heh, in our present financial situation, 100,000 taels of silver... is quite beyond our budget..."

Ye Xiao was unmoved, "Lack of money? Well then you could buy less. Just take five of them. As for the other ten, you can sell them at the auction for me. No matter how much they are sold for, it all belongs to me."

Guan Wanshan was stunned, [This guy really has a rigorous way of doing things.]

In customary cases of auctions, if one thing was not unique and

even had over ten identical pieces, the final bidding price would be reduced badly. After all, when there were many identical treasures, the relation between demand and supply would change. For instance, an upper-level dan bead may be sold for a sky-high price, but if there were ten identical upper-level dan bead at the same time, no matter how precious they were, the price would decrease badly for sure.

What Ye Xiao suggested - one for 100,000 taels of silver and fifteen for 1,500,000 taels of silver was totally inconsistent with the trade principle in auctions!

However, there were always exceptions; the supreme dan beads Ye Xiao had brought was actually such an exception. Pei-Yuan Dan with sky-high quality had reached the limit of dan-making in the world. Even if there were more than 15 pieces, the price would never decrease even a bit - it would even get higher instead!

If the dan beads were truly on sale at the auction, the price would definitely go higher than 100,000 taels of silver. If Guan Wanshan wanted to buy them after the auction, it would simply be impossible with a budget of a mere 100,000 taels of silver per dan bead. It was his good luck that he could get five in advance now!

"Fine, that's it then." Guan Wanshan gnashed and promised.

He clearly knew that whoever could take out these supreme dan beads was no ordinary person. He believed that as long as this guy was satisfied, there would be more opportunities like this in the future.

But if he wasn't satisfied, he wouldn't get another opportunity.

When Ye Xiao walked into the salesroom, he only had a taels of silver on him. Yet when he left the salesroom, he got a note for 500,000 taels of silver!

He had become a multimillionaire by simply walking in, dumping some 'low quality' dan beads, and leaving the building!

Guan Wanshan had amiably offered him a Skyline VIP Card, yet he had rejected it without any hesitation.

"I will come back here for more business, however, I do not wish to be tied down here by such a simple card. Do I require a card to prove my status around

here?"

Looking at Ye Xiao's back, Guan Wanshan looked grave.

[... 'don't want to be tied up'... He really doesn't want it?!] Guan Wanshan was shocked.

"He really is a smart guy." As a sharp-sighted man, how could he not realize the implication behind Ye Xiao's words?

He didn't want a VIP plate, because he was a freewheeling and

unfettered man.

A VIP card might be a symbol of one's status and showed his value, but it was also a binding - once Ye Xiao acquired a card like this, the next time he wished to attend a salesroom, he would be obligated to come back to this salesroom.

That was an invisible constraint.

Apparently, Ye Xiao didn't like that.

From within the shadows, a figure suddenly and quietly approached Master Guan, "Master, do we need to tail this guy?"

"No." Guan Wanshan showed a serious face, "This guy... he is absolutely someone we cannot mess around with. If we displease him, even if we kill him, we will lose the connection with the supreme dan-maker and face serious retributions... Inform the head office first and we'll deal with him later."

"Yes, master... Well, about the auction..."

"Delay it!" Guan Wanshan waved his hand and replied firmly, "There were a few herbs that were sufficient to become the main selling points, but as of this moment, compared to these supreme dan beads, they are far from enough. Make an announcement now. The auction will be delayed by ten days. Inform the head office about these supreme dan beads and ask them for a plan. We will follow their lead."

"Yes, master."

Ye Xiao had left the salesroom and made his way through a couple of back alleys, before he returned to one of the larger streets. He had regained the appearance of a young handsome lord. His appearance, demeanor, stature and temperament... were all changed.

The tall, strong and ugly Feng Zhiling was gone.

"The auction is tomorrow..." Ye Xiao was thinking, "With these 500,000 taels of silver, I can buy some treasures at least, right? Besides, I saw the jade ruyi... I need to make sure Zuo Wu-Ji gets it. Otherwise, if he retracts the deal..."

Ye Xiao was expecting the auction to proceed smoothly, but he was unaware of that fact that Master Guan had already delayed the auction.

And he, who wanted the auction to be smooth the most, was actually the main culprit for the delay...

Nothing happened on his way home. Ye Xiao practiced some martial arts after he got home, then he started reading. After all, he had only understood this mortal world through the memories of the departed Ye Xiao, but they were imperfect. It would be better for him to read more about this mortal world, so he would have an easier time settling in.

When the night was about to come, the guard appeared in front of Ye Xiao and informed him, "Lord Lan and Lord Zuo have come together. They are here to meet you, my lord."

"Why did they come together?" Ye Xiao was surprised.

"Fxxk! Fxxk, fxxk, fxxk..." Zuo Wu-Ji was yet to enter the room, but his shouts were already clearly resounding inside the mansion.

Lan Lang-Lang's voice also came with a depressed tone, "The Ling-Bao Hall Salesroom is apparently playing us..."

"What happened? Why are you both so angry?" Ye Xiao looked at both of them while frowning with confusion.

"I don't want to talk about it!" Zuo Wu-Ji sighed deeply, and then he sat on the chair, "The bloody auction is delayed! Fxxk..."

For Zuo Wu-Ji, who only wished for nothing but to restore his reputation in his family by regaining jade ruyi, every minute felt like a year!

He had finally gotten his hand on enough money to buy the jade ruyi, and all he had to do was bid on the jade ruyi at the auction... But the auction had actually been delayed!

When he heard about the delay, he had nearly spat out blood,

because the miserable life he was recently accustomed to had to continue for at least another ten days!

"I don't want to live anymore... I can't live with it anymore..." Zuo Wu-Ji was crying without shedding any tears.

"Delay? Why is it delayed?" Ye Xiao's pupils dilated.

It was not a good news for him either. The sooner the auction was held, the earlier he could get some treasures. At that time, he would be able to him learn more about the sphere in his mind and the space within it, and he could also cultivate to a higher stage much faster.

"There is a goddamn moron!" Lan Lang-Lang sighed, "At this important moment, he actually took out a few supreme dan beads... With such precious items, how could the salesroom not delay the auction to make advertisements for the beads? Several days are absolutely not enough to advertise it! If we think of the situation, ten days is actually rushing it... Gosh, what a shame. I have heard that a cool-steel sword is on sale at the auction. I was planning to get it as soon as possible. Now I need to wait for another ten days. Fxxk that bloody moron..."

"Urh... Just because of some supreme dan beads... It is delayed?" Ye Xiao was slack-jawed.

Isn't it like lifting a stone and dropping it on one's own foot?

Ganoderma: A genus of polypore mushrooms that grow on wood, and they include about 80 species, many from tropical regions.

Chapter 13: Bored? Let's Go Make Some Trouble!

The reason why Ye Xiao tried to earn some money quickly was so that he could buy some treasures at the auction to feed the spiritual space. He had successfully obtained the money, but now the auction was delayed...

Ten days was not a very long time, but the problem was that, Ye Xiao couldn't wait any longer. Not even one more day!

"By the way, how is the robbery case... you know, in your house?" Ye Xiao was feeling depressed, so he changed the topic to ask about what he was interested in most at the moment.

Zuo Wuji's grandfather Mr. Zuo, the father of the minister, had searched in every nook and cranny of the capital, Chen-Xing City, several times. The whole city had a dense mist of nervousness hanging over it, and now, even the most insignificant of sounds could instill the greatest of fears in the hearts of the residents. The public security had even become unprecedentedly tight - thanks to Zuo Wuji's grandfather.

"Skip it!" Zuo Wuji looked pale, "That night I was nearly killed. My grandfather came back home and found that most of his collections had been stolen which had made him furious! These days, there is no one in the house that dares to speak out loud..."

Ye Xiao said modestly, "It seems that your grandfather must have lost something extremely valuable in that robbery..."

"Apparently so..." Zuo Wuji sighed, "I haven't seen my grandpa this angry since I was a baby... Currently, the whole city has been thrown upside down because of my family, and yet my grandpa still isn't willing to let it go..."

Ye Xiao replied with an 'oh' before asking thoughtfully, "Well then, did your grandpa specify which was the most valuable piece amongst the stolen treasures?"

"Who would dare to ask him in his current condition?" Zuo Wuji shouted, feeling wronged, "During that time, I had only said one sentence, yet I got immediately beaten up several times..."

Lan Langlang showed deep interest, "What exactly did you say?"

"Nothing special... I just said 'be off with the old and move on with the new. Don't worry grandpa'..." Zuo Wuji felt like weeping but had no tears, "Then he had suddenly entered a frenzy and shouted, "'You damn black sheep! It is this damned attitude of yours with which you steal every valuable thing in this house and exchange them for prostitutes and alcohol' ... then he gave me a beating!"

Zuo Wuji spoke sadly, "Tell me, what have I done wrong? I said those words only to comfort him, and yet I got mercilessly beaten. Did I really doom myself to a thrashing?"

"Eh-hem, hemm..." Ye Xiao started to cough loudly in an attempt to conceal the laughter that was boiling up inside of him.

"Ahahahahah... whoohahahaahaha..." Lan Langlang didn't even try to cover up his laughter, and it even showed hints of gloating.

Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji had become extremely bored due to the auction being delayed, so they had come over to see Ye Xiao. Zuo Wuji had always been hostile towards Ye Xiao - they disliked each other. However, this had all changed after the 'great favor' from Ye Xiao. He had even started to consider Ye Xiao to be a true friend, and so, he had come over to Ye Xiao with Lan Langlang to complain about the auction and their boredom; they thought that perhaps they could score a free meal from Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao smiled and looked at the night sky through the window as he lightly said, "The robbery... maybe it wasn't such a bad thing for your clan... There is an old saying which says that luck and misfortune come in turns... Maybe, for the loss you have suffered today, it will be repaid a thousand times in the future..."

Ye Xiao spoke very slowly. It seemed like what he was saying had some obscure meanings.

Zuo Wuji sighed. He didn't know what Ye Xiao had really meant. He didn't understand that it was actually a precious promise. He could only feel bad about his own misery at the moment, "Alas, don't talk about making it up... Right now, I'm always scared shxtless every time I see my grandpa... I'd better fix my own issues first. That bloody auction, how could they fxxking delay it? The bloody moron with his supreme dan beads. If I get a chance to meet him... I promise, I will tear him into a million shreds..."

He let out another sigh which was filled with endless sadness.

"Oh, I see why you two have come here. The auction is delayed and you guys are slowly dying due to boredom, right? So you are here to seek some amusement from me, right?" Ye Xiao looked at them with amusement.

The delay of the auction had been troubling him as well, even more so after finding out that he was actually the reason for this delay.

Besides... Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji could complain about it out loud while he couldn't say a word about it!

And they were even calling him a moron right to his face. He really felt like giving these two in front of him an ass-whooping. Though he found it extremely painful to tolerate their trash talking, he still had to!

"Heh, heh, heh... Oh right, I know of a freakish occurrence which might interest you, brother Ye. Do you remember the Shan-Hua House?" Zuo Wuji asked.

"Hmm?" Ye Xiao's eyes turned cold as it seemed to exude a chilly sensation.

How could he forget the place where he - or should we say the departed Ye Xiao - got poisoned: the brothel Shan-Hua House.

"Ninety-eight people in Shan-Hua House were all killed. Everyone in that house is dead, no survivors." Zuo Wuji sighed regretfully, "I was going to have some fun there during this rough time, you know, with those pretty chicks. When I got there, all I saw were rotting corpses. That was really disappointing... It is a pity about those pretty gals..."

"What? All dead?" Ye Xiao frowned tightly.

"All dead." Zuo Wuji nodded, "And... according to the signs on their bodies, they must have died several days ago. But because the government are terribly distracted about the robbery, they have even missed so many dead bodies."

"Oh." Ye Xiao felt relieved and thought, [They've been dead for several days, so the murder has nothing to do with the robbery. It seems that... right after I was poisoned when I was struggling to survive, these people in Shan-Hua House had already been killed. Everyone in that brothel had been taken care of, eliminating any possible clue!]

The man who planned this murder was truly wicked and merciless!

"Zuo Wuji, do you know the identity of Shan-Hua House's owner?" Ye Xiao probed, "The whole house was wiped out and the owner hadn't appeared yet?"

Zuo Wuji scratched his head and said, "Well, that is a tough question for me. I am not so sure to be honest... However, it is said

that the house is related to Wan Xiao-Nian, but... there is no basis for these claims."

"Wang Xiaonian?" Ye Xiao said with half-closed eyes, "That's... The son of Wang Danian, the personal guard of the crown prince, the leader of the guards in the Crown Prince's Palace, right?"

"Yes, that's him." Zuo Wuji smiled, "This bastard Wang Xiaonian was boasting a few days ago that his father had received a hundred years old top-quality blood ginseng, which was to be used to improve his strength. It is said that that ginseng can make a man reach the upper-level cultivation and become an expert cultivator in just one night... Fxxk that! The bastard is really boasting. I hate every bit of him! Well, at the end of the day, the murders at the brothel have nothing to do with us. We just lost a nice place to enjoy ourselves..."

"Enjoy? Is your disease cured?" He looked at Zuo Wuji sportively. The 'hundreds-years old top-quality blood ginseng' had lit up Ye Xiao's eyes.

Zuo Wuji became flustered and shouted, "Ye Xiao! Don't force me to fight against you!" He had forgotten what he had said about the blood ginseng in an instant.

Lan Langlang almost split his sides due to laughing vigorously, almost causing his hat fall off of his favus infested head. He grinned, "Oh can't we say the truth about you anymore? You went to the brothel from time to time and how many times have you fxxked a girl? Is there any time you are not the one being fxxked? Hahahaha.... There are six prostitutes who have treated you as

their sworn brother, and I heard that you are the youngest? Lord Zuo, you are actually very well-known as the famous Gal No.7..."

"Fxxking bastard!" Hearing the word 'Gal No.7', Zuo Wuji was totally infuriated. While Lan Langlang was still in the middle of his laughter, Zuo Wuji charged at him and gave him punches and kicks, and soon they were entangled on top of each other.

As a matter of fact, though Zuo Wuji had a foppish personality, he had an inborn disease which was unspeakable. Eh-hem. Well... he couldn't do that thing - you know. Normally, it was something a man would never tell, but the foppish and prodigal lord Zuo was liberal to face such defect. It was really something strange...

After the horseplay, Zuo Wuji felt sad and sighed, "The auction is delayed, but I heard that these supreme dan beads are something better than the best, with quality higher than the highest... If only I could get my hand on one of them during the auction..."

Lan Langlang showed disdain, "Come on, dear Lord Zuo. Forget about that, will you? With our wealth, we can just afford one for sure, but... the question is if there's a possibility for us to win the bid. Those noble-blooded guys will fight until their fists are bleeding."

Zuo Wuji nodded and sighed.

The three of them were called 'the three lords in town' like they had a splendid title, however, compared with those lads truly born with noble blood, they couldn't even be mentioned in the same

breath.

The noble clans were able to function alongside each other peacefully, because they made sure not to touch each other's businesses.

But they disliked each other for sure.

Among the three clans, the clan of Zuo was somehow stronger than the other two - the clan of Lan and the clan of Ye. Zuo Wuji had elder brothers, and he was substantially given up by the clan because of his disease. Ye Xiao was the only son of the Ye clan, while Lan Langlang was also the only son of the Lan clan...

"The real noble clans..." Lan Langlang sighed.

"While the royal court has existed for a hundred years, the clans have existed for thousands upon thousands of years..." Zuo Wuji smiled, "Our clans are far from those noble clans. To be able to compare ourselves with the true noble clans, we will need to prosper for at least another century..." He shook his head helplessly.

"What noble clan has a foppish black sheep like you?" Lan Langlang disdainfully said.

"Oh, so you think you are better than me?" Zuo Wuji glared at him.

It looked like the very next moment would be the start of another fight.

Ye Xiao felt a certain irritation he had never felt before deep down within his bones.

"Stop! Shut up both of you. This is my house, okay? Go somewhere else to fight... Hmm, well, if you are really that bored, why don't we go make some trouble for Wang Xiaonian?" Ye Xiao smiled and thought, [The blood ginseng shouldn't be wasted in some mortal's hand, right? I wouldn't think of it if I don't know about it, but now I do. As such, I shall not let such a thing escape my hands...]

Wang Xiaonian was somehow related to the poison after all...

"Sure!" Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang were both meddlers. They both raised their hands and got excited when hearing Ye Xiao's suggestion.

Chapter 14: I Was Surely Poisoned. So What?

As of this moment, the disturbance in the capital showed no signs of settling. The city contained more than a thousand gangs of various sizes, big and small, but none of them were brave enough to make careless moves; all of them were truly scared of being exterminated.

The forces of Zuo Xiang Fu had blocked the four gates of the city and had searched the most crime-infested areas within the city. They began to act out against the gangs while shouting out a phony slogan: Fight against the criminals; bring back the peace!

They made detailed investigations against each and every gang.

Those who used to play the bullies on the street were now forced to face the music.

A big suspicion crept into every resident's mind: Just what on earth was stolen from the house of the Minister Zuo? Several days have passed, and yet the investigation was still ongoing!

At the same time, news of two other great events was quickly spreading throughout the kingdom of Chen!

The first was about the killer group, Tu-Tian Group, which was feared as the most mysterious and deadliest group. They suddenly suffered a surprise raid, causing the deaths of many of their top

killers.

Their secret hideout, on which their existence depended on, was no longer a mystery. Once a killer exposed both his name and face to the public, he would become the public enemy number one. Nobody knew the identity of the person who spilled the secrets of the Tu Tian Group to the world.

Now that it was known where the Tu Tian Group could be found, all people with prior grudges set out to take this group out.

They were like rats crossing the street!

The head of Tu-Tian Group - the No. 1 mysterious killer in the world, Ning Bi-Luo, had luckily fought his way out of the siege and left his stronghold. He had completely vanished from the face of the earth.

The second was... of course, about the emergence of the supreme dan beads!

The Ling-Bao Hall Salesroom was going to sell the supreme dan at the next auction which was about to take place!

Pei-Yuan Dan was absolutely nothing of high value for the martial sects in this world. It was useful to a certain degree, but only at the starting stages of cultivation. Once a person had become an expert cultivator, Pei-Yuan Dan beads would become practically useless to him!

However, conventional logic could not be applied in the case of these Pei-Yuan Dan beads! Although it was the lowest-grade dan, once it produced the dan cloud, it was definitely something from the legends!

These legendary dan beads were something that all dan-makers in the world would covet!

If a dan-maker could study it, it could at least boost his dan-making skills into a higher grade!

And dan-making was actually the basic foundation of every martial sect! Every sect wanted to strengthen their foundations.

Therefore, all the martial sects made their decisions at once: send their finest men to the capital! They gave such orders without any hesitation in order to try their best to acquire the supreme dan beads no matter what cost!

To ensure that they were not duped, every martial sect had sent an experienced dan-maker!

They didn't know how many of these legendary dan beads were going to be auctioned. What if there was just one?

Supreme dan with a dan cloud was always something from the legends. How would these martial sects dare to expect that there could be more than one? So when they heard about the good news,

all of them were thrilled, but at the same time, they were also filled with caution. Every martial sect spared no effort to fight for it!

While Zuo Xiang Fu was still 'hunting for the criminals' all over the capital, all the mysterious martial sects and noble clans started showing up. The whole capital was quickly becoming extremely chaotic!

Every force in the world had the same target: Chen-Xing City, the capital of the Chen Kingdom!

Cyan Cloud Sect, Green Mountain Sect, Reaching Cloud Hall, Purple Jade Sect, Peace Mountain Sect, Infinitude Sect... One could go on for hours!

All these superior martial sects started making preparations in advance for this once in a lifetime auction. Even those long-white-bearded old elders who hadn't shown their faces for many years were slowly reappearing.

Ye Xiao could have never imagined that on the day when he casually used some movements and was mistaken for Ning Bi-Luo, he had actually caused the destruction to a top assassins' guild in the Kingdom of Chen.

And he could never have imagined that just by revealing some dan beads, he had caused a massive sensation in the mortal world. He was simply trying to earn some money and get some high quality treasures so that he could go faster in his road of cultivation. If he had known that the beads would receive such

worldwide attention, he would have done something low-pitched instead...

In his previous life, he had grown up in the higher-level world of Qing-Yun Realm and had never visited the mortal world, because of that, he wouldn't have guessed that even the cheapest dan could actually cause such a large scale disturbance!

He had been lacking the funds to achieve his goals, so he had casually taken out the supreme dan beads to deal with this issue.

He had accidentally caused tidal waves of trouble to wash over these lands. He had, however, no clue about all these events currently taking place all around the Kingdom of Chen, because at this moment, he was leisurely enjoying himself in the capital...

...

Currently, Ye Xiao was in Wang Xiaonian's house looking to create some trouble.

Wang Xiaonian felt the pressure emitted by these three foppish lords pressing him down, making it hard for him to breath or even to stand up straight. They were creating trouble for him, and the young lord Wang couldn't handle it, so he had secretly sent for his father.

"Wang Xiaonian, be honest! That night in Shan-Hua House, was it you who poisoned me?" Ye Xiao stared at Wang Xiaonian

fiercely.

“Yes! It was you who poisoned Ye Xiao! I am the witness!” Lan Langlang always desired to stir up trouble, so when he heard Ye Xiao’s ‘powerful’ pretext, he jumped right in. He didn’t care if it was true or not, he just wanted to make some trouble here...

“You bastard actually dared to poison my brother. How dare you!” Zuo Wuji shouted cheerfully.

In the two foppish lads’ minds, getting poisoned was absolutely something made up by Ye Xiao. They wouldn’t have known that it was the truth. Anyway, they just wanted to add fuel to the fire and at least make Wang Xiaonian sweat.

Ye Xiao was also showing a face like he was just setting him up with some fake excuses. It became harder for Wang Xiaonian to tell right from left as what was true started to seem false, and what was false started to seem like the truth.

Wang Xiaonian’s face turned pale, “Ye Xiao... you...you... Don’t speak nonsense! When did I poison you? You... You can’t just set me up like this!”

“I was there and it was obviously you who poisoned Ye Xiao! Your dirty tricks can never escape my eyes!” Lan Langlang had his eyes wide open, “Otherwise, how could Ye Xiao actually have gotten drunk after only a few glasses...”

Wang Xiaonian's face turned ashen, and it even looked like he would be spitting out blood any second now, "WHAT?! Getting drunk too quickly equals... being poisoned?!"

"Yes! Yes it is! So what?"

"Wang Xiaonian, you work this thing out today!"

"Otherwise, we will tear your house apart today..."

The three lads were like monsters. They were importunately talking nonsense and running off their mouths. Apparently, they were just [looking for a bone in an egg](#). Wang Xiaonian felt anxious, angry, and wronged; this time, he very much wanted to cry but had no tears!

Anyway, what could he do facing the three most unreasonable men in the capital?

Ye Xiao had actually been poisoned in the Shan-Hua House. That night, Wang Xiaonian had actually been hanging around with these three foppish lords. Besides, his father, Wang Danian, actually had close connections with the Shan-Hua House...

Due to these reasons, Ye Xiao suspected the Wang clan...

The question was... although Wang Xiaonian had never been a good person, would he really stoop to such a low level as to poison someone who attended the Shan-Hua House?

Ye Xiao and the other two foppish lords were throwing random words out, pretending the truth to be a mere lie. Their actions left Wang Xiaonian to desperately search for a way out as large beads of sweat were dripping down his face. They were showing the attitude which said: “Apparently, we are pinching you, so what? Bite me!”

Zuo Wuji had the Minister Zuo in his family; Ye Xiao had the Northern General; Lan Langlang had the Southern General. These three officers were truly someone Wang Xiaonian’s father could not afford to displease.

In other words, if the three officers took a little action against him, he wouldn’t have a chance to get away even though he had a crown prince behind him... If the three clans fought together against the Wang clan, how could the crown prince offend three of the most influential figures in the government at the same time for a mere leader of the guards?

“You are unscrupulous! How dare you poison me!” Ye Xiao looked fierce.

“You are heartless! How dare you poison Ye Xiao! I am the witness! I saw it with my own eyes!” Lan Langlang was thrilled and shouted.

“You are perverse! You actually poisoned Ye Xiao!” Zuo Wuji went along cheerfully.

“You betrayed your family! You are worse than a beast! You are against the gods! You are horrific! You actually poisoned Ye Xiao!” Lan Langlang spoke smoothly and actually came out with such sophisticated words. Words like these were something he wouldn’t be able to think of in normal circumstances... However, there was even a ‘you betrayed your family’ in it. It seemed like he had gone a little bit over the top...

“I... I... I didn’t poison you... I did not... I don’t even know what poison it was...” By the time when Wang Xiaonian was on the verge of crying, his father, Wang Danian, suddenly barged in.

When he saw Ye Xiao standing right inside his house, his facial expression changed at once.

The next moment when he heard the words ‘actually poisoned Ye Xiao’, he felt faint and nearly fell down the stairs. His face had turned extremely pale.

These moves, which were obvious mistakes from a panicking person, were absolutely something that he, as the leader of the guards in the Crown Prince Palace, wasn’t supposed to make!

Wang Danian composed himself quickly and walked forward. Fawningly, he said, “Oh, what an honor for me to have you three lords here. Honored guests! You lit up my humble house, really!” Then he turned to his son, “You rascal! We have the three lords here and you haven’t even prepared tea for them yet! Is this how I raised you? You’re actually ignoring your guests like this?”

In fact, Ye Xiao had noticed Wang Danian's strange reaction earlier. The changes in his face and stumbling moves, Ye Xiao had seen them clearly. He quickly deduced the truth of this matter and sneered.

"Dad..." Wang Xiaonian had been feeling depressed, but luckily, his father had shown up now as his savior, "About that night, it was obvious that Ye Xiao was poor at alcohol, so it was easy for him to get drunk. Now he intentionally insists that I have poisoned him. He would have died long ago if he was truly poisoned. How could he be swaggering around here... He... He is obviously bullying me, isn't he?"

"Poor at alcohol and got drunk?" Wang Danian was confused.

At this moment, a complicated expression emerged on his face - an expression which could only be described as weird.

Ye Xiao stepped forward with his body slightly shaking. He stared at Wang Danian and said loudly, "That night, it was your son's treat. He poisoned me! I need an explanation for that right away!"

Lan Langlang felt interested and stepped forward too, "That's right! I saw it with my own eyes. I am the witness. Your son poisoned Ye Xiao! The evidence is conclusive! Do you still want to deny it?!"

Wang Danian spoke carefully, "Poison? If you don't mind, Lord Ye, would you care to tell me how my son poisoned you and what

poison it was?”

...

A Chinese idiom. The phrase means trying deliberately to find a fault with someone or something faultless. The idiom is often used to describe someone who is very picky, who finds faults with others on purpose.

Chapter 15: Extortion

"Are you questioning me? How the hell would I know how he poisoned me? As for what poison it was, honestly, you should ask your baby boy. What the hell do I know about it? The only thing I know is that I am a heavy drinker with a hollow leg, and on that night, I got fxxking drunk after just three shots." Ye Xiao said viciously, "I spent the whole night sleeping. What could I be if I wasn't poisoned?!"

"Urh..." Wang Danian couldn't believe him and said, "If you had been poisoned like you said, it shouldn't have been this easy for you to recover, right? And now you are here, all fine and healthy. It means you were not poisoned. Right?"

When Wang Xiaonian saw his father, he thought his savior had come. When he saw that his father had totally lost his usual vigor, acting weird and arguing powerlessly, he seriously felt disappointed.

How could he realize that Wang Danian was seriously shocked?

Wang Da-Nain was arguing with his mouth, but thinking differently in his mind, [Who on earth cured him? Who was it? That should be incurable. How could it be cured? Who on earth knows how to deal with such powerful poison? This is so bloody weird...]

"I did get poisoned anyway! I got drunk with only three shots. That's the evidence. Lan Langlang was there. He is the witness.

There are both an evidence and a witness. How dare you disavow it?" Ye Xiao didn't want to be reasonable at all, "I was poisoned and I want your explanation! Otherwise, let's find someone to check my body. Okay, I will send for a royal doctor to check my body carefully. Let's see how you continue feigning. Humph..."

"That is surely unnecessary." Wang Danian was scared. He thought, [Although I don't know who cured this bastard's poison which was supposed to be fxxking incurable, it may still remain inside his body. If it is found out, I will surely go to hell... Ye Nan-Tian will definitely come and wipe my family out. This foppish bastard came here only to get some advantages. I think it will be fine if I give him some money and send him away.]

"Hahahahaha..." Wang Danian made the decision and laughed, "I see. Lord Ye drank too much that night..."

"Who says I drank too much?" Ye Xiao was angry, "I was obviously poisoned!"

"Fine... Fine... Let's say you were poisoned." Wang Danian simpered, "Okay then, what 'explanation' would you like, lord Ye?"

Ye Xiao was surprised and turned to Lan Langlang, "What do we want?"

Lan Langlang was surprised too and couldn't find anything to say. He rolled his eyes and swallowed, before sneakily kicking Zuo Wuji's foot.

Zuo Wuji was rolling his eyes, trying to think of something he wanted, but failed. Ye Xiao suddenly frowned and murmured like he realized something, "Oh right... wasn't there this six-hundred years old... hmm... what was it... hmm..."

"Blood ginseng!" Zuo Wuji suddenly remembered what they had been discussing before coming here. He shouted in excitement, "Give the blood ginseng to Ye Xiao as compensation, otherwise, we won't let you get away from this!"

"Exactly! You will not get away this time! Lord Ye was badly weakened because of your poison. He won't recover unless he gets something nutritional!" Lan Langlang was delighted and shouted spiritedly.

"This is totally unfair!" Wang Xiaonian got really angry as his face turned red. He yelled, "You bastards! You actually want to extort our ginseng! You must be crazy! You are making a huge mistake bastards! I am going to..."

His mouth was covered by his father before he could even finish speaking.

"You are gonna do what?" Ye Xiao sneered, "You tried to kill me but failed and got caught. Now you want to deny your guilt. What? Do you even want to kill us all to cover your sin?! Wang Xiaonian, how dare you? You actually want to murder us! Are you trying to be a rebel?"

Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji went along with him, "Wang

Xiaonian, are you trying to be a rebel? We are witnesses!"

Wang Xiaonian breathed heavily, "You... You bastards..." He could hardly utter a word.

"Blood ginseng it is then!" Wang Danian agreed immediately, "Since you, the three lords, want it, I can only submit and agree with your terms, but you must promise me one thing..."

He was sad and angry, and he quavered, "I am only a low-position guard. I wouldn't dare to argue with you three lords... But from this point onwards, please forget about this issue with the poison... I can bear it this time. It is nothing but spending some money to avert trouble. However... you should know that everyone has a temper and even a rabbit will bite if it is pissed..."

"Dad!!!" Wang Xiaonian had shock all over his face as he stared at his father with wide opened eyes.

He could have never imagined that his valiant father had actually submitted to the three foppish lords.

"Shut up!" Wang Danian shouted angrily.

"A rabbit will bite... A rabbit... Hahahaha...." Lan Langlang laughed and rubbed his favus-infested head. On the opposite side, Wang Danian and his son turned red in their faces. They looked so angry, as if they almost wanted to swallow somebody.

"Of course." Ye Xiao pushed Lan Langlang aside and said, "A wise man should not tease the weak. He who leaves some leeway will always make new friends. We are not unprincipled..."

Everyone felt sick about what Ye Xiao had said, including Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji. Their faces distorted and it looked like they were about to puke a mouthful of blood.

Ye Xiao had extorted a six hundred years old ginseng by making trouble out of nothing and arguing irrationally... if that wasn't the pinnacle of being unprincipled, then who in this world could possibly be considered unprincipled?.

"... Don't worry about it. If your baby boy didn't flaunt that he had a six hundred years old ginseng and that he would use it to boost his cultivation and beat us up... and most importantly, if he hadn't poisoned me... as a noble-minded, knightly, gentle, and brave gentleman, why would I make trouble for him? I will usually not even look at small fries like your son. And none of us three are interested in rabbits..." Ye Xiao talked like he was a sage with a lofty attitude...

"I see." Wang Danian heard what Ye Xiao said and felt a slight sensation of relief forming in his stomach. He turned to his son and shouted, "Rascal! You were going about flaunting my riches! You are truly a black sheep! When will you finally let me be free of worries..."

"..." Wang Xiaonian opened his mouth but couldn't say a word. He felt that his blood had accumulated at his throat, and he had great difficulty to keep it in his mouth and not spray it around the

room.

"Go get the ginseng and give it to Lord Ye." Wang Danian sighed. He felt unwilling to give this rascal the ginseng. But he felt like he had no other choice, so he told his son to go and fetch it.

"Dad!!!" Wang Xiaonian shouted bitterly. But, when he saw Wang Danian's face turning green, he didn't dare to disobey anymore; he walked to his room completely depressed. It looked like his soul had departed early from his body, leaving it to walk this earth all soulless.

"Lord Ye!" Wang Danian took a deep breath, "Shall we get this over with already?"

Ye Xiao smiled, "Sure. Absolutely. I am a tolerant man after all. I won't bother with your stupid son anymore!"

Wang Danian felt relieved, "Lord Ye, a man who cannot be trusted is an unwelcome guest to any party. I hope you will keep your promise... But if you don't... I might not be able to stand your behavior anymore."

"Haha, of course I will keep my promise. What am I? An honest man." Ye Xiao said disdainfully and thought, "Keep my promise to you? In your dreams! Pooh..."

Wang Xiaonian came back from his room, moving extremely slowly, hoping a miracle would fall down from the heavens and

save his precious ginseng. He was holding a small box as he walked through the door. Ye Xiao shouted, "Quick! Bring me my ginseng! Don't dawdle! It is mine no matter how much you dally!"

"Dad... I really didn't poison him..." Wang Xiaonian looked at his father sincerely. He was trying to make his last effort to keep the ginseng. The blood ginseng was a crucial stepping stone on his long path of cultivation.

Wang Xiaonian still didn't understand why his father would give up such a valuable treasure and hand it over to the good-for-nothing foppish Lord Ye. He, of course, couldn't know what his father was thinking. As such, he had no clue that there was nothing he could do to change the current chain of events.

Wang Danian sighed and thought, [You silly boy. If it wasn't for what I've done and the fact that Lord Ye is standing right here in front of me, how would I ever let them take our blood ginseng with such ease? They were only standing here making trouble out of nothing...]

"Give it to Lord Ye, son. Let's admit our misfortune." Wang Danian waved his hand and said hopelessly. He was thinking, [I can't afford to be stubborn right now anyway. The poison... even it has really been cured... I know it will still need at least an entire year for it to completely leave his system. Ye Xiao is acting especially lively. It is very likely that he has a detoxifying expert helping him. Maybe Ye Xiao is a little bit muddleheaded, but that detoxifying expert behind him must have known what has happened. If I don't give up now, I will only be putting a curse onto myself. I might even put the curse on my family or even on my

entire bloodline. I will just let this bastard have this little advantage... I may have lost a simple blood ginseng, but now I've learned that Ye Xiao has actually survived the poison. It is not all that bad!]

Ye Xiao rushed forward and quickly grabbed the blood ginseng. He laughed and turned around to face Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji, "Let's go!"

The three foppish lords left full of vigor and feeling completely refreshed.

"Ye Xiao, I will never leave your side!" Wang Xiaonian shouted while trying to catch up.

"Hahahaha... We will have a lot of time ahead of us to play these games! I am not afraid of rabbits, let alone biting rabbits!" Ye Xiao's voice was coming from far down the street. They had already made quite a distance from the Wang Family House.

"Dad, Ye Xiao was obviously not poisoned! They were obviously here to extort us! They were only here to take the blood ginseng!" Wang Xiaonian felt like heaven was playing a trick on him and asked his father sadly, "Why did you..."

"Shut up!" Wang Danian's face twitched as his eyes turned vicious. He breathed heavily and was about to say something but stopped. Then he just said, "Stay at home. Don't leave the house. I need to go somewhere."

Then he turned around and hurriedly left.

At the same time, Ye Xiao was holding the blood ginseng with one hand and waving with the other, "Let's go back to my place, let's celebrate this victory with some drinks! My treat!!"

Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang were totally impressed, "Lord Ye, you have really extorted the ginseng! We could have never expected Wang Danian to be such a pxssy..."

Ye Xiao's mouth twitched upon hearing those words. He was thinking, [It is not because Wang Danian is a pxssy... Instead... it is because the departed Lord Ye has sacrificed his life for this blood ginseng... I was just the lucky one to take it in his name...]

Chapter 16: The Dreams of a Foppish Young Lord

Currently, the three lords were at Ye Xiao's house, partaking in a grand three person feast.

On the table were delicacies of every kind accompanied with fine liquor. It was surely a regular affair for the General Ye's residence to hold a small feast like this. Ye Xiao was in high spirits and he spoke a lot. The blood ginseng had already shriveled up even if it remained locked within the box. Its essence had already been absorbed into the space of the sphere, and it was quietly being digested over there.

The steward had silently entered the room and stopped right beside Ye Xiao.

"What is it?" Ye Xiao asked kindly.

"Here's the thing, my lord... After you left the Wang's residence, Wang Danian left at once," the steward spoke carefully, "And headed for the Crown Prince's Palace."

"Hmm?" Ye Xiao frowned and looked up at the steward.

He wasn't surprised that Wang Danian would leave for the Crown Prince's Palace, after all, that was what he had tried to lead him into doing. What actually surprised him was how the steward had followed it up.

The steward had actually thought of following the tracks and had apparently made preparations for it beforehand...

That wasn't something an ordinary person could or would do.

[This steward... is actually not an ordinary person!] Ye Xiao thought as he stared at the man in front of him.

The steward showed calmness under Ye Xiao's gaze. He then spoke gently, "Excuse me." He turned to the door and walked humbly and honestly like always.

But Ye Xiao had changed his evaluation of the steward.

General Ye Nantian was always out at war. The man he trusted to look after the house and be in charge in his absence couldn't be just some ordinary person.

After finishing the food along with several drinks, Ye Xiao asked, "By the way, you know, the three of us are currently just fooling around everyday... May I ask the two of you about your plans for the future?"

"Future? Plans?" Zuo Wuji smiled and said, "What future can I have in my life? What plan can I have? I was fxxking gifted with infertility by the heavens. Having such a sickness is something a man will never disclose, because it will only arouse mocking laughter from everyone around him. Somebody has already told

the world about mine. The whole capital knows that the second son of the Minister Zuo has a disabled shaft! How can I hold my head up when I go outside? What is there for me to plan for? How can a loser like me expect to have any kind of future? I will just waste away!”

He had guzzled up three glasses of wine during the short time he had been speaking.

Zuo Wuji drank quickly. Heartrending sadness was expressed on his pretty face, “You know wha, now in those brothels, those girls who are not willing to go past simple performances like customers like me the most, because they know that even if they are naked in front of me, there is nothing I can do... Ye Xiao, do you think there could be any kind of plan for people like me?”

Ye Xiao sighed lightly. In fact, he really felt sorry for Zuo Wuji; any man could understand the suffering arising from lacking the functions of their lower regions.

As he was collecting his thoughts, he suddenly remembered the existence of a dan in the Qing-Yun Realm called the Male Recovery Dan. This dan was definitely not a high grade treasure – it barely qualified as a 5th grade dan. This 5th grade dan only had a single function though. Neither was it useful for cultivation nor could it save one's life, but when it came to revitalizing one's infertility, this dan was the answer. In other words, it was a superior invigorant.

The Xiao Monarch, of course, wouldn't care about this kind of dan. However, for some average cultivators, especially for those

lewd ones, this dan was absolutely worth every single penny.

For people like Zuo Wuji who were born with a slight defect between their legs, only a single dan bead would be required to accomplish a complete recovery.

Moreover, since Zuo Wuji's physical condition was poor, if he ate one piece of the Male Recovery Dan, he would not only get rid of his infertility, but he would even improve the strength of his body!

After all, a grade 5 dan in the Qing-Yun Realm would definitely be considered to be a legendary dan in the mortal world!

After he thought for a while, Ye Xiao's eyes lit up, "Don't be so full of despair. Your sickness is not something which is incurable... Let's assume you can get rid of your infertility problem. In such a scenario, what would you do?"

Zuo Wuji took a deep breath and said sadly, "I know that you are just comforting me, but this natural-born disease is absolutely incurable. I know it is an absurd hope but... if it can be cured, I hope..." His eyes suddenly lit up, "That I can become a well-known officer. I will stand beside the king and subjugate the whole world. I will be the one who stands only below the king but above all the others. I will leave my honor in history and be praised by every generation in the future! I will innovate the government and fight against the corruption within."

"I learn about politics day and night, and I learn from everything I see. Any chance that I can find to learn or get experience in

governing, I grab it with both of my hands. And then I will think about how to improve it, how to unite everyone, how to guide the country and how to be the best politician...”

He smiled sadly, “It may sound ironic, but... everyday when I fool around with the two of you, I might look unambitious... But when you two are sleeping with some girls at night, I will sneak off and go home... I will read my books and collect my mind to calm myself down... Because when there is nothing to keep myself busy with... all that I can think of at that time is to commit suicide so that my mind can finally be set free...”

Ye Xiao and Lan Langlang were completely speechless.

They had never thought that the number one black sheep of the capital, Zuo Wuji, would actually possess such ambition and such dedication!

“I know. No matter how hard I struggle, nothing will change... Stories of my natural born infertility have been spreading in the air for far too long... No matter what talent I possess, and no matter how smart I might be, in the eyes of the king, I can only be considered as a eunuch. I can only be disgraced by the world and be made into a laughingstock.”

By now, Zuo Wuji had already guzzled up another three glasses. He smiled with self-mockery, “You know what. Except to pee, the thing between my legs is completely useless...”

Hearing his self-mockery, Ye Xiao and Lan Langlang couldn't

help but feel that depression took over the mood of the room.

“Gal No.7, I was wrong.” Lan Langlang said guiltily, “I won’t call you Gal No.7 anymore...”

“You!” Zuo Wuji stared at him while rage seemed to be boiling up inside of him, but he quickly stopped and said with a voice full of sorrow, “I always imagine that if I am cured someday, I will have four wives and be chased after by lots of pretty girls. Moreover, I will be the most romantic officer and a decorated loyalist! Haha, how is it? Isn’t my dream hilarious? Maybe my dream is too unrealistic. What a ridiculous wish!”

Ye Xiao sighed and held Zuo Wuji’s shoulder, “Have you never considered cultivating so you can become an immortal? Travel around the world and rule over all your enemies with an iron fist?”

Zuo Wuji shook his head and said, “I am really not all that interested in those cultivators! No matter how powerful a cultivator becomes, all he does is fight and slaughter to obtain a few profits. An intellectual can devise strategies and preside the battle from thousands of miles away. One word, one decision, each of them can change the lives of every resident in the world for the better!”

“That will be enough for me in my short life.” Zuo Wuji said.

Ye Xiao was shocked. During the conversation, he had found out that Zuo Wuji had possessed a virtue – fortitude. In fact, Zuo Wuji had always shown this virtue, but no one had ever cared enough to

notice.

A man born with a pair of disabled balls, was able to look straight at his own defects and bear the endless mocking words and gazes. He could even overcome such challenges with an unabated dream! Ye Xiao didn't think that he could do any better than Zuo Wuji if he were to stand in his shoes - he might even opt to suicide to obtain total freedom, like Zuo Wuji had said!

“There are only things we can't think of, but absolutely nothing we can't deal with. As long as you imagine bravely, there is always a chance to realize it.” Ye Xiao nodded and said gravely, “The pioneer and the unique, the most romantic politician who stands only below the king and upon the others in the history – handsome, strong, incorruptible, and honorable Lord Zuo!”

Zuo Wuji was about to get angry but stopped when he saw Ye Xiao's serious face, then he asked doubtfully, “Are you actually serious right now?”

“I do have an idea to cure your disease.” Ye Xiao spoke slowly.

Even a man with fortitude would freak out. He had to comfort Zuo Wuji first, because due to Zuo Wuji's present mental condition, he might lose his mind before he could eat a Male Recovery Dan.

“What?! You?” Zuo Wuji's eyes lit up and his breath became heavy; it was as though the sound of bellows were being played.

“I can cure you, really.” Ye Xiao said seriously, “Well... I am sadly not able to do so right at this moment. Your disease is beyond ordinary treatments. The special treatment that is required to restore your manhood takes time to prepare. Zuo Wuji, if you trust me, wait for one year! In no more than one year, I promise you, I can man you up!”

Zuo Wuji looked at him with a serious expression plastered on his face until he eventually smiled, “Absolutely! Deal! I will wait. I have been waiting for eighteen years. Why don’t I wait for another year?”

Lan Langlang giggled, “Eighteen years... Good for you. So you have been thinking about girls since you were born? Admirable!”

The three of them started laughing.

“[Er Lang](#), how about you?” Zuo Wuji felt relieved, because he had finally been able to talk about the sorrow that had been hidden deep within his heart for many years. He had even made fun of Lan Langlang - calling Lan Langlang by his nickname, which he hated more than anything in this world.

“Zuo Wuji!” Lan Langlang nearly exploded, “I am warning you one last time! Don’t call me Er Lang! You can call me brother Lan or call me Lang! My life may be full of Lang, but there is absolutely no ‘Er’! I hate ‘Er’!”

“Lang~~~” Ye Xiao and Zuo Wuji burst out laughing and nearly fell off their seats.

“Come on, Lang! Spit it out! What do you want to do?” Zuo Wuji had decided to call him ‘Lang’ from now on.

Lan Langlang rubbed his head. He didn’t like the way this single word, Lang, sounded when it was pronounced with a low voice. He was, however, the one who had suggested it, so he had to deal with it.

He then surprised the other two by declaring, “I have ten wishes.”

“Number 1, to cure my favus-infested head.” Lan Langlang rubbed his head.

Puff! Ye Xiao spat out the wine and Zuo Wuji couldn’t stop laughing.

“Number 2, my family will no longer restrain me in any way, so I can finally be free to do as I wish.” Lan Langlang ignored the laughter from the other two as he continued listing his wishes, “Number 3, I want to be so rich that even multiple warehouses would be insufficient to store all my money in them! Number 4, I don’t want to work for the government. I’m not interested in learning either martial arts or literature. Number 5, I want to have a beautiful wife. I don’t need three or four wives; a single thoughtful and beautiful one is enough. Number 6, my family will be healthy all their lives, peacefully dying once they have reached the threshold of 100 years of age. Number 7...”

Lan Langlang didn't stop and listed out all his wishes. He wasn't actually joking when he said that he had 10 wishes. The last wish was, "... Number 10, we will be best friends forever. Like, even when we are eighty years old, we will still fool around together. Then when we eventually turn a 100 years old, we will finish our last dinner together before peacefully closing our eyes one last time... Together..."

Lan Langlang clicked his tongue and then said wishfully, "Such a great future. I feel delighted just thinking about it..."

Ye Xiao and Zuo Wuji were speechless.

Although they knew that Lan Langlang was cherishing their brotherhood, the words that had come out from his mouth were a little bit over the top for them! They were thinking, [WHAT?! What do you mean 'closing our eyes one last time...Together', you fool?!]

Er: The pronunciation of the Chinese character “二”. It means the number two and double, it also means stupid.

Chapter 17: Yet Another Breakthrough

"How about you? What's your plan?" Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji asked Ye Xiao in unison.

Ye Xiao actually looked perplexed and seemingly lost for words; his plan was totally different from theirs.

"I... I want to be an expert cultivator." Ye Xiao spoke seriously, "An invincible one."

"Hahahahaha... an expert cultivator?! Invincible?!" Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang felt their legs go weak as their stomachs cried out in pain from their laughter. Tears were falling down their cheeks due to laughing excessively.

The foppish and lazy Lord Ye Xiao actually wanted to be an invincible expert cultivator. That was perhaps the biggest joke they had the pleasure of hearing in the entirety of their short lives.

Ye Xiao was stunned, "Seriously? Is my plan that unbelievable?!"

The two of them barely had any time to recover from their previous outburst of laughter, before they felt their knees go weak again and the pain in their stomach resurface as laughter once more rang throughout the General Ye's manor.

"Honestly, in everyone's eyes, we are just three foppish playboys. What dreams could we have? What decent future could we plan..."

Lan Langlang laughed, "This conversation is fine in here, where it can be kept private. Because if people outside heard of these dreams, they would definitely laugh their teeth off."

In fact, except for Ye Xiao, none of them would even dare to dream that the plans they were currently talking about would all eventually turn into reality!

Zuo Wuji would hold the greatest political power - with which he would wield the scepter and dominate the world; Lan Langlang would become extremely wealthy and an unrestricted aristocrat; and Ye Xiao would become a supreme cultivator with unfathomable strength!

Oh, however, Lan Langlang's final dream - to finish their last dinner and then die together, would never materialize.

...

"What is a foppish playboy?" Ye Xiao frowned and asked.

These days, he kept organizing his inherited memory and he realized that Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji were not some wicked lads like he had imagined. At least they had never done anything dirty, like bullying and oppressing innocent people. Maybe the biggest problem they had was just being disappointing...

But, should they be regarded as foppish playboys because of that?

"Disappointing!" Zuo Wuji smiled with self-mockery, "All those good lads are following the rules. They go to the colleges, seek their teachers and practice the way of martial arts. All they are fighting for are the honors of their clans and good reputations of themselves. They try their best to get into the government so that they can contribute for their clans or become the leaders of their clans."

"People like us are regarded as losers that are useless and have no ambitions. We are only playboys and black sheep." Zuo Wuji smiled bitterly, "Normally in the wealthy clans, those who often go to the brothels and bully the innocents will be called the black sheep. But things are different in our clans..."

"What makes us the black sheep is that we have no ambitions. Ambitions mean everything!" Lan Langlang said sadly.

"Urh." Ye Xiao frowned, "What I hate the most is bullying!"

"Aha, haha, ha! Well, isn't that exactly what you did to rob someone today?!" Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji laughed.

After dinner, Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji walked to the door preparing to leave. Before they left, Lan Langlang seemed to have a bright insight in his drunken state. He spoke to Zuo Wuji, "Hey dude, so all these years... have you been showing us your disguise?"

Zuo Wuji smiled bitterly, "I have disguised myself for such a long time. Now the disguise has become my identity, I am no longer able to tell if it is true or false."

They laughed again loudly and then left side by side.

Ye Xiao stood at the door as he blankly stared.

He felt touched by the conversation they had during their feast. How many people like them... were actually showing their real faces?

Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji were not. But who else?

Maybe the departed Ye Xiao... was actually a foppish playboy inside - so he died.

In his prior life, Ye Xiao had never seen things from this perspective - the point of view he has in this present life. He could clearly feel that it was a life lesson of utmost importance.

He clearly knew that the way in which he perceived the world had such drastic changes, making him feel like he was looking at the world through the eyes of someone else. Even so, the world he was living in as well as the realms that were in this world, were all still the exact same as they had been in his previous life.

Ye Xiao smiled, "It is always in this world, no matter where I live. There are always roads, no matter where I stand. Where do we sing and laugh; where do we weep and cry?"

When he just finished the last word of the poem, Ye Xiao calmly entered the space of the sphere.

Yet when he arrived inside, surprise quickly replaced the calmness on his face.

The spiritual qi in the space was obviously heavier than before. There was some white qi along with some purple qi. And there was another qi that was different from the original ones - a blood-colored qi that was barely noticeable.

That must be the spiritual qi from the essence of the blood ginseng.

Besides, there was a smell of plants. It was a lively smell of life - the purest smell of nature.

This natural smell was certainly brought by the blood ginseng too.

Ye Xiao realized that the blood ginseng he brought was the first plant absorbed by the sphere, and it had contained the qi of life.

He then walked along the purple tunnel and found that the spiritual qi here was heavier just as he had expected. He took a deep breath and then felt relaxed and happy.

He walked around for a moment and then prepared to get out for cultivating, but when he turned to the entrance, he suddenly felt

that something was different. He quickly turned back and observed the room carefully until he finally found it...

The egg!

It had become bigger!

It was as big as a duck's egg before, but now it had grown even bigger. It was at least as big as a goose's egg now.

"Oh? This thing could actually grow?" Ye Xiao was surprised, "It is truly an egg of a mythical creature. I haven't seen any eggs that can actually grow..."

That was truly his first time seeing something like this, even while counting both of his lives.

Ye Xiao was certain that it was a mythical creature's egg!

Because the egg was really amazing and mysterious.

Peerless lord of the world and primal spirit in chaos!

The sphere was very arrogant, so it must be something outstanding. The egg inside it with endless qi must be something beyond the ordinary. [It must be a top-grade mythical creature!] He thought.

Since Ye Xiao had first come into contact with this egg, he had frequently been lost in thought. When would it finally hatch and what kind of creature would be born from it? He was even starting to dream about a creature so powerful that it could swallow the entire Qinq-Yun Realm with just a single gulp!

He touched the egg and found it to be cold. But he couldn't feel any rhythm of a living creature. He murmured, "You are such a powerful being. How powerful will you be?"

Ye Xiao was delighted. He left the space and sat cross-legged to cultivate so as to improve his strength. The spiritual qi in the space then went into his Jing and Mai like streams to assist his cultivation.

Other than the qi from the sphere, the qi, which was scattered throughout the world, gathered around Ye Xiao to assist in his cultivation too. The path that the spiritual qi traversed was, however, invisible. Nobody, not even the expert cultivators, could sense the movement of the spiritual qi in the world. The purest spiritual qi was quietly absorbed by the space and then flowed into Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai...

When the world was built, the purple qi rose from the east!

Another night had passed. At the moment when the sun released its first light, Ye Xiao felt an indescribable sensation!

This was the first time that he truly performed the East-rising Purple Qi and felt the purple-rising qi!

At the moment, the sky lit up at once with sunshine. The next moment, his [Ni-Wan Acupoint](#) suddenly beat, tak tak tak...

His blood began to boil all at once!

His hair stood on end, pointing at the ceiling!

In his dantian, a wave of power which was originally dormant suddenly rushed up... all the way towards his scalp!

Boom! Bang!

It felt like there was a wave of spiritual qi breaking through the top of his head. His entire body was filled with an indescribable feeling of relief!

He felt that he was bathing in a bathtub filled with warm water, and the heat from the warm water spread all over his body. He was experiencing all of these conditions at this moment.

Ye Xiao's mind was now completely blank, and he couldn't utter a single word.

Massive spiritual qi was breaking through in his body, and within his mind, he saw that there were stars dancing, three flowers blossoming and five streams flowing!

Ye Xiao was quickly taken over by surprise.

It was the sign of breaking through the first level of the Earth Origin Realm!

Could it be that he had already reached the second level of the Earth Origin Realm?

[That... It shouldn't be. I just broke through the first degree of the East-rising Purple Qi several days ago and became an expert cultivator of the Earth Origin Stage. How did I improve myself by this much so quickly?

That was insane!

How can a six hundred years old blood ginseng have such efficacy?

Although I have only used one blood ginseng - even if I had used ten, it shouldn't be possible for me to break through the first level of the Earth Origin Realm in such a short amount of time.] He thought.

Ye Xiao recalled that when he reached the same level in his prior life, he had suffered immense pain, comparable to the feeling of his Jing and Mai melting. But this time, he felt really comfortable.

That was so simple, so easy, and so comfortable!

Ye Xiao immediately began to execute the East-rising Purple Qi, and then he learnt that it was still only at the first grade, even though his normal cultivation had apparently possessed immense improvements!

"Comparing the level system of cultivation and the level system of the East-rising Purple Qi... How big is the gap between them?" Ye Xiao could be regarded as an expert cultivator in this mortal world now, but he was still only at the first degree of the East-rising Purple Qi.

Ye Xiao felt stunned when he thought of this.

It was an extreme excitement that flowed through his veins, "If I improve my East-rising Purple Qi to the top grade, I will... live forever... and become a legend, right?!"

Ni-Wan Acupoint: An acupoint on the crown of the head.

Chapter 18: Such a Small World

When thinking about that, Ye Xiao felt his blood raging. He took a long and deep breath to calm the raging blood in his body. As he did, his eyes quickly became brighter.

As of this moment, Ye Xiao was unaware of the East-rising Purple Qi's power. Not just that, he also didn't realize that when he would eventually reach the peak of the East-rising Purple Qi cultivation, he would become much more than a simple immortal existence. He would become an unparalleled legend!

Right now, all that Ye Xiao knew was that the awful smell from before had returned, and that he badly needed a bath to clean the filth covering him. His body was completely covered by a disgusting layer of brown sticky outer skin with big beads of sweat dripping in between. These were the impurities found in every simple human being, and only once one started on their journey of cultivation could they expel them out of their body.

This state of the body was something every cultivator wished to attain. It was the important ablution of muscles and bones! It was a sign that Ye Xiao had successfully broken through the first level of the Earth Origin Stage and had entered the second level!

For the current Ye Xiao, this was an absolutely outstanding accomplishment!

He had already achieved two ablutions of his muscles and bones. To achieve just one ablution was already an incredible

achievement, but to actually achieve a second one, and in such a short time as well, was definitely unheard of!

As Ye Xiao stood up, he felt the bones in his body crack. As he fully straightened his back, he realized that he had actually grown a little bit taller over the course of the single night.

After Ye Xiao had properly cleaned his body from the disgusting filth in a nice and comfortable warm bath, he turned to look in a mirror and gasped in admiration for the image he perceived, “I am so bloody handsome! The girl I will eventually marry must definitely possess many generations of her family's good fortune...”

Coincidentally, the steward walked to the door and heard what Ye Xiao was saying. He nearly fell down because of that. Although he was usually a composed steward, at the moment, he couldn't help but twist his mouth and shiver...

[What the hell... I have traveled extensively for 30 years and gone through fire and water for 18 years, but even so, I have never seen anybody that narcissistic...]

“What a top wonder of the world!” He spoke straight out.

“What a top wonder of the world?” Ye Xiao was opening the door and happened to hear that, so he asked.

He knew that even though he had gotten the memory from the

dead Ye Xiao, he still had much to learn about this mortal world. He wouldn't let go a chance to gain more information!

“Hmm... Urh... Well...” The steward spoke slowly, “My lord, there were some supreme dan beads at the auction in the Ling-Bao Hall Salesroom. I was saying that those dan beads were truly a top wonder of the world.”

“Supreme dan beads?” Ye Xiao curled his lip and thought, [Supreme dan beads he said. That's nothing. It is just something I used to earn some money, you fool.]

“My lord, I think it would better for you to stay at home these days.” The steward said seriously, “I have heard that the kingdom is extremely chaotic right now. All those martial sects including the mysterious ones and the noble clans are sending their core forces to the capital. The next few months in the capital will be filled with dangers...”

He looked at Ye Xiao and had an opinion that he dared not to voice; he just spoke it in his mind instead, [A foppish young lord like you will easily be the target of their swords. Hmm, you are dead meat if you get into any trouble.]

In the government and among the residents, people may be afraid of offending the General Ye, but those people who fought for living or came from some great sects or noble clans were fearless. They would easily kill anybody like crumpling a piece of paper...

“How can I just stay here? I am going out now...” Ye Xiao

frowned.

“It would be better if you don’t.” The steward also frowned and said impatiently.

All the clans in the capital were recalling their fighters from the frontlines. All the young lords were forbidden to go out by their families. Every clan was preparing to receive these sects...

At this time, if Ye Xiao walked out on the street, he would be like a bright lamp in a dark tunnel – a vivid target.

Ye Xiao signed, “Don’t worry. I will keep myself inconspicuous...” He then pushed the door open and left.

“Stay low, my lord.” The steward spoke and thought, [Oh my lord... please don’t get into any trouble...]

“All right. Absolutely!” Ye Xiao loudly replied as he had already moved far away.

Both of them didn’t know that Ye Xiao would neither keep away from trouble nor would he stay low, instead he was going to be the centerpiece of an earth-shaking event!

Ye Xiao was walking breezily on the streets. Since he had the money now, he was certainly heading to the herbal medicine market. That was his most important goal at the moment.

Above all, after having absorbed the blood ginseng into the sphere's space, he had great confidence in the use of herbal medicine for this space. He couldn't wait to get to the market.

In Ye Xiao's opinion, no matter if it was in the Qing-Yun Realm or the mortal world, cultivation was always the top priority!

He was trying to keep his promise, so he stayed low all along and showed no curiosity towards anything. In fact, he had no mood for trouble.

As he got closer to the herbal medicine market, he sniffed a dense smell of the herbal medicine.

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up and he trotted over to the market with excitement.

The market was on a street which was over six miles long; at least half of the stores in it were selling herbal medicine. The others were either clinics or stands that were selling medical equipment. Most of the people walking on this street were wearing fierce expressions.

This street was the well-known Hui-Tian Street of the Chen-Xing City.

In Hui-Tian Street, only herbs, medicine and medical equipments were sold.

If you got hurt, got ill, or got poisoned, you would either come here to find a cure, or a doctor who could help you fight against death, or you could simply die.

Because if there was anything in this mortal world that could save you, it would be found in this Hui-Tian Street. If it wasn't for sale here, you were almost certainly going to die...

That was why this street was named the [Hui-Tian Street](#).

Ye Xiao went in and out of one store after another. He had been spending money like running water to buy herbal medicines – and he had bought a lot. He wouldn't hesitate since he had 500 thousand taels of silver at his disposal.

Ye Xiao was satisfied since he had bought several hundreds of years old ginsengs and other hundreds of years old herbal medicines.

But those had already cost Ye Xiao more than 150 thousand taels of silver.

Nobody noticed that every time after he had bought something, he kept discarding the purchases after walking a short distance. Because once these herbal medicines came in touch with his hands, their essences would be completely absorbed by the sphere's space.

These herbal medicines were far from superior treasures, but

they had useful quantities of medicinal essence. They possessed quite a massive potency when gathered together.

This time, the space had just absorbed the most essential parts of them. Some of the herbal medicines had retained their appearances, but the essences within them were already absorbed completely. They had just become some useless shells...

Ye Xiao did everything covertly. He kept a few bags in his hands so that people around him would think that he had never let his purchases out of his sight.

But they didn't know that these bags were replaced many times, and all the contents of the bags had become garbage.

He travelled from north to south and then east to west. All the stores in the market thought that they finally had the chance to meet a heavy buyer that they had always been dreaming about.

Nobody noticed that he was quietly throwing away everything he bought, spending his money like running water – this was quite a stealthy operation.

When Ye Xiao was about to visit the last store, some guys walking toward the same store caught sight of him. Then one of them hurriedly moved to an alleyway to hide from Ye Xiao.

This guy was actually Wang Xiaonian!

His eyes were burning up with unquenchable hatred.

He cursed in his mind, [Ye Xiao! You bloody son of a bxtch! The god must hate you so he gave me this opportunity! Your retribution is coming.]

Beside him was a silk-robed youth who was followed by a small entourage. This youth was confused by Wang Xiaonian's reaction, so he curiously asked, "Who is he?"

"He is Ye Xiao!" Wang Xiaonian said while gnashing his teeth.

"That guy is Ye Xiao?" The silk-robed youth was about twenty-seven or twenty-eight years old, with a roman nose, fiery eyes and a strapping body. He frowned, "The blood ginseng that I gave your father as a gift was extorted by him, right?"

This youth had slightly overdone the deepness of his voice, creating a heavy tone that made people who heard his voice feel depressed.

Wang Xiaonian took a deep breath, "That is him! It was this bloody foppish black sheep that bullied and extorted us while relying on the name of his father!"

"Hmm... It really is a small world. Don't worry." The silk-robed man had a murderous look in his eyes that was emanating a thick killing intent, "Quick, go away and hide yourself somewhere! Make sure no one can connect you with what's going to happen!"

He spoke slowly, “A gift from me is never something that can be robbed so easily. He who dares to rob me must prepare to pay the price!”

Wang Xiaonian was delighted, “That’s right!”

Wang Xiaonian was clear about who this man was.

That was why he was so delighted!

The name of this silk-robed man was Mu Chengbai. He was the elder brother-in-law of the crown prince, and he was from one of the well-known eight noble clans – the Mu clan.

He had lived in the capital all his life. Even though he did not hold any official position, nobody dared to mess with him.

Because he represented an extremely powerful force!

The main reason the crown prince held his title was because of the support he received from this great noble clan.

Mu Chengbai had played an important role in choosing the next crown prince.

A man like him wanted to assault Ye Xiao. It seemed that Ye Xiao would not find it easy to get away this time!

Hui-Tian Street: Hui-Tian is 回天 in Chinese. It means to save a desperate situation.

Chapter 19: If You Can Be Unreasonable, Then I Can Be Worse!

Ye Xiao had nearly finished his shopping tour. He had just walked into the last store, but he was immediately attracted by a fluctuation in the surrounding spiritual qi before he could even utter a word.

He quickly follow the fluctuation of spiritual qi and discovered that it had originated from inside a dusty box sitting in a remote corner of the store.

"What is that?" Ye Xiao asked as he pointed at the box, before nonchalantly picking it up.

"Hmm... I have no idea. Well, to be honest, even our manager has no idea as to what it is. It may be just some weird weed, nothing of value really. The only strange thing about it is that it never withers. Although it has been in the box for a few years, it is still vividly green. Maybe it is useful in some way... But none of our staff really know..." The sales clerk answered honestly.

Normally, when a customer would ask about a specific item, they would be told that they had sharp eyes and that they had spotted a treasure in an attempt to make a greater profit.

But since the sales clerk was working in a store here for some time, he had developed a keen eye. He instantly guessed Ye Xiao's status from the way he was dressed and how he acted, so he didn't talk tall but decided to tell the truth instead. He knew that it would

be better to lose the deal than get into trouble afterwards!

The guy understood it clearly: a man like Ye Xiao could not be mentioned in the same sentence as some fools that he could casually mess around with.

"Hmm? Since it is useless, why do you keep it?" Ye Xiao displayed calmness as he asked further questions while holding the box.

"We had collected it several years ago... Well, I have forgotten the details. Anyway, we haven't been able to sell it, so we just keep it in the corner." The salesclerk showed embarrassment and rubbed his head.

Ye Xiao nodded, and then spoke carelessly, "I will take it. Give me the price."

He actually felt extreme happiness in his heart.

He was thinking, [What 'maybe just some weird weeds'? What 'isn't something valuable' and 'always stays green', you fool? How hilarious! It is the Heaven's Cyan!]

From a straw to a tree, it takes ten thousand years; to cook it into tea, he who drinks it could be led to heavens!

The seedling of the Heaven's Cyan would grow by one inch every five hundred years. It would take ten thousand years to fully grow its roots and become a tree. In the last day of the ten thousand year

period, the tree would rapidly grow from a twenty inch sapling to a tree approximately a foot in diameter. After that, it would go back to growing one inch per five hundred years again...

Ten thousand years were only enough for it to grow one full cycle.

It needs neither sunshine nor water, nor trials of winds and thunders. Seasons would never influence it. It only required a private space to automatically absorb the spiritual qi from the world which was present in the air.

There weren't many people that knew about the Heaven's Cyan, yet Ye Xiao happened to know clearly about it. And he also knew the name of it when it had blossomed.

The Tree of the Cultivating Tea!

People at any cultivation level, even those at the top level of the Dao Origin Stage like Ye Xiao was in his previous life, could boost their cultivation process with the Cultivating Tea

Now in Ye Xiao's discerning eyes, the Heaven's Cyan in the box was over nine thousand years old. It needed only a short time to become a Tree of Cultivating Tea.

How could he not be astounded when he saw such a treasure?

It was a super valuable treasure that could hardly be found

anywhere. In the Qing-Yun Realm, a pot of the Cultivating Tea was worth at least [100 thousand Golden Crystals](#)! The cost of an actual Tree of Cultivating Tea would be utterly inconceivable!

After the Heaven's Cyan transformed into the Tree of Cultivating Tea, it acquired the appearance of a normal tea tree that wouldn't draw any eyes. One would be very lucky to be able to come across one and recognize it, so the best way to find the tree was to find it when it was still in its infancy and could be recognized with its always-green feature.

However, even if somebody found it, it would still require an entire ten thousand years to complete a single cycle of growth to obtain the tea leaves.

Who on earth could live for ten thousand years?

So the Tree of Cultivating Tea was very rare, even in the Qing-Yun Realm.

Ye Xiao had been extreme lucky to see a Heaven's Cyan that was over nine thousand years old, so he knew about this 'weird weed'.

He really couldn't have imagined that there was really an almost blossomed Heaven's Cyan in this low-grade mortal world where it was quietly soaking in spiritual qi!

Wasn't it like a pie from the sky?

"You... You will take it?" The salesclerk blinked his eyes and felt that it was hard to comprehend why someone would like to buy such a weed, so he asked, "Well... It really isn't priced yet... Do you really want it?"

[How on earth would I know it's worth?] The sales clerk thought.

Ye Xiao casually took out a note worth 5 taels of silver, "How about this? Is it enough for you?"

"Yes... Yes..." The salesclerk was delighted. A weed for 5 taels of silver, he felt like this was a small fortune for some weed.

Meanwhile, a slow and heavy voice sounded instantly, "I will take it for 50 taels of silver."

A silk-robed man walked into the store with his hands clasped behind his back. It was Mu Chen-Bai!

The salesclerk was stunned hearing his words. A weed, which has been here for three years and nobody ever asked about it, now suddenly had two customers who want it, and they were even raising the price!

"I am the one who saw it first." Ye Xiao frowned and felt something was wrong. He thought, [This guy comes with strong hostility! But I barely know him. Who is he?]

"Well, you just offer your price. Since the deal is still uncertain,

whoever gives the higher price surely gets it." Mu Chengbai said chillily.

In fact, Mu Chengbai had no idea about the contents inside the box. But that didn't matter to him, he just did this to displease Ye Xiao.

"The higher price you said? 500 taels of silver then." Ye Xiao curled his mouth as a cold light shone in his eyes.

"5 thousand." Mu Chengbai held his arms behind his back and looked up.

"50 thousand." Ye Xiao narrowed his eyes.

If someone who had known Ye Xiao well was present, he would have recognized that Ye Xiao was actually livid.

"500 thousand then!" Mu Chengbai moved his neck and smiled disdainful. He was here to provoke Ye Xiao, so he would do anything necessary. No matter what price Ye Xiao would say, he would follow it by ten times as much.

He thought that in the capital, there was no one who really dared to ask for his money anyway. He didn't care what price he needed to offer, because the sales clerk would not really get his money.

However, right after he spoke out his words, he felt his belly deform into a concave shape and experienced a sharp pain.

WHOOSH! The next moment, he flew away and a voice sounded in his ear, "Fxxk your five! Hundred! Thousand!!"

Ye Xiao was really pissed and became violent. He thought, [Bastard how dare you mess with me, the Xiao Monarch?]

He had no hesitation as he had viciously kicked Mu Cheng Bai in his stomach. This kick contained such force that Mu Chengbai was kicked out of the door!

He crashed through the portiere and flew out far into the street.

What a spiffy kick!

At one moment, he was still talking, but in the very next moment, he suffered a crushing defeat!

PUFF! Mu Chengbai forcefully fell on the street and coincidentally landed on a big basket of persimmons. Yellow pulps were now covering his body, but he couldn't prevent his body from rolling over, causing the pulps to get into his mouth. His mouth was now stained with yellow pulp, and people might now think that he was getting off that big basket as he finished eating those persimmons...

Mu Chengbai was quite a cultivator himself, but he hadn't thought that this girly foppish lord could actually surprise him with a kick. He got kicked completely unprepared. This 'flight' had made him really embarrassed.

His guards were also stunned and were unable to take any action in the blink of an eye that they saw their master was flying out like a rocket.

They were just going to hit Ye Xiao angrily, but unexpectedly, Ye Xiao was the one who had rushed out through the door, now completely furious.

And then the angry words boomed outside the store in succession.

"You dare! I will let you have it! You want to take it from me, huh? You actually... You actually... You prick..." Ye Xiao swore loudly. And Bam! Puff! Slap! He didn't let up with the beating even while swearing.

A moment before, he was thinking, [This prick clearly came to me to pick a fight. Then he must be either with Wang Danian or the Crown Prince's Palace. Or he is just some moron! Whoever he is, I am going to beat him up today! So what if he is a big shot?!]

Then he kicked the man again before grabbing the box. He rushed in to leave the 5 taels of silver note on the desk as payment for the weed. He then got out on the street and stepped on the belly of Mu Chengbai, and afterwards, he even rained punches on him like raindrops in a storm.

The first punch made Mu Chengbai's left eye black, and the second one, the other... He just created a panda, then the panda's

nose became red, and then his mouth turned black too...

As the young generation of the eight noble clans, Mu Chengbai was still a cultivator of the Mortal Origin Stage, although he was doing better in literature than martial arts. However, he had no ability to react when Ye Xiao had kicked him. That time, the primary spiritual qi in his dantian had already dispersed as he dropped to the floor in disgrace and failed to get up. He could offer no resistance at all.

After that, before he realized anything, Ye Xiao had already ridden on him like riding a horse and punched him with the two fists like a jackhammer!

"You..." Mu Chengbai was only able to speak out one word before his mouth was punched by Ye Xiao. What he wanted to say was punched back into his throat.

"Me? What about me! You asked for this you bastard!" Lord Ye was high-spirited and vigorous at the moment. He was showing his rascal specialty of 'the three lords' right in the crowded street.

He represented the saying vividly - when reasoning didn't work, actions of a scamp really helped...

Golden Crystal: The money in the Qing-Yun Realm.

Chapter 20: You Want to Kill Me, But I Want to Kill You More!

People on the street started gossiping. A crowd had already gathered around the fighters and were talking about the fight. Ye Xiao was immediately identified as the foppish lord by some of the people in the crowd, and they quickly disclosed his identity to those near them. After a while, everyone had learnt about Ye Xiao and they kept on spicing up the gossip.

"Whoop! I had thought that I knew who that is. It turns out to be the young Lord Ye, the General Ye's son."

"No wonder he acts brutally. He just rode the man and didn't stop punching."

"He is Ye Xiao. You know, the young lord. For him, this is so ordinary, just like any other day, like a routine..."

"That's right. It would be very uncommon, very strange, and very unearthly that he doesn't beat someone... But who is that punching bag?"

"... I have no idea. This must be his unlucky day..."

Finally, the two guards of Mu Chengbai arrived on the scene with furious howls. They burst in through the crowd and launched their fists towards Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao calmly looked over his shoulders for a bit and stood up without any particular hurry. He then firmly

stamped his foot and leapt up in the air. He turned his waist in the air and a large snap of breaking bones was heard when his right foot connected with one of the two guards.

"Aaahhhhh!" A miserable scream echoed out from the mouth of the guard who had been ruthlessly kicked.

Whether Ye Xiao did it on purpose or not, when his foot landed on the ground, he managed to stamp it right on Mu Chengbai's crotch.

The piteous cries of Mu Cheng Bai were world-shaking, and one could imagine how painful it would be to get kicked in the crotch!

Mu Chengbai curled his body while holding his crotch like a prawn. Tears were rolling out of his eyes, snot was dripping out of his nose, and a look of extreme pain was clearly visible on his twisted face.

On the other side, Ye Xiao and the two guards had already begun fighting.

There were many expert cultivators in the clan of Mu. No one would doubt that. But Mu Chengbai had been a tyrant in the capital for many years, so he wouldn't need to use any martial force to solve his problems.

As such, he had only brought two guards with him who were only good at bootlicking. And while they were at the Mortal Origin

Stage, they were still at a lower level than Mu Chengbai. He had planned to just hang around on the street, so he had anticipated that he wouldn't need any heavy protection. Besides, the three of them were all at the Mortal Origin Stage. That was enough for any common situations...

But he didn't know he would come across Ye Xiao - an unreasonable foppish young lord with ridiculous strength!

Due to this miscalculation, Mu Chengbai took a real beating this time.

However, Ye Xiao was not aware of all these details. He was simply wondering why the guards were so lame; though they looked like some expert cultivators - steady steps, sharp eyes and strong bodies.

"What is going on? Why are they so... weak?"

While Ye Xiao's curiosity was piqued, he suddenly heard an exhausted scream from behind him, "Go get him! Beat him up! If he dies, I will take the blame!"

The voice was no longer calm and deep. Instead it was utterly abashed.

Mu Chengbai was the young generation of the well-known Mu Clan. Although he was not a direct descendant, he had never suffered through any difficulties. In the Kingdom of Chen, he was

the older brother-in-law of the crown prince, so he always got what he wanted. A powerful clan was behind him. Who would dare to mess with him?

How could he bear to suffer such a disgrace?

Today, Ye Xiao had beaten him as easily as a father would beat his son. Even though he was usually shrewd, at this moment, an immense rage had taken over his rationality.

Even more so, knowing that Ye Xiao was a foppish fool had increased his feeling of humiliation. [When the news of today's event eventually spreads throughout the capital... The whole kingdom will come to know that I, the famous young Lord Mu, was actually beaten up by one of the three foppish lords, Ye Xiao... How can I live through the shame which comes from this?!!]

When the order was given, the guards instantly turned ferocious.

Honestly, they too were very upset about what had just happened. In their eyes, Ye Xiao was just a fool with impractical steps, some useless punches and no spunk, but they just couldn't seem to touch him. In fact, these two experienced guards were pushed towards the limits of their abilities time and time again!

They were feeling exceedingly gloomy.

However, now that they had received the order from their master, they would naturally go to any lengths to beat Ye Xiao up.

Shiiiiing! They both quickly drew their swords which gave off a resplendent reflections, showing their beauty in the sun. They then quickly aimed their swords and swung at Ye Xiao.

The first sword was aimed at Ye Xiao's throat after it had deceptively changed its direction thrice! Meanwhile, the other sword was aimed at Ye Xiao's waist to make sure that dodging was not an option for this foppish lord!

The two swords were in unison as they slashed towards Ye Xiao. They really didn't care that Ye Xiao was from the General's House. They just wanted to chop this foppish lord apart!

In the eyes of the Mu clan members, to kill the son of a mere general in a kingdom of the mortal world was just a casual monday morning.

His status meant absolutely nothing to them!

They had gotten the order, but even if no one would have ordered them to kill this foppish lord, it wouldn't have changed a thing. Killing someone just didn't mean anything to them! With the backing of the royal forces, they would always be kept in the right!

Meanwhile, at a corner of the street, Wang Xiaonian was still hiding. If one would look at him closely, they would see beads of sweat rolling down his forehead as an immense fear was plastered on his face! [WTF! You aren't seriously going to chop him apart,

are you?!] He panicked, [I... I... I couldn't take the guilt.]

...

A cold light flashed in Ye Xiao's eyes.

[In this crowded marketplace, there are too many onlookers. Many of them have actually surrounded us to enjoy the show. Those three can ignore all this because they have the royal force behind them, but... I can't.] He thought, [But I really want to kill them...]

As he was pondering over this issue, he suddenly made his move. He flexibly turned his waist and slipped away like a fish in the ocean. He then started to loudly scream, "MURDER!!! HELP!!!", as he quickly ran away!

Ye Xiao ran away with tottering steps, all the while acting like he was scared. At this point, he wasn't the slightest bit interested about something as trivial as embarrassment. He reached the first corner in the street and quickly darted into it, disappearing in the blink of an eye.

It seemed like he was too scared to tell right from left as he took the wrong turn and ran westwards even though the General's House was to the east.

He had chosen to run in the opposite direction from his house and was getting further and further away from his safe haven...

"You two are truly useless! Go get him! Go!" Mu Chengbai furiously repeated his command.

While he had finally managed to stand up, his hands were still tightly enveloping his crotch as the pain had not subsided by the slightest amount. The muscles in his face were heavily twitching as he grasped for air.

He had really suffered a huge loss of face, and he was determined to catch Ye Xiao no matter what!

He had never been humiliated like this in public before.

The guards were also infuriated by this foppish lord, so they rushed after Ye Xiao without further ado.

Mu Chengbai was so resentful, that he had even bore with the pain smouldering in his crotch and followed after his two guards.

Within a span of a few seconds, all the action had disappeared; both the assailant and the assaulted had ran off, and the spectators were left speechlessly looking at each other.

Only after a while did the spectators regain their wits and quickly started chatting, "He truly is one of those 'three foppish lords'... Fighting on the street in front of the public, he did it like it was for his glory..."

"That man who was beaten up didn't seem like a good guy either. He actually wanted to kill someone in the middle of the street in broad daylight."

"He wasn't just thinking it, he was actually going for it. If the lord Ye didn't run fast enough, he would already have been chopped into many pieces..."

"I have seen enough for a year. The world of these lords is really something beyond our comprehension..."

...

Wang Xiaonian had joined the crowd to look at the spectacle with a foxy smile on his face.

He thought disdainfully, [Humph, Ye Xiao. You have neither realized the trouble you have put yourself in nor the person you're messing with, but all in all, you are definitely dead meat now! Even if your father came back, he wouldn't be able to save you! For these men, killing you means nothing at all!]

Showing a sinister smile, he turned around and quietly left.

He was definitely not going to follow these four men and watch the slaughter of Ye Xiao. Firstly, he simply wasn't able to do so, and secondly, he didn't want to get involved in Ye Xiao's murder...

The General Ye might not be able to deal with Mu Chengbai, but

he certainly could deal with Wang Xiaonian.

Therefore, although Wang Xiaonian was happy in his heart, he wouldn't dare to say anything.

He was already worrying about how he would confirm that Mu Cheng Bai wouldn't mention his involvement in this ordeal.

...

Ye Xiao went along the streets and alleys. It looked like he was fleeing through any path he could find. In fact, he was choosing these routes on purpose. The surroundings got more and more dilapidated as he ran further and further. Ahead of him, there was the city slum.

All he could see were ruins.

Beyond the ruins in the city slum, there was a rather large hill. After one went over the hill, they would arrive in a forest, and on the far side of the forest, there was a lake.

These were created by mankind in the Chen-Xing City - 'a hill, a forest and a lake'.

The three men were chasing after him!

They showed an attitude like 'we will chase you up to the highest

point in heaven and down to the lowest point of hell'!

But what they didn't know was that, the closer they got to Ye Xiao, the closer they got to their own deaths!

Ye Xiao was slowly building up his killing intent as he ran!

...

Ye Xiao knew that the guy he had just beaten up must be someone special. He might not have recognized the guy, but his guts told him that he shouldn't act rashly against him. He wasn't interested in looking for useless trouble, so even though he had punched mercilessly, he never had the intention to kill him.

But Mu Chengbai definitely wanted to kill him!

The two guards had already made a killing move!

Usually, Ye Xiao would exterminate his enemies, especially those who tried to kill him!

'You want to kill me? I will kill you!'

That's why he had chosen such a complicated route - he had wanted to draw them to this isolated place.

Ye Xiao had pretended to be extremely exhausted for a while. He had arrived at the top of the hill while breathing heavily. It looked like he was about to fall down at any moment. The three men felt their desire to kill this foppish lord rise to an even higher degree!

"Bastard, you finally have nowhere to go!"

"We could have killed you in the middle of a busy street, and now you have actually brought us in such a desolate place? How could we not dare to kill you? Bastard! You really made a mistake in coming this way! This is your way to the hell!"

Ye Xiao ran off the hill and looked around. He happily noticed that those three were right, and there were indeed no signs of people anywhere near him. [This really is a perfect place to get rid of their bodies without anyone noticing...] He thought.

Dusk had settled in by the time Ye Xiao arrived in this desolate place!

Ye Xiao finally stopped with the totter and suddenly increased his speed; he was like an arrow shooting through the air. Whoosh! The leaves on the trees shook as he rushed into the forest!

The two guards followed Ye Xiao with great urgency. However, as they enter deeper into the forest, uneasiness slowly crept inside their hearts. They felt something was wrong, and when they looked in the direction where Ye Xia run off to, they were instantly stunned.

The foppish lord, who had seemed like a stray cur, was now standing in front of them with a calm and composed demeanor. He looked completely at ease, and that fact made them uneasy!

Ye Xiao was standing there with both of his hands clasped behind his back. He disdainfully smiled and calmly looked at the approaching guards. He deviously nodded his head and said with a sneer, "Well done guys. You have fulfilled your responsibilities, and you have obediently chased me all the way here on your master's command. However... the road of life is long and boring. You burn in the sun and freeze in the snow. You have to overcome the bumps and survive the thorns of the brambles. To live like the two of you is true suffering. Why don't you let me ease the pain that is your life and let me end it?"

Chapter 21: The Monarch Holds His Sword!

The two guards were pissed. However, they felt extremely pressured under Ye Xiao's unyielding gaze! They wanted to curse and scream, yet under his gaze, their voices never managed to leave their throats!

To them, Ye Xiao seemed to be a god from the heavens. They felt that he was invincible!

After a prolonged period of silence, they finally caved in and shouted out in panic, "Ye Xiao you fool! You dare to speak with such arrogance while standing on death's doorstep!"

Ye Xiao nodded and smiled gently, "Well, well, well, then could you please send me to my death?"

Meanwhile, a completely out of breath Mu Chengbai finally managed to catch up with these three. His eyes turned red out of anger when he caught sight of Ye Xiao, and he yelled his orders to the guards, "What in the bloody hell are you waiting for? Go kill him!"

The guards could no longer stand the stress from this stand off, so after receiving the order from their master, they immediately decided to take the initiative. If they didn't make any actions soon, they would certainly go insane. Therefore, they shouted in unison and swung their bright steel swords!

Ye Xiao laughed, casually stepped forward while facing the

swords and said, "Never speak of the hardships in life. It doesn't take a thousand bottles of wine to relieve your sorrow. It is your destiny that we have met in this narrow path. With my laughter, you will be sent to your death."

The swords began to emit flashing rays of sword lights after being infused with the guards' spiritual qi.

The guards had obviously gone all out with these attacks as they had felt a life-and-death crisis originating from Ye Xiao's smile. Every inch of his smile gave them an ominous sense of death!

But even after going all out, they continued to feel intimidated!

Ye Xiao slightly spun around while smiling, barely managing to slip away from the two attacking swords. Whoops!

One of his fair and delicate hands hit the wrist of a guard!

His actions had seemed so slow, to the point where even an ordinary person would have been able to follow the movement of his arm as he attacked.

However, the guard remained absolutely powerless to defend against it!

While the guard was screaming, he lost his grip on his sword which still shining brightly as it continued on its path.

It almost managed to slash Ye Xiao's hand!

Ye Xiao used one hand to stop the blade and tossed it to his other hand. Afterwards, he used this newly acquired weapon to attack the guards. A sword light burst out, causing the sword slash to look like a galaxy of stars in the night sky.

He looked like a master calligrapher; a hand folded behind his back and gripping a brush pen, while the other hand used to write on a snow white paper.

It was both elegant and fascinating.

The sword flashed, and the observers could only see a streak of light illuminating the path travelled by the sword! But the two guards who were fighting against it showed horror-struck expressions!

Moreover, they felt admiration towards a foe who was skilled to such a degree!

They worshipped his talent deep within their hearts. It felt like a paramount god from the heavens was smiting them! The slashing sword seemed to represent the will of heaven and hell!

It was inviolable and overwhelming!

They felt like that it was their destiny to die under this sword!

While the sword lights were quickly losing their splendor, blood sprayed out of the guards' body and painted the sky, trees and ground red.

The murderous expression that had been on the guards' faces had been replaced by the fearful looks - like they had desecrated a god. Then they slowly fell down on the floor.

PUFF! When their bodies hit the ground, a small cloud of dust to rose from the ground.

...

The swordplay that Ye Xiao used was 'The Monarch's Sword' that he depended on to rule the Qing-Yun Realm!

The Monarch holds the sword and he takes away all lives! Thousands of dead bodies fall! Beacons are lit for millions of miles! The sword of the Monarch kills with absolute certainty! It rarely shows up but it will kill when it does!

There was no one who had survived after facing The Monarch's Sword.

...

A single sword strike had actually caused two instantaneous deaths!

Mu Chengbai's eyes were wide opened as he was utterly shocked. He looked at Ye Xiao and felt that his heart had suddenly stopped beating!

At this moment, he wasn't thinking of slipping away nor was he feeling frightened! He felt endless astonishment and bursting rage!

[Didn't Wang Xiaonian say... that this Ye Xiao was just a foppish idiot and was even too weak to hold a chicken? How come... he possesses such superior martial skills? He actually easily killed my two guards who were both at the Mortal Origin Stage with one strike of his sword! How could a foppish idiot ever do this? Are you kidding me? Wang Xiaonian, you are trying to get me killed, aren't you?] A lot of thoughts kept spinning inside Mu Chengbai's head.

At this moment, the thing he wanted to do the most was to find Wang Xiaonian and rip him to shreds! Though he was convinced that even by doing that, his anger wouldn't be relieved!

Ye Xiao held the sword with only two fingers and casually looked at the blood dripping down along the edge of the blade. He then looked straight at Mu Chengbai and spoke, "You've had a rough day."

Mu Chengbai started panting and felt a chilling coldness in his heart. He couldn't even utter a single word.

Ye Xiao shook his head and sighed, "This...This is my first time killing in this life."

He stopped and slowly shook his head before continuing, "I didn't expect the first time would come this soon."

Mu Chengbai said hoarsely, "Soon?"

Ye Xiao smiled and explained patiently, "Yes, you are right. I didn't expect that I would start this kind of life again this soon..." One could see an extreme yearning and desire being born deep within his eyes.

Mu Chengbai felt a deep sense of fear when he saw the yearning and desire in Ye Xiao's eyes.

Ye Xiao smiled and spoke gently, "You must be exhausted after chasing me all this way, but isn't living as long as you have done much more exhausting?"

Mu Chengbai's legs started trembling. He took a deep breath and said, "Ye Xiao! I know you don't have the guts to kill me!"

Ye Xiao spoke with half-closed eyes, "You mean you have distinguished blood?"

Then he followed, "Or special status?"

He didn't stop, "Or powerful backgrounds?"

At last he said, "None of that will work on me." He pointed at the sharp and bloodstained blade, "And neither on this."

Mu Chengbai gnashed his teeth, "I am from the Mu clan! I am Mu Chengbai! I am Mu Chengbai..."

Ye Xiao moved his ear forward, "Never heard of them." He held the sword and stepped forward.

"I am the brother-in-law of the crown prince! I am the older brother of his wife!" Mu Chengbai was sweating. As Ye Xiao stepped closer to him, he couldn't help but step back and say, "If you kill me, the Ye clan will suffer repercussions for your actions. But if you let me go today, I promise you, Ye Xiao, I will make you rich and powerful in the government!"

Ye Xiao straightened his back and said after thinking, "Did you know me before today?"

"No, I didn't." Mu Chengbai shook his head and answered, "We have nothing against each other. You can't just kill me."

"Nothing?" Ye Xiao frowned, "Then... what did you do all this for?"

He was truly confused about this.

"Wang Xiaonian! It was Wang Xiaonian!" Mu Chengbai nearly shouted out, "That bastard, he... he... he was angry because you had robbed something from him. He asked to come along with me today and happened to see you there... So he encouraged me... Then I... I..."

"Oh..." Ye Xiao narrated, "It was Wang Xiaonian... Hmm, so you went after me? You bullied me and then tried to kill me... Right?"

Mu Chengbai was scared to death, "NO! NO! NO! Noooo..."

Ye Xiao ignored him and said softly, "Several days ago, I got poisoned... You know of it, don't you?"

Mu Chengbai was confused, "Poison? No please... It wasn't me."

Ye Xiao looked right into his eyes and frowned, "It wasn't you? You know nothing?"

If the brother-in-law of the crown prince didn't know... Then who did it? Wang Da-Nian was surely a suspect and he was with the crown prince... But now Mu Chengbai said that he didn't know anything about it...

This case was getting extremely complicated and confusing.

"I don't know. Please. It truly wasn't me..." Mu Chengbai was

willing to take out his fresh heart to show his honesty.

"It wasn't you... and you know nothing... then what should I keep you alive for..." Ye Xiao frowned.

"I am useful! Please! I truly am... Lord Ye, listen to me please... I... I can help you in anyway... The government businesses, the wealth, the martial world..." At the moment, if there were pills for regret, Mu Chengbai would spend every penny he had to buy them all. But there was no such thing in existence.

He now had to beg for his life, and he had even started promising one beautiful thing after the other.

Ye Xiao was too vicious at the moment! He was making Mu Chengbai feel so stressed that he felt unable to control his bowels - he was almost certainly going to suffer from incontinence.

[If I can get through this alive, I swear I will figure out ten thousand ways to torture Ye Xiao and and that father of his, Ye Nantian, to death!]

Mu Chengbai was already planning his revenge, but even so, he kept on making promises to Ye Xiao in hopes to get him to change his mind. He was hoping that Ye Xiao would let him go.

But he also knew that his chance of survival was truly too slim...

If Ye Xiao hadn't killed the guards, he might have considered

sparing Mu Chengbai. But since he had already killed the guards, he couldn't stop anymore.

Ye Xiao sighed, "I really want to trust you, but... I can't. I know that if I let you go, it will bring me unending troubles. You are begging, that's true. But I can also feel that you've already started planning your revenge... People like you, they are always standing high and never get humiliated. What happened today must have already created a seedling of burning shame deep inside your heart. If I were to let you go, your revenge would arrive at my doorsteps shortly, right?"

Mu Chengbai shook his head fearfully, "No! No... Absolutely not... You must trust me. Please, trust me..."

Ye Xiao was nonchalant, "Besides, I always do things cleanly... In many situations, things will just change when I speak one word extra..."

"Ahhh... Ahhh..." Mu Chengbai gasped weirdly and strange sounds came out of his throat, even though he didn't know why. His eyes turned wider and wider in fear as he stared at Ye Xiao. Then he suddenly screamed and started running away, as if the devil himself was chasing after him.

Ye Xiao's eyes flashed as he slightly flicked his wrist. The steel sword flew out of his hand straight for Mu Chengbai. PUFF! It managed to penetrate his back and quickly cut through his heart!

Mu Chengbai's body still ran for several steps before falling

down.

His eyes were inanimate but still seemed to be looking forward. There was no hate in his eyes, only fear and regret.

He had messed with the wrong guy.

"The brother-in-law of the crown prince?" Ye Xiao looked down at the dead body and shook his head, "How can a dead man be the brother-in-law to anybody... Dead men are sharing the same title... corpses."

"Don't worry, I will avenge you." Ye Xiao stared at the body, "I will punish Wang Xiaonian soon enough."

After saying these words, he walked away steadily and did not spare a second look. He made his way out of the forest while stepping on the fallen leaves.

A calm man could be seen walking casually out of this forest, as if he had just enjoyed the sunset followed by the appearance of the moon and the stars.

From start to finish, not a single drop of blood nor a single speck of dust had stained his clothes.

Three bodies remained on the forest floor, silently waiting to be devoured by the hungry wildlife.

Chapter 22: Extreme Joy is Followed by Extreme Sorrow

Wang Xiaonian arrived home, feeling absolutely euphoric. He had predicted that Ye Xiao would definitely die this time.

"Humph! How dare you extort me! I just played a little trick and now you're dead meat!"

Wang Xiaonian was skipping away in a completely happy mood. Wang Daniao noticed that his son was unusually buoyant and felt dumbfounded. He kept on pestering his son about his improved mood, but Wang Xiaonian remained tight-lipped.

Wang Xiaonian knew the seriousness of this event. If Ye Xiao had truly died... the Northern General would definitely create a massive tempest!

He knew that it would be in his best interest to remain silent for now!

He had restlessly spent the next two days anticipating the arrival of this good news. He had frequently daydreamed about the sorry figure of Ye Xiao's dead body and whether Ye Xiao had figured out the culprit responsible for his demise.

Hmm...

Another day had passed, and Wang Xiaonian was still waiting for the news...

And the news finally came.

A messenger had arrived from the Crown Prince's Palace, "Supervisor Wang. The Crown Prince sends for your son. There are some questions for him."

Wang Danian felt flattered that the Crown Prince had actually sent for his son. He thought, [This... this must be the start of my son's bright future.]

"Go. Speak well." Wang Danian urged his son, "This is your best chance. Do keep that in mind."

Wang Xiaonian looked confused. He was thinking, [Why is it the Crown Prince who is contacting me? Why is it not Mu Chengbai? What? Something doesn't feel right...]

...

On the other side of the city, after killing Mu Chengbai and his two guards, Ye Xiao had stayed at home for three days!

He was not trying to cover the murders nor was he afraid that people would figure it out.

When he had finally arrived back at home that day, he immediately jumped into the sphere. He had spent a total of 350 thousand taels of silver on treasures, so he couldn't wait to see the amount of spiritual qi that would fill the space inside the sphere!

Ye Xiao was truly unable to contain himself..

However, when he finally got into the space, he was stunned by what he saw.

The amount of qi in the space had actually remained the same, and its color showed no changes.

Well, there was a tiny difference - the appearance of a small amount of fog-like qi. That was all.

Ye Xiao took in a lungful of the unchanged spiritual qi in the space and was rendered totally speechless.

"It shouldn't be! The space totally changed by just absorbing one blood ginseng... Today it has absorbed a great amount of spiritual qi from all those herbal medicines. It may not be enough to expect an improvement in the quality, but there should at least be a change in quantity. How come nothing has changed at all?"

He was totally bewildered by what he saw!

It was true that it shouldn't be like this. But what could have gone wrong?

Blink! Ye Xiao suddenly thought of something and rushed to the egg. Once he arrived and saw the egg, he turned furious.

He had found out the reason for his confusion.

Endless white qi was flowing into the egg like a rapid river, and it was slowly growing bigger.

Ye Xiao was not only angry, but also shocked.

He saw that the egg was blowing up like a balloon. It was getting bigger and had increased its size from that of a goose egg to that of a small melon. It finally stopped growing, but it still continued to absorb all the spiritual qi that was flowing inside this space.

The egg's need for the spiritual qi wasn't limited by its size.

Although the egg had stopped growing, its dim surface was getting brighter and brighter. It could be seen indistinctly that some mystical patterns were appearing on its surface.

"Damn it!" Ye Xiao couldn't help cursing.

"I spent 350 thousand and got through such a rough day, and all I got for my troubles is some food for this goddamn egg! This greedy bastard has left nothing for me! And... And it actually stopped growing! That is simply a waste of my bloody energy and money!"

Just a short while ago, he was fantasizing about the huge improvement of his cultivation level, but now he was really upset.

"How much more is needed to quench your thirst?" Ye Xiao rubbed his chin and felt completely depressed.

However, at least he felt satisfied for what happened today. Actually, he even felt a bit rapturous. was because of the acquisition of the Heaven's Cyan!

Ye Xiao took out the box and thought, [If the egg dares to absorb my Heaven's Cyan too, I would not care about what creature's egg it is anymore and smash it into many pieces before I eat it!]

He couldn't help smiling when thinking about it as he murmured, "Bad egg... Bad egg... Everybody is saying that I am a bad egg. Now what I have here is the real bad... No kidding..."

When he opened the box, he sensed some joyfulness spreading through the environment of the space. The next moment, a strong force attacked the box.

BANG! The box was crushed into pieces at once, and the Heaven's Cyan burst out of the box and flew into the air.

The Heaven's Cyan was intact!

It was actually entirely absorbed!

Ye Xiao was totally stunned to see what had just happened. Then his eyes widened!

The space twisted and the purple qi was swaying. Suddenly, the space expanded. The purple qi then spread over and there it was - a brand new cyan space had appeared!

The cyan space then slowly moved adjacent to the first temple.

The accessorial space was about a dozen meters wide surrounded by white mist, and standing at its center was the Heaven's Cyan.

It looked like the Heaven's Cyan had always been there, and that it wasn't brought from somewhere else.

Everything had blended into a harmonious whole!

The next moment, a lot of white qi flowed towards the cyan space like a storm. The space was quickly filled up! And yet, the qi did not stop flowing into the Heaven's Cyan!

All Ye Xiao could see was that the Heaven's Cyan was quivering and some new leaves were growing one by one on it. Suddenly, his vision turned black, and the very next moment, when it returned, he was already outside of the sphere and back in his own room!

For a while, he was still shocked and lost in amazement!

It looked like the space could feed the Heaven's Cyan!

In addition, the Heaven's Cyan could be planted in the space safely!

That was to say that in a short time, Ye Xiao could have a consumable Tree of Cultivating Tea forever, and he could even carry it around!

Thinking of this, Ye Xiao started feeling better and quickly got through his depression. In fact, he had even started to feel euphoric.

He sat cross-legged and started cultivating!

"The sun is shining upon the sky. The purple qi rises for me."

Ye Xiao performed the basic cultivation task nine hundred times daily.

He knew that his cultivation was still at a low grade; it was still far from the point where the spiritual qi would fluently circulate within his inner body channels in order to automatically perform his cultivation. The only way for him to improve himself was through hard work!

Ye Xiao sat quietly and meditated.

He had no idea that the crown Prince's Palace was now in a mess.

But even if he knew, he wouldn't care at all!

...

Wang Xiaonian was brought to the Crown Prince's Palace. He felt that something must be wrong and his legs started to quiver.

When he got into the main house, he felt like his heart had stopped beating!

He felt extremely cold in his heart!

In the yard of the main house, three dead bodies were placed on the ground, covered in white sheets.

One of them had a deep sword-stab wound in the chest. It went through the body, from the back to the chest, and it had left a large hole. The hands were lying aside. The sleeves of the robe were uncovered, and there was a golden flower embroidered in each of the sleeves.

The golden flowers were so eye-catching.

Wang Xiaonian looked at the shiny golden flowers and nearly passed out.

It was not some ordinary flower. To Wang Xiaonian, it was the symbol of... Mu Chengbai!

The day when they hung out together, Wang Xiaonian had seen Mu Chengbai wearing this robe! He recognized the golden flowers on the sleeves at once.

"Mu Chengbai is dead?" Wang Xiaonian almost freaked out.

For him, Mu Chengbai was someone who could not be killed by anyone!

The Crown Prince was sitting still and wore a bright yellow robe. He looked down at Wang Xiaonian with a serious look and a sharp gaze.

"Wang Xiaonian?"

"Yes, your highness."

"The day before yesterday, was it you who had accompanied Mu Chengbai?" The Crown Prince spoke with a calm voice. He didn't look emotional at all.

Beside him was a girl wearing royal clothes. She was currently staring at Wang Xiaonian. She had a slim body, white skin and a pretty face, but her eyes were swollen and red, showing traces of

tears.

"Ye... Yes." Wang Xiaonian quivered.

"He is dead." The Crown Prince spoke the three words in a peaceful voice, but to Wang Xiaonian, it was like thunder to his ears.

Wang Xiaonian's pupils suddenly expanded as he felt his gallbladder breaking apart due to fear!

The Crown Prince looked at him and spoke slowly, "Tell me every detail about the events from that day."

"Ye... Yes, your highness. Hmmm..." Wang Xiaonian was quivering and could hardly speak. He then licked his lips and bit his tongue heavily so that he could calm down, "That day, I was hanging out with lord Mu. He said that he wanted some herbs, so we went to the Hui-Tian Street... When we had only just arrived, we ran into this guy named Ye Xiao."

"Ye Xiao?!" The girl sitting beside the Crown Prince suddenly looked up and stared at him with sharp eyes, "Son of the Northern General Ye Nan-Tian? One of the 'three lords' of the capital, Ye Xiao?"

"Yes, it was him." Wang Xiaonian lowered his head hastily.

He lowered his head because he was too scared to look at the

girl's sharp eyes. He didn't even dare to look her in the eyes at all.

"Go on." The girl spoke while the Crown Prince kept quiet.

Wang Xiaonian realized that this girl was most likely the sister of Mu Chengbai, the Crown Prince's wife.

"Coincidentally, Ye Xiao was there to buy some herbs too... and the thing he wanted to buy... was... was the one thing lord Mu had targeted. So... So they got into a fight..." Wang Xiaonian spoke stammeringly.

"Wait! Mu Chengbai didn't know Ye Xiao. He would never know his name as he hated the foppish-lord kind. How did he recognize Ye Xiao?" The Crown Prince interrupted.

Wang Xiaonian was stunned.

How did Mu Chengbai recognize Ye Xiao? He felt that it was now impossible for him to get out of this!

Chapter 23: A Lot Of Doubts Reveal The Chaos

“It was... urh... It was because of me... I told him about Ye Xiao...” Wang Xiaonian lowered his head and finally confessed.

“Hmm... I see. Mu Chengbai didn’t know Ye Xiao at the beginning. You hate Ye Xiao because he had extorted you. When you saw him, you encouraged Mu Chengbai to pick a quarrel with him. Is that right?” The Crown Prince said in a rather calm and peaceful voice.

But this calm and peaceful voice made Wang Xiaonian nervous. It almost made him pass out due to sheer fear.

“Y... Yes... Your highness...”

Wang Xiaonian spoke these words with great difficulty. He could clearly sense the much colder gaze from the Crown Princess. He couldn’t help quivering.

“Then what?”

“And then they had a wrangle... And then Ye Xiao suddenly h... hit Lord Mu... He knocked Lord Mu down to the floor... Then Lord Mu ordered his guards to fight back... Then Ye Xiao ran away... Then Lord Mu and his guards ran after him...”

Wang Xiaonian's face turned pale. He was sweating profusely as he stutteringly narrated the events which had taken place.

“Ye Xiao hit Lord Mu and knocked him down to the floor...” The Crown Prince frowned, “As far as I know, Ye Xiao is one of the ‘three foppish lords’. He is just a fool, living a meaningless life, only to eventually waste away... Lord Mu had reached the top of the Mortal Origin Stage... and there were even two guards with him!”

He looked at Wang Xiaonian doubtfully, “Did Ye Xiao really beat Lord Mu and knock him down to the floor?”

“Y... Yes, your highness... Th... That's true...” Wang Xiaonian stuttered. He was on the verge of fainting by the time he finished speaking. He couldn't believe that he had drawn this much bad luck.

If it hadn't been for his plans to take revenge on Ye Xiao, would Lord Mu be involved in this ordeal?

In his opinion, the useless trash, Ye Xiao, really deserved to die. But while Ye Xiao had managed to survive, the young Lord Mu, who really didn't deserve to die prematurely, had passed away instead!

Wang Xiaonian felt like he was being pranked by a god!

This... this is just absurd!

“Oh... Ok.” The Crown Prince nodded, “Go on.”

“Ye Xiao fled away and Lord Mu chased after him with his guards... and... and then I w-went ho... home...” Wang Xiaonian finally couldn’t hold his tears any longer and started to cry loudly, “Please, your highness... I know nothing about what happened next...”

“You started all this... You forced my brother into this fight... and while he was fighting against Ye Xiao, you actually just went home? And now that my brother has been killed, you dare to tell me that you don’t even know how it happened?!” The Crown Princess stared bitterly at Wang Xiaonian. Her voice sounded like she wanted to tear him apart.

“I... I... Lord Mu wanted to kill Ye Xiao and told me to hide from the public... I... There was nothing I could do, your highness...” Wang Xiaonian cried like a baby. He was so scared that it felt like his soul was trying to escape his body.

“Guards! Take this useless garbage out and chop his head off!” The Crown Princess was so angry that she immediately gave the order to the royal guards. Wang Xiaonian heard this and immediately lost consciousness.

The Crown Prince waved his hand and frowned, “Wang Xiaonian is just a remote cause. There’s no need to kill him. It may force Wang Danian to betray us if we kill his son. After all, he is leading the royal guards... Besides, I think there are still a lot of things we

don't know regarding Mu Chengbai's death."

"Uncertainties?" The Crown Princess frowned angrily, "What bloody uncertainties could there be?"

"Ye Xiao is just a stupid foppish lad. He absolutely does not possess the ability to kill Mu Chengbai!" The Crown Prince clasped his hands behind his back, "There must be a third party... that we don't know of... involved in this case."

His eyes lit up, "This case needs a detailed investigation."

"This Ye Xiao must definitely be involved!" The Crown Princess emitted a strong killing intent, "I cannot let my brother die in vain! Ye Xiao must be buried with him!"

The Crown Prince smiled bitterly, "Well we need to discuss it further. Ye Xiao is nothing, but his father, Ye Nan-Tian, holds a strong army and defends the north. He is the backbone of our kingdom. In the north, he is almost like a king. Besides, the world is currently in a great disturbance and other kingdoms are maniacal. Wars are aroused frequently and our princes are all constantly fighting to protect our kingdom... To kill the great general's son in this period of time... is truly not a smart move!"

The Crown Princess turned offish, "Chen Bangguo! We can't do this and we can't do that! So are you saying that we should just let my brother die in vain?!"

The Crown Prince sighed, “First things first, we shouldn’t focus on just one or two aspects, we need to focus on the overall situation and find the real culprit... Fine... Let’s check on Ye Xiao first. If the murderer truly is someone else and we have killed Ye Xiao without giving him a chance to explain, we will lose our only lead and let the actual murderer get away. That would really be the situation in which your brother would have died in vain.”

“Fine! I will wait for the news!” The Crown Princess humphed and walked away with a beautiful scent trailing her. She turned her head around when she got to the door and yelled, “No mercy for this bastard Wang Xiaonian!”

“Eighty cudgel beatings!” The Crown Prince frowned, “Let the god judge whether he should die or live.”

Eighty cudgel beatings could kill a normal cultivator. Wang Xiaonian was just a normal young lord who was already weak because of immoderate debauchery. Even though he had cultivated, more or less, it was not worth mentioning.

If he really got the eighty cudgel beatings, he would absolutely die. So after thinking for awhile, he said, “Let Wang Danian carry this out!”

Let Wang Danian carry out the punishment to his own son... How could the lad die in such a situation?

“Humph!” The Crown Princess was pissed and left.

The Crown Prince made sure his wife was gone. He clapped and asked, “How’s your investigation?”

A man in black humbly came in and answered, “The whole thing is generally the same with what Wang Xiaonian said, but there is something weird.”

The Crown Prince frowned and didn’t say anything.

The man went on, “First of all, the witnesses said that they had seen Ye Xiao knock down Mu Chengbai. It is weird because it is impossible that Ye Xiao has the capability to do so.

So I checked the body of Mu Chengbai and found that... his dantian was wounded. But we all know that it was the hit on his back that took his life; it was a very clean hit...

So what happened to his dantian is suspicious. It is obvious... that someone had blocked his dantian, that’s why Ye Xiao could knock him down... Whoever blocked his dantian is absolutely a world-class elite cultivator!”

“A world-class elite cultivator...” The Crown Prince murmured as he paced around and nodded, “What else?”

“Yes, your highness. When Mu Chengbai was chasing after Ye Xiao, Ye Xiao didn’t get very far. He hid behind some street debris after he turned around a corner, and when he saw Lord Mu and the two guards run by, he immediately went home. There are a lot of

witnesses to this occurrence...”

It seemed like Ye Xiao had somehow mislead the spectators to believe in his escape which had clearly worked.

The Crown Prince frowned, feeling increasingly puzzled by these developments.

The man in black continued, “But Lord Mu hadn’t noticed this. So he ran all the way to the ‘a hill, a forest and a lake’ which is where he and his two guards were killed. There are still a lot of unknown factors. I can’t quite figure it out yet.”

The Crown Prince nodded, “What?”

“The fatal wounds on the three of them are all very clean... The two guards were cut at the same time, and the wrist of one guard was completely broken. From this, I concluded that the murderer seized the sword from one of the guards and killed both of the guards at the same time! It is absolutely not a move that could be performed by an ordinary cultivator. Even a man who has reached the top of the Earth Origin Realm is incapable of doing this. The murderer is more like...” The man in black hesitated for a second and said, “...like an actual swordmaster... A sword master of the Sky Origin Stage!”

The man in black felt cold sweat dripping down his back as he spoke out the last few words.

The Crown Prince raised his eyebrows and looked up, “A swordmaster of the Sky Origin Stage... Are you sure?”

“Yes, your highness.” The man in black lowered his head.

The Crown Prince was silent for a while, and then he spoke, “So... This all had nothing to do with Ye Xiao?”

The man in black hesitated slightly before he answered, “It is uncertain.”

“If there is a third force that got to Cheng-Bai, to whom does it belong? For what reason did they kill him?” The Crown Prince asked as he was absorbed in these thoughts; within his voice, a strong sense of horror could be discerned. The man in black quietly listened to the Crown Prince and humbly stood aside.

The Crown Prince was just talking to himself. He didn’t want any answers for the question. And the man in black didn’t dare to answer it.

There were too many variables and uncertainties in this whole ordeal.

With half-closed eyes, the Crown Prince calmly ordered, “Start from Ye Xiao. Move the investigation along from there...”

“Yes, your highness.”

“Anything else you might be working on... should be suspended.”

The Crown Prince turned around elegantly, flicked the sleeves of his bright yellow robe and left calmly.

But the man in black was extremely nervous. He had been following the Crown Prince for many years now, so he knew him better than anyone else. When the Crown Prince showed an unusually calm attitude, his heart would, in fact, resemble a raging inferno!

He had already deeply etched this into his mind.

But he couldn't understand why the Crown Prince had told him to suspend all his other cases.

The man in black felt cold sweat dripping on his back. He clearly understood that it was very possible that in the near future, endless amounts of blood would dye the sky and land of his beloved capital dark red!

There were also words that he didn't dare to tell the Crown Prince – Even though Ye Xiao might not be the one to have taken Mu Chengbai's life, this didn't make the investigation any easier. Besides the other princes, there were also another eight noble clans that would be very happy to see Mu Chengbai's early demise.

But all the man in black could do was to keep these words deep

inside his heart.

...

At this moment, Ye Xiao was sitting cross-legged as he carefully started to feel the change and increase of the spiritual qi inside his dantian. This was something he enjoyed very much because it gave him an intense feeling of getting stronger. As a matter of fact, this was a feeling every cultivator would crave for!

While Ye Xiao was enjoying this wonderful feeling, the steward quietly entered his room and made a gentle cough.

Ye Xiao opened his eyes at once and asked, "What is it?"

The steward was very surprised when he saw Ye Xiao sitting in a cultivating pose. He then said, "My lord, there is one thing that needs your affirmation."

"What?" Ye Xiao frowned.

"Was it you who killed Mu Chengbai?" The steward looked at Ye Xiao as he asked directly.

This question, which was asked with such a peaceful tone, really stunned Ye Xiao.

Every time Ye Xiao met this steward, he found him more and

more mysterious; he was truly an interesting fellow. He was definitely not a simple man!

Chapter 24: Didn't You Say You Wouldn't Get in Trouble?

"What Mu Chengbai? Who is Mu Chengbai?" Ye Xiao's opened really wide, and they were even filled with curiosity as he looked at the steward.

It was only reasonable that Ye Xiao would play innocent. After all, the man he had killed was not only the brother-in-law of the crown prince, but was also from the Mu clan - one of the eight noble clans! There were things that could be done in the shadows, but one should never openly talk about it.

"Mu Chengbai, the young master of the Mu clan, the older brother of the crown princess, and brother-in-law of the crown prince." The steward spoke slowly and stared deeply into Ye Xiao's eyes, "Three days ago, you got into a disagreement with him which turned violent... Eventually, you ran away and he quickly chased after you... What happened after that... Nobody knows."

He stopped for a second as he tried to spot some kind of change in Ye Xiao's behavior, but shortly after, he continued, "What everybody knows is that you came back safely and Mu Chengbai died."

Ye Xiao deviously smiled, "Well, if no one knows what happened, then it certainly doesn't have to be me who killed him, right? If I were to be blamed for the deaths of everyone who got killed secretly, then I would be a mass murderer! Besides... Do you really think I am capable of killing anyone?"

The steward stood calmly with a straight back and said in an almost inaudible whisper, "A perfect defense, young master... However, I know that it is you."

Hearing these words, Ye Xiao couldn't help but frown.

This steward was acting too calmly and seemed too certain of his words.

Before Ye Xiao could clearly think it over, the steward continued, "Let's put aside the topic of who made the killing blows, you're definitely going to be investigated, so we should make proper preparations for when this investigation happens. If something unexpected happens, you'll only be able to feel regret in your afterlife.

Even though your defense is perfect, you're still the prime suspect in this case. Mu Chengbai isn't just some random farmer's son, he's a young master from the Mu clan and the older brother of the crown princess. At the end of the day, they'll have to catch someone. If they failed to find a scapegoat, that someone might as well be you."

Since Ye Xiao was collecting his thoughts, he could only reply with an, "Oh?"

"That's why I wish to discuss this with you, young master. I suggest that we order the 36 blood guards to send you to your father in the north." The steward spoke calmly, "You are the only

son of the general! You are the heir! You can't die!"

Ye Xiao smiled and asked, "To the north? To hide from trouble by using my father's might?"

"Yes." The steward answered humbly, "It is currently too dangerous to linger around here any longer. I am afraid that everyone in this house might meet an early demise if we stay." The steward sighed.

He felt completely speechless and inconsolable about this situation. Not even two days had passed since this brat had promised him that he would definitely 'never make any trouble'. But almost before this sentence had left Ye Xiao's mouth, he had already gone ahead and slaughtered the brother-in-law of the crown prince... If this couldn't be considered 'making trouble', then what could?

Even in a scenario where Ye Xiao didn't kill anybody, he'd still be the most obvious suspect. This fact alone was unbearable for his family. If the crown prince actually wanted to kill him, he would only have to lift a finger, and there would be nothing anyone could do about it.

Besides, there was also an extremely powerful force behind all this - the Mu clan!

The steward really didn't know what to say and thought, [What is there I can say... For god's sake... Was it that hard to behave well for a couple of days? And here I actually believed that you had

reformed yourself and that you had prepared to be a good lad for once... I even proudly send a letter to the general about this, but even before this letter will reach him, you've brought such a calamity upon yourself!]

"Nah..." Ye Xiao said.

As these words reached the steward, he kept himself composed on the outside, but in his mind, he was actually seriously complaining, [This whole thing is already a huge trouble for us, and if that wasn't enough, you actually dare to speak these words without a care in the world!] He almost fell over as he was completely gobsmacked, "No?!"

"Nope, not going..." Ye Xiao spoke peacefully, "If I were to run off to my father every time a little problem came my way, then how could I possibly call myself a man?"

The steward's eyes lit up as he stared incredulously at Ye Xiao.

[What is going on?! Is this really my young master? At what point in time did he grow a pair?] He thought.

"Urgh... It is good to have a strong sense of responsibility..." This was the first time that the steward had seen this young lord act like a man, so he wanted to give him a word or two of praise. However, he then quickly turned solemn, "But you have to know which battles to pick, and this one right now is certainly not the right fight. We should start by preparing countermeasures for all possible situations which may occur."

He looked at Ye Xiao wishfully and thought, [Well... If you've actually grown up just a little bit... then please figure out a plan as perfect as your defense and share it with me.]

The steward still kept himself composed on the outside, but there was a raging storm of worry brewing in his heart. However, he had already made his decision long ago: To sacrifice the lives of the 36 blood guards alongside his own to safely escort his young master to his father in the north!

"Hmm... There isn't anything special that should be prepared. Just let things run their own course..." Ye Xiao humphed and continued, "It isn't really all that big of a deal... Firstly, there is no evidence whatsoever. Secondly, I am nothing more than an unlikely suspect at the moment. Thirdly, the crown prince can't afford to start a brawl with one of the great generals of the kingdom if he wishes to become king one day. And lastly..."

The steward's eyes immediately lit up as he felt Ye Xiao was really growing up to the point where he even started to speak wisely, so he eagerly asked, "What is this last reason?"

"Lastly..." Ye Xiao humphed and rolled his eyes, "If they are really going to mess around with me and manage to piss me off, I'll just kill the crown prince too. His death will then bring peace and everything will then be solved as well!"

As the last few words left Ye Xiao's mouth, the steward felt like he was going to faint.

[What the hell is wrong with this guy?!?!?!]

The first three reasons had made sense and made Ye Xiao seem like he had actually grown up, but when the last reason finally left his the mouth, all the steward wanted to do was to curse loudly at this foppish lord!

[What a bastard! If this can be called a plan, then jumping off a hill completely naked would be a good plan to learn to fly. If these words of yours were to be spread to the public, it wouldn't even matter if you actually killed Mu Chengbai... You'd have your head chopped off and sliced in eight hundred pieces anyway! You fxxking little shit! Fxxk! Fxxk! Fxxk!] The steward's mind at the moment was in complete panic and disarray.

"Ohh... Noo... Ohhhhh..." The usual calm and composed steward now felt extremely depressed and was actually stomping his feet on the floor. After hearing the last few words of Ye Xiao, he had quickly casted aside the idea that this young master would actually come up with a good plan, so he depressingly said, "Just forget it... I'll go arrange the guards to escort you right away!"

"No. I don't need that. Really." Ye Xiao looked very confident as he said these words, "Three days of protection from some guards will be enough to ensure our safety..."

He paced around a bit and eventually said, "Arrange for some people to spread around some gossip. Just let them say... that I actually killed the crown prince's brother-in-law and that the

crown prince has gone crazy, looking to chop me into a million pieces! That should do the trick. Do make sure that this will be the leading story in the capital within the shortest possible time!"

Shock filled the steward's face before he quickly praised his young master, "Nice! Good plan..." But as these words left his mouth, he frowned, "If we do it like this, then the crown prince will not dare to act boldly in bright daylight, but the possible stealthy attacks will be hard to defend against... Besides... even if we survive the actions taken by the crown prince, the Mu clan is also looking for the murderer, and they're much more ferocious and dangerous than the crown prince."

Ye Xiao looked at the steward and carelessly said, "Well, nothing that can be done about that right now... People will do their best to slaughter us. We either move our heads forward and face them like men, or we move our heads back and hide in the shadows like little chickens... Why are you still so anxious? Who could have possibly predicted Mu Chengbai would have this kind of luck and died just like that? Misfortune loves me!"

The steward was completely gobsmacked and thought, [Oh... You're trying to say that Mu Chengbai is actually luckier than you are? His body has been partly eaten by wild animals before it was found, and who knows how much it has rotten by now... At the very least, you are still alive...]

A while ago, the steward had looked completely confident that his young master was the killer of Mu Chengbai. This was, however, only a show as he truly couldn't believe that his young 'foppish' master could actually have the capabilities to kill Mu

Chengbai.

Mu Chengbai might not be anything special, but for the steward, the strength of Mu Chengbai couldn't be mentioned in the same sentence as Ye Xiao's strength - Ye Xiao was just a foppish black sheep who enjoyed women more than he enjoyed cultivation; his strength was absolutely rubbish!

The steward was confident in his knowledge concerning Ye Xiao. He was of the opinion that if Ye Xiao could actually kill Mu Chengbai, with a single attack - the heir of the Mu clan... then the Mu clan should just disband already...

He was trying to collect his thoughts when he suddenly heard his young master murmur a few words, "If the Mu clan dares to piss me off, then watch me annihilate them..."

If the earlier dialogues weren't reason enough for the steward to faint, then the line spoken right now definitely was! In his long life, he had met all kinds of people, but never had he met someone who could gloat like his young master was doing right now.

[Do you even know how powerful the Mu clan is? If you did... you wouldn't dare to murmur those words or even think about them for that matter?! You won't die if you stop boasting...] The steward was thinking.

Sadly, the steward would never come to know that Ye Xiao would not hesitate to deal with the Mu Clan if they came looking for trouble.

...

As the plan was pretty straightforward, the steward immediately went into action. He quickly formed a team to spread the rumor that Ye Xiao had killed Mu Chengbai. The story they spread was purposely exaggerated and consisted about eighty percent truth with some lies hidden in between. Whoever heard this rumor dismissed it quickly with words like, "Ye Xiao? The foppish lord Ye Xiao? The crown prince believes that this guy can actually kill Mu Cheng Bai, like really... is he stupid?"

"What the fxxk! Can't you come up with better jokes?!"

"Ha ha, that dude? Really? How is that even possible?"

"Pah hah ha. How highly can some people think of that foppish lord?!"

"I'd already find it hard to believe if you told me that he killed a chicken, but you are actually claiming that he somehow managed to kill an expert cultivator... Seriously dude.... Go home. Even if a donkey struck my head and knocked all sense out of it, I still wouldn't believe you..."

With these reactions, the public was actually defending Ye Xiao from the crown prince. If the crown prince would still make a move on him, then he would become the laughingstock of the capital!

Once he had become the laughingstock of the capital... his authority would be questioned, 'How could such a dumb lad become our king?' 'If he couldn't even spot the vivid truth in front of him, then how many people would find an unjust end by his hands?' 'Today, the crown prince can't see the simple truth that is right in front of him and actually killed the son of one of our great generals... When he becomes king one day.... Is he going to kill a minister if he farts?'

Even though the rumors were doing their job, the steward still went ahead and secretly arranged for the 36 blood guards to protect his young master - having them ready to defend Ye Xiao at a moment's notice. And if all else failed, he could also use these guards to lead Ye Xiao out of the capital and towards General Ye's army in the north!

The sun hadn't even reached its highest point, yet the rumor was spreading like wildfire. People were discussing it throughout the entire capital!

"Hey, have you heard? The Lord Ye, one of the 'three lords', has really outdone himself this time!"

"What did he do this time?..."

"It is said that he slaughtered the crown prince's brother-in-law..."

"Wait... Seriously?! What exactly happened? Quickly! Tell me

everything!"

"It is said that..."

"Aha... Hmm? Wait a minute... No... You just said that Ye Xiao has killed the crown prince's brother-in-law... Isn't that fellow from the Mu clan?? Isn't he even their heir? An expert cultivator?"

"Well... Yes..."

"You bloody fool! Even a donkey isn't as stupid as you are... Don't you know what Ye Xiao is like? I might believe you if you told me Ye Xiao killed a beggar, but you actually claim he killed an expert cultivator from a noble clan... I will never believe this. Not even if lightning would kill you right now..."

"Hey dude! Seriously? Mind your language! Why do I have to die..."

"You bloody deserve it, you fool! Someone told you that something impossible happened... And you just believed it like that... Not only that... You're actually spreading it! If I ever feel the need to punch someone, I will definitely look for you... You have really left me speechless dude... Did you get your brain kicked in by a donkey or something?"

"Yeahh... It is odd..."

...

"This is most likely the worst scam in history..."

"Possibly..."

"Ye Xiao is pure garbage. Perhaps if the claim was that he raped Mu Chengbai, then I would believe it... But this... Hehehehehe..."
The man let out a disdainful laughter.

"Absolutely true..."

"Hey, perhaps the crown prince is looking to mess around with our northern military forces? So he's just finding some excuse to do so..."

"Hm! Well... That'd really be something. Heh, heh..."

"Silence!"

"Hush..."

Chapter 25: The Blue Gelid Qi

"Well... I don't believe in this fake information anyway. But why does everybody keep talking about it?"

"You bloody know nothing! That is the imperial's trick to go against Ye Xiao"

"Oh wow... This young lord is truly unlucky. I am sure he doesn't dare to kill a chicken. Now he has actually been set up for killing an expert cultivator. He becomes a murderer... heh, heh... I really have no words to say about this obvious trap..."

"You know nothing! To kill someone, only an excuse is sufficient..."

"That's right..."

"But what our prince is doing is truly a little bit over the top"

"Ya, I know..."

...

"Stop spreading nonsense! You mean Ye Xiao could actually kill Mu Chengbai? How ridiculous!"

"That's what people are saying..."

"A rumor is a rumor. Is your brain located in your ass? If we trust the 'rumor', what should we do about the 'truth'? You pig!"

...

"Did this ridiculous thing... actually happen? Ye Xiao killing Mu Chengbai... You actually believe that? Hahahahahahaha..."

...

The rumor was spreading as fast as lightning all over Chen-Xing City, and it kept on spreading further and further at an unimaginable pace!

This event suddenly became a joke everywhere in the capital.

The Crown Prince's Palace had been preparing to take action, but then they were suddenly muddled because of this unforeseen and overwhelming rumor!

"At the moment, this rumor has caused quite a stir in the capital... If we insist on going for Ye Xiao at present, it will be difficult. I have a lot of misgivings about this." A middle-aged counselor was sitting opposite the Crown Prince. He smiled bitterly, "Besides, I heard that the king is also paying attention to this event."

The counselor's words seemed to purposely hint towards a certain direction.

"My father is also paying attention..." The Crown Prince smiled and said lightly, "It seems that... there is a tricky and capable person in the General's House who is pulling the strings. They stirred up the public's opinion and trapped us in the scruples... Interesting. Heh..."

"So, we have only two options." The counselor calmly said.

"Go with the second one." The Crown Prince didn't even ask what the two options were and spoke decisively, "Follow the normal procedure. Let the ministry of penalty do the investigation... Try to reduce a big trouble into a small one, and a small one into nothing. At least make it look good at the official level... After all, we need to consider the reaction of General Ye. The first option is too uncompromising and we can't do that!"

The counselor nodded, "Yes, your highness. I got it."

That was right. The Crown Prince only ordered everything to look nice from the government's perspective, but he didn't mention anything about the involvement of clans or about the common folk.

Of course he didn't need to consider about those two yet.

The counselor had left for a while and the Crown Prince was still

sitting there quietly.

His eyes flashed as he was murmured, "Mortal? Mortal world? ..."

And then he suddenly let out a chilling laugh, "The glory, splendor, wealth and rank in the mortal world are wonderful things that those boring guys will never understand! They only run after the so-called ultimate goal! Even if the mortal life is just an experience spanning a limited time, at least I will taste every bit of it. If you are not a fish, then how do you know what constitutes the enjoyment of fishes... How dare you talk such nonsense that we are nonentities..."

He stopped laughing and stood up, and then he left with long strides.

...

Ye Xiao was sitting cross-legged and was feeling the East-rising Purple Qi silently circulate inside his body. It was a wonderful feeling that comforted him with each passing second, and he was truly enjoying it so much that he completely forgot about the passage of time and neglected to wake up.

One after another, strands of spiritual qi were entering his body through his skin.

When he thought about the time he killed Mu Chengbai, he had mixed feelings.

He understood that under the present circumstances, killing Mu Chengbai was really a stupid move, because a lot of people had seen him fight against Mu Chengbai that day. They had witnessed it personally. It was absolutely impossible to wipe out the witnesses. He knew that he shouldn't do it, but he did it anyway. That meant that he had also put himself into a very dangerous situation.

But he had to do it. Even though he knew it was a bad idea, he still went for it!

Because he could feel that after being reborn in this body, the former owner's personality and instincts were still influencing him.

And the former Ye Xiao's personality showed irresoluteness and cowardice.

He had no determination nor any sense of responsibility! All these foppish stupid young lords were in the same situation.

Ye Xiao even felt that, as of this moment, he was way inferior to his previous invincible self.

Occasionally, he even feels that he was no longer a true cultivator.

He knew that he couldn't let this situation escalate any further, so he used this opportunity to bring about a great danger for

himself so as to arouse the instincts of his prior life.

He wanted to completely get rid of the impact of the former Ye Xiao!

And because of that, although he knew that it wouldn't do him any good, he still did it with decisiveness.

That was to revive his survival instincts in the face of extreme danger and to sharpen himself by overcoming these perilous situations!

While he was collecting his thoughts, the spiritual qi in his body suddenly started to boil, and then it gradually pulsed along towards his Jing and Mai. Ye Xiao didn't dare to be careless, so he calmed his mind and restrained the pulses step-by-step. However the amount of spiritual qi going haywire was too much for him to possibly regulate, and he started to feel sick. Ye Xiao still worked very hard to perform the supreme spiritual method, but the longer he cultivated, the worse he felt. The spiritual qi in his body was refusing to calm down.

Ye Xiao was experienced in cultivating, and that was why he could remain calm in such a situation. The boiling spiritual qi, although hazardous, was also a fantastic opportunity. If he stopped the East-rising Purple Qi from rampaging, it would gradually slow down and eventually clear away. After that, the danger would pass. If he decided to bear with it, the possible benefits would definitely be tremendous. But if he succumbed to the boiling spiritual qi, his Jing and Mai would definitely be damaged.

If Ye Xiao followed the conventional knowledge about the principles of cultivation, he should have stopped cultivating the moment the spiritual qi in his body started to boil. But this time, he suddenly felt inspired - actually, it was his intuition; if he stopped now, he would miss out on a golden opportunity!

He had to choose between experience and intuition, and the Xiao Monarch decided to go with the latter!

He gritted his teeth and continued cultivating!

But it didn't get better at all. Instead, he felt that his dantian was bulging and was on the verge of exploding. If the continuous accumulation of spiritual qi inside his Jing and Mai continued, it would certainly explode!

Ye Xiao was terrified.

The current situation was beyond his knowledge. The result of this gamble was uncertain!

Did this mean that his intuition was wrong?!

But, just when he was about to consider stopping, the boiling spiritual qi in his dantian calmed down!

After a while, the boiling spiritual qi that settled suddenly flowed

back towards his dantian. At the same time, an unbearable piercing pain coursed throughout his body. Ye Xia instantly blacked out after spitting out a mouthful of blood!

In an instant, everything in front of him was dyed red with blood!

The next moment, the rolling spiritual qi in his dantian oddly separated into two parts; one was red while the other was blue!

Ye Xiao realized that these were two types of spiritual qi with different attributes.

The red qi contained the power of scorching hot flames; it felt like it could incinerate everything. And the blue qi contained a power of intense coldness; it felt like it could freeze anything.

Were these two options for him to choose from?

One stayed while the other disappeared?

Or could they both coexist within him; [one representing yin and the other, yang?](#)

Ye Xiao frowned; it was really a tough choice.

The power of the red scorching qi was surely good, but the power of the blue gelid qi also had its own advantages.

Ye Xiao didn't want to give up on either of them.

He thought about it for a while longer and finally decided to mainly cultivate the power of the blue gelid qi.

He was still in one of the realms under the same firmament as his previous world. He was known for his scorching hot attacks in his previous life, and he had even reincarnated in a body which shared the same name.

If he managed to draw the attention of the three factions and got identified as the Xiao Monarch, it would certainly result in his death; he would never be able to resist them in his present condition. He should do everything in his power to prevent them from finding out about his identity as the late Xiao Monarch before he became strong enough to oppose them.

Basically, if a cultivator lost all his cultivation and had to rebuild it, he would choose to cultivate the method and attribute that he was familiar with; he would never choose to cultivate in another attribute, let alone a conflicting one.

Therefore, the ultra cold attribute was a perfect mask for Ye Xiao.

In fact, there was another reason why Ye Xiao chose to cultivate the gelid qi.

The East-rising Purple Qi actually held a pure yang attribute, but at the moment, it showed a completely contradicting attribute. Due to the profoundness of the East-rising Purple Qi, Ye Xiao thought that this gelid qi must be something extraordinarily powerful.

With that, the decision was made. Ye Xiao tried transferring the power of the gelid qi. He had only just started to guide it, but then it had suddenly moved quickly to fill up his dantian!

Simultaneously, the red scorching qi also started to disappear from his body.

And then a wave of gelid qi rushed out from his dantian and ran through every inch of his Jing and Mai. Wherever this gelid qi spread, the originally mild spiritual qi was immediately replaced by the gelid qi!

While the attribute of the qi was switching, Ye Xiao actually felt his mind clear up like it never had before!

There were streams of the clear power running around each and every inch of his body.

Ye Xiao tried reaching a finger to tap on the chair nearby lightly.

A wave of frost suddenly burst out from his fingers and froze the chair until it cracked!

The power of the finger tap didn't stop, and the chill had even rapidly spread in the air.

Within the blink of an eye, the entire room turned into his own little ice cave.

However, the coldness brought by the gelid qi brought an incredible comfort to Ye Xiao. He didn't feel cold; rather, he felt an endless pleasure surrounding him.

Yin and Yang : In Chinese philosophy, yin and yang describes how opposite or contrary forces are actually complementary. In this context, Yin represents the blue gelid qi, and Yang is used for the red scorching qi.

Chapter 26: The Investigation Begins

Retracting his finger, Ye Xiao stared at the cracks that he had just created and felt that it was unbelievable.

He couldn't believe that he had caused such a significant damage with just a tap of his finger!

He had just casually used the power of the gelid qi a little bit. That was all!

He stayed silent for a while and let out a sigh.

"This power of the gelid qi could be a nice protection for me." Ye Xiao realized this and got lost in thoughts, "But... what should I do next..."

Meanwhile, he vaguely heard some noises coming from outside the front door.

The next moment, the steward ran over in a hurry, "My lord, the government office of Chen-Xing City has sent some people. They want to ask you to cooperate with them to investigate a case. I think it must be the case of Mu Chengbai's death."

Ye Xiao remained calm as he spoke, "Let them in. Lead them to the antechamber and bring them some tea."

The steward nodded his head and hurried off.

Ye Xiao preened himself a bit and then walked to the antechamber. As he stepped into the antechamber, he saw three men in official uniforms sitting there and drinking tea. The three of them gave off an uncomfortable feeling, as if they were a little restrained and nervous.

After all, this is the house of the Northern General, and they were about to make an investigation against the young lord of this place...

Every man who served in the house was an experienced ex-soldier. When they learnt about the purpose of these three officers, their normal gaze naturally turned into something more intimidating as they quickly started emitting a strong killing intent.

The expressions in their eyes were... unfriendly.

The three officers were terrified. They felt like they had come across a bunch of hungry tigers. They were very uncomfortable and nearly started to shiver. It was truly not easy for them to sit there instead of rushing out.

Unknowingly, beads of sweat had started to appear on their foreheads, and they really felt like they would lose the control of their bladder at any moment.

When Ye Xiao leisurely arrived, they felt extremely relieved and thanked the gods!

"Lord Ye!" One of the officers instantly stood up, but as he did, he felt his knees go weak, so he immediately sat back down on the chair. He had been resisting the killing intent released by those ex-soldiers and had nearly used up all of his energy, so when he suddenly stood up, he had become completely powerless.

"What is it?" Ye Xiao paced over lightly as if floating in the air and then sat on the chair. He sat down, semi-lying like he had no spine and raised one of his legs up. While everybody thought that he would cross his legs, he just laid the leg right on the armrest and let it dangle.

Apparently he looked perfectly abhorrent without any presence. His eyes were dim and spiritless and he had a voluptuary look.

The officer sighed in his mind and thought, [Look at this brat... I really don't know what to say. It was truly a disaster for the general to have a son like him.]

"Yes, Lord Ye. We are just following orders and have absolutely no intention of offending you." The officer said meekly, "There is a case that we need to ask you about."

"Fine. Say it." Ye Xiao tilted his head lazily and started to dig the dirt from under his nails.

"Well... Mu Chengbai... Young lord Mu was murdered. I think you should know about this..."

"Mu Chengbai? Who is that? Do I know him?" Ye Xiao raised his head and looked confused.

He was actually audacious enough to ask who Mu Chengbai was... Everyone felt like Ye Xiao was trying to tell a bad joke.

"Eh-hem..." The officer, who turned out to be the leader of the three, showed a stunned look on his face and coughed, "Well, I'd like to tell you... Mu Chengbai was the man with whom you fought several days ago... It is said that you were very brave that day, and that you had actually beat him up. Very admirable..."

Ye Xiao pretended that he took a tumble, "Oh that bastard! He was trying to steal from me. He deserved to be punched... Hmm? What? He's dead? Nice! Who killed him? I would like to reward the killer..."

Then he showed an interested look, "Hmmm wait. You are here to ask me about it now... Aha, did I kill the bastard? Oh I see... That day after I beat him up, he got home and his internal injury worsened, and then he died, right? That means... I am the one who killed him? Ahahahaha, I have improved again! I am so strong..."

He sounded completely narcissistic and showed no trace of nervousness.

The officer was left speechless and coughed again, "You are mistaken... That afternoon, somebody found him dead in the forest... That's all..."

"What? I did not kill him?" Ye Xiao sighed disappointedly and then got angry, "Fxxk it! Why wasn't it me? That bastard had seriously pissed me off and I really wanted to arrange a group of mercenaries to go and kill him! Humph! How dare he! He should know who is taking charge here in Chen-Xing City! He should know how great I am and what a mistake it is to mess with me! He was digging over the king's head and dragging teeth from a tiger's mouth! It is really too easy for him to die like this!"

The officer was stunned and thought, [You really dare talking! That was the heir of the Mu clan and the brother-in-law of the Crown Prince! Who's the wrong guy to mess with? You actually talk so big... If he was alive, you would be the one to get killed. Now you are actually saying that... it is too easy for him to die like this...]

He then licked his lips and was preparing to speak, but Ye Xiao continued to say angrily, "Nice kill! Do you know who did it? Have you found him? I will reward him. He did help me a lot! He has saved my precious time. How could I not reward him?"

The three officers were all speechless and thought, [Why are we here with you if we have already found the murderer?]

"Please, my lord, tell me about the fight from that day in detail. We will need to report it to the upper office." The officer smiled bitterly and finally told him of their purpose.

"Report? What report? You don't think I killed the guy, do you?" Ye Xiao squinted his eyes, "I did want to kill him badly, but somebody took it over... Humph, if that bastard wasn't dead yet, I must kill him myself!"

The officers were left speechless again.

Then they tried very hard to persuade him, and the steward also helped them a little bit, so Ye Xiao reluctantly described the details of what had happened that day. When he was describing how he punched Mu Chengbai, he was in such high spirits that he actually stood up and started reliving the fight. He vividly showed them how he punched, kicked, dodged, jumped and landed on Mu Chengbai...

He represented the story like it was an extremely wonderful duel between two supreme masters.

All in all, he tried to depict a tale where he, Lord Ye, had been fighting doggedly and unyieldingly, and he was a super powerful, handsome, and elegant world-class expert cultivator... while Mu Chengbai had been beaten up like a drowning dog, and finally, the great Lord Ye had showed mercy to him and let him keep his pathetic little life...

Everyone felt like sweating when hearing his story!

Who didn't know that he escaped like a dog with his tail between his legs from that fight?

He was so shameless that he described himself like a great hero... They completely looked down on him within their hearts!

"I see... We understand it all now. We will report this to the upper office right now." The officer was so awkward that he asked to leave right away.

"Hold on! What are you in a hurry for? I am not done yet..." Lord Ye was just on a roll. How could he let them get away?

"We already have a clear picture about this whole ordeal... Lord Ye, you are a diligent man, I think it is better for you to go and get some rest..." The officers then rushed out of the General's House, like escaping from death, while shouting, "We will have to bother you another time, young Lord Ye..."

"Urh... Fine. Take care." Ye Xiao didn't move at all and was still lying on the chair.

The servants guided the three officers out and then everyone left the antechamber except for the steward.

"It is so weird." The steward frowned, "I thought that they would at least take you away for the investigation, but they actually just asked some questions here in your house. Why would they operate like this..."

Ye Xiao humphed and said in serene tone, "It is just the balance of

political powers. Now the other princes are all grown up and every single one of them is eyeing the throne... There are two of them who are holding and developing powerful forces already in both the government and the martial clans... The Crown Prince is at the risk of losing his crown. How could he possibly mess with such a powerful military force like us just for a dead brother-in-law?"

"Furthermore, we have the kick-ass rumor spreading out there." The steward added and smiled.

Ye Xiao nodded, "True. For the Crown Prince... Mu Chengbai was a brother-in-law when he was alive, but he is just a dead body now that he is dead. That's all... Hiahia, hiahiahia..."

He sneered and said no more. He went straight back to his backyard to continue his cultivation.

"Something still doesn't feel right though..." The steward stopped smiling and murmured, "The Crown Prince surely wouldn't let this go so easily... Could there be another strike coming from him?"

He spoke nervously with his hands clasped behind his back, "The message to the general should've gotten through Huang-Long Guan and reached the desert by now. The message will arrive in the hands of the general in two days tops, and it will take at least another six days to get his reply... If anything goes wrong during these eight days..."

He sighed deeply and hurriedly got out of the room. He told the guards to increase the security, especially at night, and to stay

vigilant...

"Those from the government may be restrained and scrupulous, but those from the martial clans... they are truly impossible to defend against effectively..." His eyes showed anxiety.

"The next few months should be filled with chaotic events."

The steward, who always showed a calm demeanor, now felt his hands full of cold sweat. He truly felt insecure about keeping his young master safe.

...

Chapter 27: The Mysterious Man in White Robes

The rumor was still causing unrest within the capital.

But while all of this was happening, an oddly isolated courtyard seemed to be completely unaffected by the chaos outside.

This courtyard was located at the central area of the capital. It wouldn't be a lie if one was to say that, in this place, an inch of land was worth a tael of gold.

This courtyard house was built within a pervasive bamboo forest surrounded by a small continuous mountain range on three sides. This meant that the house could only be approached from a single direction.

People who could purchase such land must have very powerful background and an infinite amount of wealth. The person who did purchase it had actually turned twenty percent of the land into small mountains; seventy percent of it into a bamboo forest, and he had only used the remaining ten percent to build a sequestered courtyard.

The extravagant spending done by this person was really shocking!

But using a fortune wisely almost always brings about a considerable return!

In the courtyard, the wind was blowing gently, causing the bamboo forest to peacefully rustle, bringing about a sense of serenity, like a poetic illusion.

At the moment, along with the wind in the forest, there was a distinct ringing sound from a string instrument; it was as if the sound was coming from from the heavens.

The sound should have been contained within the heavens, but it was actually being heard in the mortal world!

In the courtyard, there stood a zither on its stand. A man in a white robes was sitting in a wheelchair, and his fingers were dancing on the strings of the zither. The melodious sound of the zither was floating around like a gentle stream.

A stick of incense was alight in front of the zither stand. Continuous caesious smoke was slowly rising and then circling in the air until it scattered.

There were two girls in white standing behind the man.

It looked like a wonderful painting, the three of them; one was sitting while two were standing in this beautiful scenery.

Even if a large group of enemies came over right now, they would not have the heart to break this scene.

The breeze was gently caressing their soft robes.

Suddenly, a figure in black with blue stripes appeared in the forest. A man crossed the forest like the wind and stepped on the floor ever so lightly. Although the man was peacefully moving, he must be in extreme haste as he had moved very fast. However, when he saw the scene in front of him, he said nothing and just silently stood aside. He didn't even make a sound when he breathed.

He didn't dare to take deep breaths because he was afraid to disturb the peacefulness of this scene.

Although an unexpected individual had arrived, the man in white kept his calm demeanor. His face was fair like white jade. He looked lost in the music. His fingers were moving really fast, but they seemed extremely comfortable on the zither. His eyes were nearly closed, and his pretty eyebrows were naturally stretching to his sideburns. It looked like he hadn't noticed the man who had rushed through his forest and into his courtyard, and was now standing in front of him.

- Zeng! - Finally, the last note was heard as the man in white stopped playing the zither. Meanwhile, the magical music from the zither was still lingering around in the air.

The man in white slowly put his hand down and took a deep breath. He closed his eyes and looked up, letting his long black hair sweep down naturally.

The man in black stepped forward preparing to talk, but the man in white stretched his hand forward and waved lightly.

The man in black humbly stepped back.

After a long silence, the man in white opened his eyes and spoke peacefully, "Everything in the universe has a soul. My zither stopped; it means that the soul of the song I was playing is gone. To feel the sound's soul connect with our souls... is respecting all livings... and is also respecting ourselves greatly."

"It should not be interrupted at that moment." The man in white smiled peacefully, "So, no matter what urgent problems you have, you shall wait."

"Yes, my lord." The man in black looked humbled as he lowered his head admiringly.

This man in black had actually reached the peak of the Sky Origin Stage. Counting out the top-class cultivators in the superior martial sects, no cultivators in the mortal world could beat him, but he was actually acting like an inferior servant in front of the man in white.

He acted so humble, but he looked to be in high spirits, sincere, and even honored!

It seemed like being a servant to this man in white was the best thing and the biggest achievement of his life!

"Now you can talk." The man in white sat still and retracted his hand to his side with a smile, and then one of the girls handed him a white silk napkin. The man in white took the napkin and rubbed his hands before he handed it back.

He didn't even look at the girl, but the girl was acting very humble as she took the napkin with both of her hands.

"It is about Mu Chengbai from the Mu clan. He has died in the capital and it is said that Ye Xiao did this. This case is still causing disturbances in the capital. The Mu Clan has even sent out their strongest forces to Chen-Xing City for an investigation." The man in black said with his head lowered.

"Hmm?" The man in white put his hands on his belly and nodded.

"There are many doubts in the case of Mu Chengbai's death, but it is certain that the murderer cannot be Ye Xiao! So... I am afraid that the Mu Clan has fallen into a trap this time. Normally, the Mu Clan are not outwitted to this extent..." The man in black reported, "First of all, Ye Xiao is only a foppish fool who would never have the capability to kill Mu Chengbai; let alone that there were two superior guards. It was impossible for him to kill three guys who were at the Mortal Origin Stage... Secondly..."

He stated eight doubts along with his analysis, and every single one of them seemed very clear and reasonable.

The man in white was silently listening the whole time until the man in black finished. And then he said, "They all sound reasonable..."

The man in black showed excitement in his face, and his face even turned a little red, "Thank you for your praise, my lord!"

"But..." The man in white curled his mouth and smiled, "Everything you said was based on one assumption. It is... that the murderer cannot be Ye Xiao."

"If the murderer really turns out to be Ye Xiao, everything you have said will become nonsense. And we may fall into the trap of taking endless risk because of this little mistake you may have made... You know why? Because if we don't consider Ye Xiao to be a suspect and he actually turned out to be the murderer, then we would have investigated others for sure... Then we would never be able to find out who it was... And then what? Then we would keep suspecting one expert cultivator after another and make more and more enemies. We might insist that this was the logical thing to do, but even so, everyone we would offend would turn out to be innocent... That means that we would have created endless mortal enmities!"

The man in white gazed at the man in black peacefully.

"But..." The man in black was sweating, "This Ye Xiao is truly lame... Everyone knows it... It is a common opinion..."

"Oh? Everyone knows it?" The man in white smiled again, "Does

a common opinion make it the truth? Do you really know about Ye Xiao's capabilities? Did you watch him grow up? Or have you tested him on your own?"

"I... I... No... I haven't." The man in black was stunned.

"So, when Mu Chengbai died, were you there and did you see the real murderer?" The man in white was still smiling.

"Well... No..." The man in black was starting to feel small.

"Well then, how do you know Ye Xiao can or cannot kill Mu Chengbai and did or did not kill him?" The man in white frowned.

"..." The man in black was left speechless.

"There are only things which you haven't thought of; there is nothing you can't deal with. There are so many things you don't know about, and yet you have already made your judgment..." The man in white spoke peacefully, "Unwise."

"Yes, my lord." The man in black was completely drenched in sweat, "You are right, my lord."

"Why couldn't Ye Xiao kill Mu Chengbai? Why didn't he kill Mu Chengbai? Why could Mu Chengbai not die in a foppish fool's hand?" The man in white raised his eyelids and spoke peacefully, "There is no absolute in our world. Even if the chance of him killing Mu Chengbai is one percent or lower, that still doesn't make

it impossible, and it simply means, that he could actually be the murderer!"

It was a little bit cryptic, but the man in black got the point.

"Well then... about this case, what should I do? Please, show me the right direction." The man in black kept his head low as he asked respectfully.

"Add fuel to the fire." The man in white smiled softly, "The more people that die, the better. People from the Mu clan, people from the Crown Prince's Palace and people from the government... It doesn't matter how many of them die. But, Ye Xiao should stay alive."

"What... Why?" The man in black was totally confused.

His master had just said that Ye Xiao was a suspect, so he had no idea why Ye Xiao couldn't die.

"If Ye Xiao died, this case would be over. What happened would be tossed aside and it'd be soon forgotten." The man in white sneered weirdly, "It is truly not a good situation to be at peace."

"Yes, my lord." The man in black said.

"Well, no matter who the Mu clan has sent this time, I want them all to die!" The man in white smiled softly, "They can be killed by people from other clans, from the General's House, from where the

princes stays or even from the martial sects... [Hei-Jiu](#), do you understand?"

"Yes, my lord!" The man in black - Hei-Jiu - cupped his hands.

"By the way... About collecting information from the large clans and the missions about the other two kingdoms and the grassland, how are you getting along?" The man in white smiled softly and asked, "I have waited an extra day already. Are you trying to keep me waiting?!"

...

Hei-Jiu : This name literally translates to Dark-nine. So this name should be something like a secret agent code name and is unlikely to be his actual name.

Chapter 28: You Will Never Escape My Hatred

“I have already received some information.” The man in black kept his head lowered and spoke nervously, “Our men have already reached some sources, and they are now following your instructions. Your plan is truly brilliant. It is only a matter of time before we hear some good news,”

The man in white nodded, “Fair enough. I hope that you will not let me down.”

The man in black was sweating profusely and answered loudly, “We won’t let you down, my lord!”

The man in white laughed and made a gesture. The girls behind him stepped forward and started to push the man’s wheelchair to lead him away.

This mysterious white robed man turned out to be a disabled person.

“My lord, about Ye Xiao...” The man in black asked hurriedly.

The man in white, who was sitting on the wheelchair, didn’t even look back as he said, “When the violent disturbance comes, we won’t need Ye Xiao anymore, do we?”

“You are right.” The man in black felt inspired.

The man in white entered the house which was located in the center of the courtyard.

Suddenly, shadows appeared and started quivering, and then - Puff! - the courtyard suddenly vanished. In fact, the bamboo trees suddenly started to move like they could actually walk, and the countless bamboo trees had quickly covered every open space where the courtyard was just seconds ago.

Instantly, the open space, which was previously occupied by the courtyard, became part of the bamboo forest. This place had actually fully integrated into the bamboo forest.

A faint voice appeared and sighed, “My Camouflage Array of Inversing Five Elements is still imperfect... If only it could be soundproof... and keep the sound, smell and spiritual energy inside from being detected from the outside... it becomes the perfect Anti-location Array...” These words must’ve originated from the mysterious man in white.

One of the girls, Wan-Er spoke softly, “Master, the auction of the supreme dan beads...”

“Go!” The man in white spoke gently, “At least get three beads back to me. Supreme dan beads with dan clouds is something that even I have never seen before.”

Wan-Er was astonished, “Master, maybe there are less than three beads at the auction... Maybe there is only one bead.”

“There must be over three.” The man in white confidently said.

Their voices had now completely disappeared.

The man in black crouched and then he flew up. He flew away and also disappeared.

...

Since the conversation with the three officers, it had been rather quiet around Ye Xiao. Everything was moving along peacefully.

Ye Xiao was free but he stayed at home. He was seizing every minute he had to cultivate with concentration. He was converting all the spiritual qi in his body into gelid qi to further improve his strength.

During this time, he had found a pleasant surprise. The scorching qi, which had appeared alongside the gelid qi, didn't really disappear. Instead, it hid inside his Jing and Mai and all over his body. Although it was weak, it still existed.

In other words, the two kinds of spiritual qi that were brought by cultivating the East-rising Purple Qi were working together; one showed on the outside, while the other was quietly working on the inside. That also meant that the present level of East-rising Purple

Qi contained two skills. He needed to practice both of them.

Because of this, he worked even harder.

He used to have some spare time in a day to drink some tea, but now he didn't even want that anymore.

He was either reading or cultivating. He was like the creme a la creme of a group of good students.

The steward felt excited because of this. He thought that the young lord had finally grown up and had completely transformed. He felt that the general would be overjoyed if he were to see this...

The steward was right, but not in the way he had intended. His young master had indeed transformed, but in a different way!

Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang had come to Ye Xiao twice, but Ye Xiao had driven them away multiple times, "Piss off! You foppish black sheep, don't disturb me from becoming a supreme cultivator. Go on with your own businesses!"

Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang felt speechless for his fanfaronade.

"Such a bastard. He actually called himself a supreme cultivator..."

"He must be daydreaming!"

“I say he never woke up!”

“I really want to punch him, but I fear that I can’t beat him. We are no match for him even though he isn’t a supreme cultivator, I am afraid...”

“He’ll beat the crap out of us!”

“It is fine that he daydreamed, but he actually dared to say we are foppish black sheep...”

“That’s true. Like he isn’t one of us...”

“We obviously are in the same boat. Wasn’t it the older one laughing at the younger?!”

“Of course! We are the ‘three lords’. We are even walking side by side.”

“Humph! That foppish fool, I will beat him up eventually.”

“Right! We can’t let him leave the glorious ‘three lords’.”

“Wait and see! Humph!”

“Humph!”

...

It was possible to kick the two of them out of the house, but there was someone else that couldn't be driven away no matter how hard Ye Xiao had tried.

Most importantly, this one had a whip in her hand, which was purposely given by Ye Xiao's father to sexually discipline... Oh no, strictly discipline Ye Xiao.

That's right! She was our adorable Princess Yeyue!

Su Yeyue.

Her dad was the only prince with a non-royal surname in the Kingdom of Chen. To be honored with the title of prince, he must have obtained great merits and should hold great power!

He was Prince Hua-Yang who had three sons and a daughter. He didn't particularly care about his sons. Instead, his daughter Su Yeyue received all the care in his heart and was like an apple in his eye. Naturally, the girl received special treatment; it seemed like her father feared that she was like something that would melt when he had it in his mouth, and something that would drop when he held it in his hands. He truly spoiled her very much.

It was said that when he [named the girl](#), he gathered every single great scholar in his house to help him think about her name.

Finally, he took the concept of ‘when the world revived, the moon shined in the night sky’ so that it represented the surname and the given name perfectly.

Thus, she got the name Su Yeyue.

It was lucky that, even though Princess Yeyue was spoiled a lot, she didn’t have an overbearing personality. It made it easier for Ye Xiao to accept her...

However, at the moment, all Ye Xiao could think of when she stared at him was how he could quickly get as far away from her as possible.

It was the feeling of a guilty conscience.

This kind of guilt was technically from the experiences that he had obtained during his previous life.

During his previous life, the Xiao Monarch was very powerful and had an unfathomable cultivation base. He laughed and was considered to be the most elegant within the firmament. However, he was cultivating the Pure Yang Martial Arts, so he stayed single in order to retain the purity of a male virgin.

In his previous life, he had missed out on so many beautiful girls. And those girls had all deeply fallen in love with him...

But all that Ye Xiao could do was to watch them, so he always

showed a cold-hearted and uninterested look in his eyes, eventually hurting more girls than he could ever count.

When they left him in despair, one after another, Ye Xiao could only turn his back on them and sigh deeply in his heart.

Now that Su Yeyue, his legal fiancé, was looking at him with her beautiful eyes, Ye Xiao felt his heart racing.

He nearly ran away because of his usual practices.

In fact, there was another girl's face showing in his mind – a girl with beautiful and sad eyes. It was like her face popped up to block his sight, and she was even looking at him with tears of love and mourning.

“You...”

Ye Xiao reached out his hand and murmured.

But he was only able to say one word before he recovered from the trance. He laughed at himself and showed a little loneliness on his face.

...

It was in the Qing-Yun Realm.

There was a palace with clouds and fog floating in the air. It was silent and solemn.

In the backyard of the grand palace, there was a grave that looked new.

An entire piece of Qing-Yun Purple Jade that was three-meters wide and ten meters high was used as a gravestone! A piece of Qing-Yun Purple Jade, which would make countless people fight for it, was actually just being used as a simple gravestone!

A sword light suddenly flashed rapidly.

Purple sparks burst out on the surface of the Qing-Yun Purple Jade!

Some broken tiny pieces of the jade fell on the floor.

Six words appeared; they were carved deeply on the gravestone.

“To laugh at all heroes in the firmament!”

That sword light stopped immediately. The owner of the sword sighed and turned around and left for the room on the top floor of the palace. As she moved, she quickly disappeared from view.

It was in this room.

A girl that had a perfect slim body and was wearing a silk veil on her face silently admired the calligraphy on the wall for a long time, until she eventually closed her beautiful eyes. Two lines of tears coursed down her cheeks.

“I will avenge you!”

“Even though you never admitted you were my husband, but... I have decided to be your wife! I would stick with you ceaselessly if you were still alive and I will avenge you if you die!”

“Now that you are dead, how do you say ‘no’ to me? Could you actually stop me widowing myself? Ye Xiao, you bastard! I hate you! I hate you! I will hate you in all of my next lives!”

She might have said something with hate, but more tears were quickly dropping down from her eyes to the floor. The sword that was stabbing the floor was quivering, as though it was going along with its master’s emotions of love and hate, like it was eager for a piquant killing!

On the wall, there was not only the sword, but also the calligraphy. The beautiful girl was looking at the calligraphy lovingly.

The writing on the calligraphy was like a flying dragon and dancing birds; it showed flamboyance.

The main lines were:

‘一生惧见红颜泪；谨慎莫伤美人心；待到飘然消失日，化作天边不羁云！’

(To escape from the tear of the beauty; to prevent hurting her heart. When the death comes one day, to turn into an unrestrained cloud!)

There was a smaller line below,

‘今生有悔，害你形单影只；若有来生，许你四海八荒。’

(I regret that I let you be solitary; if there is a next life, I promise I will accompany you to travel the world.)

The name of the author inscribed was ‘叶笑’ (Ye Xiao).

The girl in white looked at the calligraphy with tears in her eyes as she felt inconsolable, “You liar! You promised me your next life! There is no such thing!”

“You didn’t want to hurt a girl’s heart, but you have already hurt me so much!”

“You wanted to become an unrestrained cloud when you died... Now that you are dead, where is my unrestrained cloud, huh?”

“Liar! Liar! Liar! You are a terrible liar!”

She turned around and laid her head and arms on the table, and then she once again started to wail.

“Today is your [First Seven](#). I will wear a mourning attire for you for thirty-five days and stay here with your grave for a year.” The girl stood up slowly and wiped her tears, murmuring, “After a year, I will carry my sword to avenge you! With such hatred, I will never let go of them unless I die!”

...

“What’s wrong? Are you unwell?” Su Yeyue saw that Ye Xiao was lost in his own world, so she reached her hand out and waved it in front of him, “Hey, don’t make such a terrible look. What are you doing?”

Ye Xiao hurriedly drew back his mind, struck a decent pose and coughed, “What are you doing here?”

About her name Su Yeyue, the surname is Su and the given name is Yeyue. Su (苏) can represent ‘revive’ (复苏), and Yeyue (夜月) means the moon (月) at night (夜).

First Seven: It is believed in China that when people die, the soul will come back at the seventh day after their death, and the family will prepare meals for them.

Chapter 29: Humph! You Are So Annoying~!

"Hmm? Can't I come?" Su Yeyue got a little angry when she heard Ye Xiao. Her little pretty nose wrinkled as she said, "Sooner or later, it will become my house too! I will be the vice-chairman here! I am here to check my residence in advance! Can't I do that? Listen to you. You don't want me to be here from deep within your heart, do you?"

She humphed and started to twist the whip in her hands. She squinted at Ye Xiao with a look like 'I will whip you to death if you ever dare to piss me off again'.

She intentionally showed a dark look to Ye Xiao, but it turned out to be so adorable that he didn't even feel the least bit threatened.

He had not been in the mood, but she had actually amused him. The words she said, 'will become my house too', 'the vice-chairman', 'check my residence in advance'... he found them really funny.

As she had behaved like this, maybe Su Yeyue actually didn't feel any antipathy towards Ye Xiao. Maybe she had already given in to her fate, so she cared no more about it, but it still revealed her true personality.

"Heyyy, what are you talking about?" Ye Xiao tried to comfort her, "How could I possibly not welcome you? I am super happy that you came to my house. Oh no, our house."

"Humph!" Su Yeyue acted like the boss of the house and walked around Ye Xiao. Holding her head high with her wrinkled nose, she snuffled a bit and asked interestedly, "Oh, Xiao-Xiao, how come you smell so good? What are you carrying with you?!"

"What are you talking about? I don't have anything on me!" Ye Xiao contested her claims, but he knew clearly about the origin of his pleasant fragrance.

The reason why he smelled so good was quite simple. He had accomplished ablution of the muscles and bones twice with his body, so most of the impurities in his body had been cleared. His body was pure like a newborn child's body, so it certainly smelled good.

"Yes! You definitely do!" Su Yeyue was quite certain about this fact as she took a closer look at Ye Xiao and smelled him around. Then she murmured with confusion, "It is not the smell of perfumes for girls... And it is not the smell of a flower... and... Oh? Oh!!"

She found that she was too close to Ye Xiao, and then she looked up and saw Ye Xiao looking at her with a complacent smile. Ye Xiao's pretty face and his soft eyes were really close to her. She could even feel his breath!

She was so shocked that she screamed. She immediately jumped away from him and felt her heart racing. Her pretty face turned red. She suddenly felt awkward and didn't know what to do. She was flustered and embarrassed at the same time. She would have liked to turn around and run out of the house, but she found

herself unable to move her legs. Instead, she realized that she would rather stay here than leave.

Ye Xiao felt warmth spreading in his heart as he softly said, "What an adorable little girl."

Su Yeyue felt her face quickly heating up as her original beautiful pale white skin quickly obtained a deep shade of red. She managed to stutter out a few words, "Y... you... you... you are just slightly older than me! Humph, how dare you speak to me with a tone of seniority! I... If you... y... you speak like that again, I... I... I wi... will punch you down!"

Ye Xiao laughed out loud carelessly. He felt pleased from the bottom of his heart.

Hearing his voice and smelling his scent made Su Yeyue's heart beat even faster. The blush on her face didn't vanish; it became even more obvious and cuter.

She suddenly came out with a thought that this guy was to become her husband in the future...

He was to become her husband...

This thought had appeared in her mind and was actually lingering around for a long time. She just couldn't help but feel even more embarrassed.

Before now, Su Yeyue had simply regarded Ye Xiao as her playmate and a man she had been loathly engaged to. Their fates were intertwined because she couldn't disobey her parents. That was it and that was all.

But at this moment, the thought of him becoming her 'husband' that appeared in her mind had truly surprised this vivacious girl.

She lowered her head and stayed quiet for quite a while. When she finally raised her head, she found that Ye Xiao was now sitting on a chair across her, and that he was actually focusing on reading a book.

She finally felt relaxed and felt lucky that he didn't seem to notice her.

But she couldn't help but feel a little bit upset as well. She was wondering why he wasn't looking at her at all.

Then she took a few steps ahead and softly sat in front of him to observe his pretty face. A long time passed in the silence.

After reading the book for a while, Ye Xiao stopped to rest, and only now did he realize that Su Yeyue actually hadn't left. He looked up and saw that she was laying her elbows on the table and bracing her lower jaw. She was looking at him quietly and calmly.

He felt puzzled and asked gently, "Are you alright?"

Maybe because Ye Xiao had spoken gently, she wasn't startled. She was still calm and a little bit absent-minded as she murmured, "Xiao-Xiao... You have changed a lot recently..."

"I have changed a lot? Have I?" Ye Xiao frowned.

"Yes... Yes, you have..." She tilted her head and thoughtfully said, "Your outer appearance hasn't changed... But you used to be very annoying, which made me want to punch you down all the time... As for now... the annoying part is gone... Instead, you are..."

She frowned and tried to organize proper words to clearly describe her feelings. After a while she continued, "... like... you are composed and credible now... Why is that? And you look like you have many things hidden in your mind, like there are so many stories in your head... That is weird."

Ye Xiao lifted his eyebrows and smiled.

Changed? Of course he had changed! It would be weird if he had not.

If this Ye Xiao was still the departed Ye Xiao instead of the Xiao Monarch, that would be a massive problem!

Anyway, he had to admit that girls' instincts were really frightening.

Su Yeyue was a princess, so things that usually happened to

normal girls would never happen to her. However, the annoyance she had felt in the departed Ye Xiao was the natural reaction every normal girl had towards the foppish fools.

Ye Xiao realized that, sometimes, even a tiny action could let people notice his changed personality. He felt that he really needed to seriously think about this.

He had always been free and alone in his previous life, traveling around the world with laughter.

However, everything was different now. If he showed the personality of the Xiao Monarch in this present life... people would wonder how he turned into a solitary man from a foppish teenage boy...

Even in this mortal world, there could be people who would regard him as a threat and were able to easily kill him.

Maybe he should show himself as a foppish fool in people's faces so that it could become his perfect disguise.

Besides, after living for such a long time, Ye Xiao clearly knew that he had mostly lived wrong in his previous life.

Every bit of affection he had received had actually made him understand this, but he actually felt like he understood nothing.

He was always confused about it.

Could it be... that he had to go through all the troubles in heaven and hell before he could become successful?

So he was thinking, [Maybe I should try to get into a relationship?]

The reason he had stayed away from relationships till now was due to him practicing the Pure Yang Martial Arts.

"The disturbance you have caused this time is really serious. Although you didn't kill Mu Cheng-Bai, all of the existing evidences are still pointing at you." Su Yeyue expressed her anxiousness.

Su Yeyue had not cared about this case before because she had not thought that it would matter whether Ye Xiao would die or not; she would have probably felt nothing more than a little pity. However, she cared for him now.

Even she herself didn't know how and why her mind had changed.

Someone she hadn't cared about before had suddenly become important to her.

How?!

"You're in a truly dangerous situation." She lovingly looked at Ye Xiao.

"Hmm. I know." Ye Xiao nodded, "I am afraid I really am getting into a perilous position... The princes are fighting for the throne; the noble clans are interfering; the supreme dan beads have shown up; the reclusive martial sects are back to the world... The thing regarding me has happened during all these events, so maybe I will be the blasting fuse to the bursts of the battles..."

"That is true... What will you do next?" Su Yeyue asked worriedly, "I can ask my dad to send a team of guards to protect you and lead you out of the capital to the north. You can get away from this mess."

Ye Xiao replied after thinking for a while, "A man should stand straight up in the world. How can I keep escaping from troubles. The more dangerous the situation is, the more I can get trained. If I can get through this, it will definitely be able to reform me. A danger is also an opportunity. If I can't get through it... then there won't be any big accomplishments in my life. I will be a useless fool who is unable to protect the ones whom he cares for and the ones who care for him."

Ye Xiao smiled, "I am too young. I haven't been through anything that will make me regret when I die. So if I die, I die."

When he said so, he suddenly thought of a pair of eyes he had seen before, which looked exactly the same like the eyes that were looking at him right now.

He felt sad. Then he sighed.

Su Yeyue's face suddenly turned red again.

She started to think,

[What... What does he mean? Of course the 'get through this' part is understandable. The 'can't get through' part... The ones whom he cares for and the ones who care for him... Who is the one he was talking about? 'Too young', 'haven't been through anything that...' What was he talking about? Could it be... Could it be me?]

She suddenly felt the accompaniment of gongs and drums in her mind, and her heart nearly beat out from her chest. She felt shyness, happiness and sweetness at the same time. She tried her best to humph strongly in case she got ludicrous, and then she spoke like a peevish child, "Oh, come on. This has nothing to do with me, I guess... Oh, you are just talking nonsense again... Come on! I am leaving. I won't hear your balderdash. You are so annoying~!"

She then stood up and literally skipped to the door.

But in fact, she looked like she was... escaping!

Chapter 30: Assassins at Night

"Erh?" Ye Xiao was shocked. When he opened his eyes, Su Yeyue was no longer around. He could only hear a shy voice, "[Little Soya!](#) Let's go! Let's get out of the house of the man who speaks honeyed words..."

She had managed to escape from his clutches.

He heard the guards talk, but he couldn't make out what they were talking about, and then they stopped.

"Yes of course... This has nothing to do with her... I never said that it did..." Ye Xiao rubbed his head and murmured, "Why did she suddenly become shy and run away... What's wrong with her?"

He was confused and murmured, "Oh girls... Their thoughts are truly baffling..."

The steward came over in a hurry and noticed that Su Yeyue had left. He felt relieved and grabbed onto Ye Xiao's arm, "My lord! People from the Mu Clan have reached the entrance of the capital! They are now doing the blood sacrifice outside the south gate. It is said that... They are holding 77 white flags and 22 blood flags in total!"

Ye Xiao was confused, "Blood sacrifice? White flags? Blood flags? What the hell are those?"

The steward was in such a hurry that he stomped his foot out of frustration before answering, "You don't know? It is a 'ninety-nine'! The 77 white flags mean mourning, and the 22 blood flags mean that they are unwilling to give up! There are 99 flags in total, and that means they will never consider any compromise! No matter how long it will take, they are unwilling to give up!"

Ye Xiao rolled his eyelids, "So what?"

Hearing Ye Xiao's words, the steward became dumbfounded.

Ye Xiao stretched himself leisurely, "Time for bed... Words like 'unwilling to give up' sound really horrible. I am so scared and it makes me feel sleepy... I am so terrified... So I think I need to sleep so as to hide from reality."

The steward was shocked as he watched his young master leisurely leave. He was rendered speechless and felt like there was a storm howling in his mind. When he was just considering forgetting about their relationship and beating Ye Xiao up, Ye Xiao had already closed the door in his face. After a while, snoring sounds resounded throughout the mansion...

"I am truly..." The steward couldn't find the words to complete this sentence. He was extremely worried, but he couldn't do a thing about it. As such, he finally stomped his feet on the floor and then left.

...

It was deep into the night.

The steward had stayed awake the entire time.

The capital was enshrouded in a tense atmosphere at this moment.

However, nobody knew that in a vast bamboo forest, there was a man with a clear sight quietly observing the capital.

It seemed that all the birds in the capital were arriving at this forest to set up their nests. The birds flew to the bamboo forest from all directions one after another. The silent bamboo forest had turned unusually noisy.

The man in white quietly waved his hand, and all those birds gathered in the sky over his head.

They didn't just keep flying. Instead, they stopped on his hand one after another. It was truly a marvelous spectacle. The birds left small wax beads in his hand one after another.

"Master, you should get some rest. Just let Xiu-Er and me do this job." A girl in white lightly walked over and spoke softly.

"It's better I do it myself when I am able to." The man in white smiled softly, "Wan-Er, you two must be tired after all these years. You should relax sometimes. Don't worry. Such an easy job won't exhaust me. Besides, to do some works is a way for me to practice.

It is good for me."

Wan-Er smiled, "As long as you stay with us, we won't feel tired. I understand that you want to practice more, but your legs... We are worried about you."

The man in white smiled peacefully, "It is my unavoidable fate. Everything will be okay and I just need to get over it. This period of time is actually the perfect time for me to improve myself. It affects my ultimate mission which I have to complete in the future. Don't worry. I will be fine. I have gotten over it long ago... really!"

"Okay." Wan-Er replied with a sweet smile, and then she covered him in the pure white cotton cloak which she had brought.

As she was preparing to leave, the man in white spoke to her in a low voice, "Wan-Er, do you notice that the name 'Ye Xiao' sounds odd?"

"Odd?" Wan-Er frowned.

She thought that his question was weird. The word was especially weird - 'odd'!

"You may not know about it, but this name is very interesting." The man in white smiled peacefully and spoke as if he was deep in his thoughts, "What a pity..."

His eyes slightly rolled up and he looked into the distant sky

through the bamboo trees. After a long time, he sighed, "What a pity!"

"A pity?" Wan-Er was confused and her crystal-like eyes were wide-open.

But the man stopped his daydreaming so that he could read the information attentively.

"The first storm will soon reach the capital... and it will also be the first storm of my life..." The man in white murmured, "Who could experience the storms of the world with me and stay by my side?"

He looked really lonely, as if the loneliness was extracted from the bottom of his heart. A sense of coldness had formed within him.

It was the kind of coldness felt when one was at the top of the world; a coldness that nobody else could ever withstand.

He said to Wan-Er, "Let the [Nine Black-dressers](#) stay focused on every movement in the General's House. If something goes wrong, make sure they do any - and everything necessary!"

Wan-Er quickly agreed and left.

...

The city was meant to be bustling tonight.

A lot of people entered Chen-Xing City through every entrance!

People from the martial sects, the unattached cultivators and the tyrants from everywhere were all quietly making their way to the city.

The security in the house of Ye was strengthened.

After the princess left, eight guards had arrived from the Palace of Hua-Yang. They had joined the security group immediately after arrival.

The steward was well prepared. He had actually brought a bizarre knife with him.

The 36 blood guards felt surprised when they saw the knife. They looked at each other and found nothing to say. These guards, who usually expressed no emotions, were unexpectedly showing their excitement.

They hadn't seen the God-Slayer's Knife for so many years. This night... would certainly become an interesting night for them.

The night had fallen and the sky was at its darkest.

The whole capital was enshrouded by the darkness.

But the darkness tonight was different from the usual one. There was a depressing feeling contained inside it, which had quickly spread all over the capital.

Tonight, even the common people could sense the danger in the air. They all closed their windows and had gone to bed early.

The royal guards sensed it too even though they had no idea what was actually going on. They paid more attentions tonight, like there were horrible enemies coming for them.

It was finally midnight.

It was silent in Ye Xiao's room. The snoring had stopped. It seemed like he was deeply asleep.

The steward sighed and murmured, "He actually sleeps like he is dead. Oh my good lord. Should I say that you are unperturbed like an experienced general... or heartless like a hoodlum? Gosh..."

He truly felt that he was unable to see through this young lord's heart.

The young lord was sometimes smart with personal control, but mostly he was just a foppish lad, a fool - a complete fool!

In the sky, the wind howled weirdly.

The steward stood on the roof of the house and saw some figures flying over.

The white belt on those figures' waists were obvious; they were even dazzling in the dark.

The steward narrowed his eyes.

He felt the white color to be too dazzling.

The Crown Prince did stop his actions considering the fight for the throne, but he had allowed the Mu Clan to deal with Ye Xiao independently. It actually became more troublesome for the Ye Clan.

People from the Mu Clan were obviously crazy. They didn't care whether Ye Xiao was the true murderer or not. They didn't care whether Ye Xiao had the capability to kill Mu Chengbai or not either.

They cared about nothing.

They simply wanted to kill Ye Xiao!

It was totally unreasonable.

What was even more unreasonable was that they were actually going through with it; they were actually trying to kill Ye Xiao tonight!

The steward was absolutely livid, and the people who were getting closer now had proven this fact. The Mu Clan had been standing high above the masses for so long that they treated people like ants which they could kill freely without any consequences...

From each direction of the east, the south, the west and the north, there were two figures flying over, and they were about to step on the bounding wall of the General's House.

The steward yelled, "Who are you? Halt, all of you! You are not allowed to violate the territory of the General's House!"

A sneering laughter came from the west. A man in the west side said, "Where is the foppish lad? Tell him to come out and prepare for his death! We will just think of this as a food taken at night." Harsh laughter penetrated the General Ye's house.

For the Mu Clan, which was one of the eight noble clans, fighting against a general's family was definitely an easy job. They didn't have any respect for them at all.

These men wasn't even part of the main force of the Mu Clan because the Ye Clan was not strong enough to warrant the use of their main force. But these men were more than strong enough to play the bullies in the capital.

The steward was furious and spoke with a cold voice, "You are here to have some food late at night, right? You have to know that the food in our place requires one to have strong teeth. It would be a shame if you guys get your teeth broken!"

The man replied with a sneer, "My teeth are steel-like. It is just a trivial Northern General's House. What could be so tough that could break my teeth!" He waved his hand and shouted, "Go! Go get our food!"

"Yes!" The other seven men answered at the same time.

The next moment, the seven figures turned into seven sword lights. The lights suddenly flashed in the sky and flew fast into the house.

The steward's pupils constricted at once as he shouted his orders, "Stop them!"

The 36 blood guards, who had been waiting for a long time, affirmatively answered to the steward and immediately prepared to fly up to start the sanguinary fight!

Their enemies were from the famous Mu Clan. Although they were not the core force of the Mu Clan, they were still extraordinary fighters. The steward and the guards really felt insecure about this battle, but none of them ever thought of backing off!

However, the next moment, everyone was stunned by what had happened!

Little Soya: It must be the name of Su Yeyue's pet - it may be a dog or a cat.

Nine Black-dressers: It seems there are nine men in black, and Hei-Jiu must be one of them.

Chapter 31: One Sword Strike, Eight Heads Off!

At this point of time, all of them, no matter which side they stood for, the General's House or the Mu Clan, were completely stunned!

When the steward waved his hand and said 'stop them', there were many people who had answered with a simple 'yes'.

The voices varied, however, the supposedly 36 voices had suddenly increased.

When the 36 blood guards were preparing to take action, seven figures popped up from different corners of the yard without any warning. The blood guards could not even react to their sudden appearance.

Sword lights flashed like lightning.

All the participants from both sides were stunned. The steward was the most shocked amongst them all.

The rage which had shown on his face had turned into extreme astonishment! His lower jaw had dropped to the floor. His mouth was hanging wide enough to swallow an entire rabbit!

Where did the seven men, who had suddenly shown up, come from?

They were definitely not the guards of the General's House; neither were they the guards from the Palace of Hua-Yang!

However, they rushed out fearlessly right after the steward had shouted out the order!

Who were they?

The events that took place in the following moments had left everyone extremely astonished. There would be nothing more shocking than what they were witnessing!

They saw the sword lights flashing in the air as the seven masked men rushed towards the eight Mu Clan assassins!

The swords rose up and slashed down in the blink of an eye!

- Chop, chop, chop ...-

Seven heads were sent spinning in the air, decapitated!

The warriors from the Mu Clan had come with fierceness and confidence, but in just a flash, seven of them had already died! And they had all died within a span of a few seconds!

Facing the seven masked men of unknown backgrounds, the so-called expert cultivators of the Mu Clan were unable to even raise

their swords in defense.

The seven men had flown over smartly, but ended up being chopped into halves. The entire ambush had taken less than a second to pan out!

Everyone had become petrified!

The 36 blood guards looked at the blood spraying in the air, completely clueless. They had no idea what was going on as they simply stood there like idiots. Even the most experienced of the lot, the steward, remained rooted to the spot.

Suddenly, he realized something, and this ‘something’ was not the joy obtained from the deaths of their enemies. He thought, “Damn it! We were framed!”

These men who came from nowhere had killed seven of the Mu Clan’s men with a single strike, and they truly had no good intentions.

What would have been seen by everyone would be that, after the steward had given the order, the seven masked men came out and killed the Mu Clan’s men.

That meant that the seven men from the Mu Clan were killed because of his order!

The Mu Clan and the Ye Clan would become foes after this, even

if the suspicion for Mu Chengbai's death was to be lifted away from Ye Xiao!

As of this moment, nobody could do anything to stop the two clans from being foes!

The steward was absolutely livid.

When he looked at the blood guards, he found that they were actually looking at him with eyes filled with worship and shock!

“Super!” Someone shouted.

The steward nearly spat out blood... he thought, [‘Super’ your ass! Are things not bad enough for you? Can’t you use your brains? We were framed!]

In front of him stood the leader of the seven dead guys. He was the only one left alive in his team. He was stunned and felt fear creep into his mind.

He was completely panicking, “What the hell! Is this really just a general’s house? Is it really a general’s house of the mortal world? Are you fxxking kidding me? My men wouldn’t have been killed so easily even if we were fighting the Royal Palace guards! Well, even if they were killed, they would never get killed in an instant! They could have at least given a decent fight, right? They actually got chopped up like they were vegetables! They were killed so easily! This is impossible...”

It was a fabulous, instant extermination!

“The House of Ye! I will remember this!” The man immediately flew back to escape after recovering from his initial shock.

Since the masked men could kill all his underlings so easily, he certainly didn't have the capability to beat any of them!

He was afraid that if he decided to leave any later, he would lose his own life too.

So the only thing he wanted to do now was to get out of here as soon as possible; he wanted nothing more than to keep his life!

One could only do something when one stayed alive; that was what he believed!

He had already flown back several meters and had almost made his getaway, but suddenly, a sharp sword light flashed again. The shiny blade of the sword had pierced his back and had come out of his chest, skewering him. It was covered in blood.

A look of despair showed up in his eyes as he looked back.

Another masked man was standing behind him. Nobody could comprehend how he had reached there so quickly. His eyes were cold, and he slowly drew his sword back. He then spoke peacefully,

“You have already come all this way. Why leave so soon?”

The leader of the dead guys stared at him and blood flowed out of his mouth. His body feebly fell down onto the roof.

The masked man swung his sword again, even before the escaping man had touched the floor and - chop -; the head was chopped off!

The masked man then raised his foot and kicked the dead body down to the ground and said chillingly, “One hit; two parts!”

The next moment, all of the eight masked men had jumped on the boundary wall.

The steward seemed to emerge from his reverie and ran forward while shouting, “Who are you? Why did you frame us?!”

The eight masked men replied with silence and flew out of sight immediately.

They didn’t even want to speak to the steward.

Watching the eight of them disappear into the night, looking at the eight dead bodies and smelling the blood in the air, the steward was totally stunned speechless.

They really were framed this time, and no escape was in sight.

They wouldn't even have a chance to explain.

The 36 blood guards showed up from the darkness and gathered around the steward. They were delighted.

“Hey boss, I admire you sincerely! So cool! So overwhelming! Eight bastard's heads got chopped off just because of one simple order...”

“Yo boss! That was awesome...”

“Hey boss...”

“Shut the fxxk up! All of you!” The steward drew a long face and tried hard not to freak out, “We just got framed! You foolish lubbers! In your brains, there is nothing but muscles, you morons... What was so delightful? Gosh...”

He stomped and went to find Ye Xiao.

The steward awkwardly realized that in this place, the only person he could actually talk to was the foppish young master of his; exactly the very person one who had caused all this mess!

When he reached Ye Xiao's room, he found it to be unoccupied.

He had noticed quite a while ago that the snoring had stopped,

making him believe that the young master was just sleeping soundly. Had Ye Xiao already left by then?

The steward didn't believe it to be true, so he looked all over the house to find him. However, even after searching every corner of the house, he didn't find any trace of Ye Xiao.

There wasn't any sign of a struggle, so the steward knew that Ye Xiao, at least, was not kidnapped.

But where could he have gone?

The steward was left wondering, [How could a foppish, young lord leave without leaving a trace?]

Then he realized he had no time to think of such tough questions, so he just sighed.

“Oh my dear lord. Why are you still fooling around at this troubled time? Don't you know people are all aiming for your life? Why are you still...”

It was so ridiculous!

Now that the General's House was in a big mess and they had been framed, big trouble would certainly head in their direction. Why did he still go out?

Was it not perilous enough for him?!

...

Well, the steward was wrong about Ye Xiao!

In fact, Ye Xiao had been in the house all along and had watched everything that had happened in this weird fight.

When those men from the Mu Clan arrived, Ye Xiao was preparing to take actions.

He knew that he might expose himself if he struck out, but he also knew that everyone in this house would die if he didn't.

Oh, of course, except for this unfathomable steward.

However, when the masked guys showed up and killed seven of the Mu Clan's warriors in one strike, Ye Xiao stopped and stayed silent. His eyes lit up!

Why are they doing this?

Ye Xiao clearly knew the answer and he didn't need to ask about it. It was quite obvious to him!

Ye Xiao only had one question – who were these men?

When he was thinking about it, he had already moved out of his room through the window. He sneaked to the yard and waited, hidden in the shadows.

He thought that those masked men would definitely go back to their base, so he decided to wait here, so as to follow them secretly when they left!

He was curious, [I wonder who else would want to mess with me in the capital!]

Ye Xiao was right. The eight masked men left quickly after they successfully framed the Ye Clan, and then - swish! swish! swish!...- they flew over Ye Xiao's head.

Ye Xiao held his breath and waited for some time to pass. He knew that it would be unwise to follow them right away.

He had noticed that there were still a lot of people who were hiding around the house. If he showed up rashly, he would definitely expose himself!

And he was right. After the eight masked men disappeared, dozens of figures flew out from around the house and left towards their own destinations. These guys were obviously people from other forces who had come to check the situation here.

“Some people just came for me directly while more people were

just watching us fight against each other.” Ye Xiao sighed.

After a while, from a dark corner inside the house, a figure rushed out and flew up. Puff! The figure disappeared from eyesight in just a blink of an eye.

Ye Xiao had noticed this figure as he had a pair of keen eyes. Then he decided to take action. He had decided to follow this person from the shadows, and while following him, Ye Xiao’s appearance had drastically changed.

Ye Xiao now had a much larger frame and was a head shorter than normal.

That’s right! He had decided that the appearance of Feng Zhi-Ling, whom he had played when he was selling the supreme dan beads to the salesroom, would serve him wonderfully on this occasion.

He flew in the night sky like a ghost. His speed seemed to be faster than a typhoon, but his posture wasn’t affected by the howling wind at all.

It was another one of his exclusive skills.

The Lunisolar Shadow!

[Coming like a stream while leaving like the wind. Sneaking into the horizon and every tail is vain.](#)

...

A poem-like line: 来如流水去如风, 隐入天地无影踪。It means Ye Xiao moved so fast that he could not be traced if he didn't want to.

Chapter 32: The Mountain, The Bamboo Forest And The Maid

The Lunisolar Shadow!

It was a skill used to conceal oneself and become untraceable. Ye Xiao had obtained the scroll of Lunisolar Shadow after he had killed a one-foot robber in the Qing-Yun Realm. The robber had just reached the mystical Dao Origin Stage, but it had actually taken Ye Xiao, who was at the peak of the Dao Origin Stage at that time, an entire month to track him down!

If the robber had not eventually exhausted himself, Ye Xiao might not have been able to catch him.

After Ye Xiao took the scroll of Lunisolar Shadow from the robber's dead body, he came to know that the Lunisolar Shadow was truly something outstanding!

The most wonderful thing about this skill was that he could use it to conceal himself in an instant and then flee away as per his convenience!

Such a miraculous skill was truly something that could keep him safe under any circumstances. Moreover, using it only required a tiny bit of his energy, making it unreasonably powerful!

Ye Xiao had mastered this skill only after he had spent a lot of time to practice. But, in spite of all these benefits, this was the first

time that he had been forced to use it.

The Xiao Monarch had been so powerful that he did not even have to hide from anyone. He had never been in a situation in which he had been forced to use this skill, that was, until now!

Ye Xiao had been diligently following this man. The man seemed very cautious and kept changing directions at unexpected intervals. Maybe he had felt that something was wrong. In fact, he had changed direction no less than fifteen times.

When daybreak came, he actually stopped and stood still. He kept looking around for fifteen minutes until he finally chose a direction and shot off without any warning.

Ye Xiao was caught off guard.

The man's cultivation level should be around the 6th rank of the Earth Origin Realm. Although Ye Xiao was not strong enough to perform the Lunisolar Shadow perfectly, he could still conceal himself to a satisfying extent. But the man really had a superior spiritual sense!

Ye Xiao kept following the man at a distance of about three hundred yards. He usually kept a distance of a hundred yards while shadowing people, but he wasn't strong enough at the moment, so he kept a longer distance in order to avoid being noticed. But he still had drawn the attention of this man who had tried several times to shake him off.

It was not until Ye Xiao had drawn back another hundred yards that the man finally relaxed.

Ye Xiao had realized that this man's spiritual sense was superior to ordinary cultivators, so he didn't dare get any closer.

The man finally reached the base of a mountain and quickly started to make his way to the peak. He kept on jumping, seemingly floating, to reach the top. Ye Xiao was just about to follow him before he sensed something and immediately backed off. Ye Xiao was scared half to death as sweat started rolling down his back.

It turned out the man had suddenly turned around to check for followers when he had just steadily landed on the mountain.

And then the man transformed into several ghost shadows which ran rapidly into different directions and disappeared.

"This guy could really make one's hackles rise with his unbelievable caution." Ye Xiao thought and quietly came down from a tree, and then he gingerly moved along the grass.

He guessed that this place should be where the man's base was located.

He was sure about it as he had seen the man acting with increased caution over here.

Whoever had been backing this man should be beyond this mountain. Ye Xiao might not be able to confirm it, but he could at least get to know something if he went ahead and investigated.

However, this place must be extremely dangerous!

What troubled Ye Xiao most was that this mountain wasn't just any normal mountain. It was completely devoid of any vegetation!

Whoever crossed the mountain top would definitely get exposed!

Ye Xiao sneaked forward and only peaked his head above the mountaintop, and then he immediately drew back.

There was a bamboo forest in front of him, a sea of bamboo trees.

It wasn't surprising that a bamboo forest existed among the mountains. But, it was a totally different situation when it was inside the capital. Ye Xiao thought that this bamboo forest must be under the protection of the government. Therefore, it was either something which belonged to the government like the Royal Garden or something which belonged to someone... who even the government wouldn't dare to mess with.

Ye Xiao had just taken a glance and had seen nothing but the forest.

Although he had just taken a single glance, he could confirm that there were no constructions within the forest.

"This bamboo forest is truly weird somehow." Ye Xiao pondered.

He couldn't believe that there was actually something in this mortal world that he couldn't figure out...

Ye Xiao quickly analyzed what he had seen with that glance, and suddenly, two words emerged in his mind.

'Energy Arrays!'

As soon as he realized this, a feeling of danger invaded his senses.

The very next moment, Ye Xiao ran away at top speed.

Right after Ye Xiao left, about fifty men arrived from all over. They were obviously trying to quietly outflank Ye Xiao.

Every one of them was equally strong as the man Ye Xiao had been tracing; in fact, some of them might even be stronger.

Anyway, each and every one of them was a lot stronger than the present Ye Xiao.

If Ye Xiao had left a bit later and fallen into their trap, then he would've definitely died; even if he had a thousand lives, it wouldn't be enough to survive!

However, at least Ye Xiao had something in mind this time.

All the framing, the assaults and the disturbances... had originated from this place.

This mountain.

This forest.

...

Just before Ye Xiao had stumbled upon the bamboo forest, the man in white was sitting on his wheelchair that was being pushed by Wan-er. They were walking leisurely.

Dozens of men in black ran across the forest and gathered around him one after another, but none of them dared to make a single sound. They just stood silently.

"Did Hei-Yi come back?" The man in white spoke with half-closed eyes.

"No. But he wouldn't get into any accidents with his strength in such a place." One of the men answered humbly.

"Anything in the world could go wrong. Nothing is absolute." The man in white took a deep breath and said, "It is always better to be

cautious."

The words just came out of his mouth right before another man in black wearing a mask quietly arrived.

The masked man was just about to speak, when suddenly, the man in white opened his eyes, looked to his left and seriously said, "Someone has tracked you here! Go get him!"

The masked man in black felt ashamed and his face immediately turned red.

The other men were all looking at him with an open-mouth.

The masked man couldn't believe that he had just drawn an enemy home.

In fact, he wouldn't even have noticed the tracker if his master hadn't said it!

He was extremely abashed.

With the order from their master, the men in black flew out to intercept the invader.

"Nobody's here. What's going on?" When they arrived at the barren mountaintop, they were surprised.

They thought their master could never make such mistakes, so if he said there was a tracker, then there must be a tracker.

But where was he?

A slender figure suddenly arrived at the mountaintop with a delightful scent. It was Wan-Er.

She took a deep breath and then looked into the distance. The path she was looking at was exactly the direction where Ye Xiao had fled to.

The next moment, Wan-Er frowned and said softly, "It was an expert!"

"What do you mean, young lady?" Hei-Yi was a bit relaxed and felt lucky when he saw that nobody was here, but he turned nervous again when he heard Wan-Er.

"This man was hiding here and waiting for a chance to take action." Wan-Er looked down at the grass on the mountaintop. The grass was pale green and was obviously ill.

Along the direction where Wan-Er was looking at, there were actually some bent blades of grass. It was not very obvious, but it couldn't be hidden from her sight.

"Here. There is grass over here, but only three blades are broken. It means that this guy is very good at movement skills and is very

cautious. The three broken grass blades are the result of his panic. He panicked because he noticed our presence. This guy has a perfect hiding skill.

The spot where I am standing is the best place to hide on the mountaintop. It is the only spot on the three mountains from which he could watch down on us and wouldn't be detected... That means he is an attentive and experienced man.

A very short period of time had passed between the time Hei-Yi left this place and the time the master noticed the tracker.

[Even if he had seen us, he could take no more than a glance.

We came here very quickly but still found nobody.

This guy must have a very good spiritual sense, so he noticed the danger and left after just a glance.

He is decisive. He has no hesitations. He had a very scary resolution. Most people will definitely watch us for a longer time, because it is impossible to figure out our array using a single glance. However, this man just left decisively...

This man must be very resolute! If a poisonous snake bit his arm, he would cut his arm off decisively!

Moreover, this guy has a particular smell. It was a pure smell of nature. He must have achieved the ablution of muscles and bones.

Otherwise, he won't carry such smell.

The three broken grass blades are not in the same spot. One of his knees must have pressed on one of them; his hands must have pressed on the others. His other knee must be bent and he must've been preparing to move. Otherwise, there would be four broken grass blades instead.

According to the three marks, he can't be very tall... but he is big, well, unless he had changed his appearance with disguise skills...]

If Ye Xiao was to hear the analyses made by this girl, he would be astonished.

It was hard to believe that the girl had actually inferred so many details by only three marks of broken grasses.

It was very difficult to develop such skill - extremely difficult.

This girl, Wan-Er, was just a maid to the man in white!

If a maid was already this strong, what would her master be like?

...

Chapter 33: An Absolute Accident

Wan-Er frowned and thought for a while.

[However, there may be a small mistake in what I just said. This guy may not be as strong as we imagine. If he was really that strong, he wouldn't have left marks on the grass. But if he really wasn't that strong, it's terrifying that our enemy has such decisiveness.]

They all understood that a stronger cultivator had a stronger determination; naturally, he had more experience, and it was truly terrifying that a cultivator who wasn't strong actually had such a decisive attitude.

Wan-Er spoke slowly with a soft voice as her clothes fluttered in the wind, "This guy is not very strong, but he may cause some unpredictable troubles in the future. If he is from the Ye Clan, then the unpredictable troubles are coming to us for sure."

All the men in black lowered their heads with shame.

Then they all left.

There was only Wan-Er still standing there. She was lost in her thoughts.

The man in white didn't show any response to what had happened. When Hei-Yi apologized, the man in white only replied,

"Doesn't such an enemy make the battle more interesting?"

And he continued, "About the Ye Clan, do what you have to do. Next time, if you are tracked again, bring the culprit to me."

There was actually a sense of longing in his eyes.

A nervous excitement had invaded his heart, [I have finally found someone to fight against and I hope he could be a formidable rival.]

What he was worried about was that he would be disappointed if Ye Xiao wasn't good enough.

...

Ye Xiao ran off the mountain like a wild wind and then snuck back into the Ye Clan's manor. He found that his whole body was sweating!

The sense of crisis had really given him a huge shock!

He had never known that there was such a horrible place with such terrifying people so close to him!

He hadn't calmed down in spite of reaching his home. He still felt scared. He felt that a poisonous snake had marked him.

He remembered the bamboo forest and its vastness.

He couldn't forget that he had clearly sensed a sharp gaze looking and aiming at him!

The one who had noticed him was absolutely not a common expert cultivator.

An expert cultivator like this shouldn't exist in the mortal world; instead, he should be in the Qing-Yun Realm!

Ye Xiao was very sure about that, because he knew that a mortal world would never be able to contain such a person!

However, it was the truth that this guy existed here.

Why?

...

"My lord, we are framed. We are in huge trouble right now." Right after Ye Xiao stepped inside the house, the steward spoke to him. The steward seemed very dissatisfied and worried.

"Trouble?" Ye Xiao frowned, "I don't think so."

"Errh?" The steward was surprised.

He couldn't understand how killing eight expert cultivators of the Mu Clan was not a huge trouble?

"Even if we weren't framed... the Mu Clan would never make peace with us. This time, there is obviously someone who wants to stir up a disturbance. No matter what they are up to, for now, such actions are actually good for us."

Ye Xiao smiled.

The steward felt relieved and said, "Yes." He increasingly felt that his young master was scheming something...

Ye Xiao stopped for a while and continued, "However, there is also something bad for us. Things are fine for us at the moment, but the force that wants to stir the mess up must not be a friend of ours.

It is a powerful enemy - an enemy that is impossible to deal with at the moment!"

When he was speaking, he thought of that mountain and that forest again.

"Well, sometimes enemies help us. As long as we keep being the secondary enemy of every force, we could actually remain safe if the cards are played right! We need to work with them and deal with their primary enemies together! That is an unchanged and

useful strategy! In fact, we may not work with them, but instead, we could just use them!"

The steward lowered his head without saying a word.

Ye Xiao thought bitterly, [It turns out that to be regarded as a secondary enemy is also a self-perpetuating method.] He felt kind of sad about it.

The Xiao Monarch had never been looked down upon in his prior life. He had always been the primary target, no matter who the enemy was.

But now he needed to make use of his enemies' disdain to protect himself. It was a bitter pill to swallow.

[You can despise me today, but sooner or later, I will be too high for you to reach!] Ye Xiao took a deep breath and he thought, [Someday I will show you that it takes a huge amount of hard work to qualify to be my enemy!]

Ye Xiao stepped into the house, "I need to rest."

"The Mu Clan would never make peace with us..." The steward murmured and then was suddenly enlightened.

Ye Xiao was about to enter his room, but he turned around and asked, "Uncle Song, I just got to know that there is a bamboo forest in the center of the capital. Do you know anything about it?"

The steward was shocked.

The bamboo forest didn't shock him; he was shocked because of the 'Uncle Song' which he hadn't been called for a long time.

He was suddenly thrilled. His young master hadn't called him Uncle Song since he was six years old!

Now he was being called that again.

Instantly, the old times were recalled in his mind! He felt like the kid who often cuddled him and sweetly called him uncle was now hugging him again.

He felt like weeping.

He then came back to himself and calmed down, and then he smiled, "There is this place in the capital. It is a restricted zone. No one is allowed to enter it, not even the people from the noble clans or royal clans."

"Restricted zone? Is it really that important?" Ye Xiao was surprised, "I happened to see it when I was hanging around the other day. I didn't expect such a quiet place in the capital. I was thinking about buying a piece of land so that we could build a villa in it. I wonder who made this place. It is actually a restricted zone!"

Steward Song remained thrilled for quite a while. If only he knew what Ye Xiao was thinking right now.

Who on earth could have the luck to be called uncle by the Xiao Monarch in this mortal world?

It was just that Ye Xiao had realized how he should live in this second life.

He was the Xiao Monarch, but at the same time, he was also the foppish lord Ye Xiao. Since he was the foppish lord, he had to start over to become the person who would eclipse what he once was.

He needed to go through all trifles and emotions of a mortal, so as to achieve ultimate success!

He had to experience everything in a mortal life, and most importantly, as Ye Xiao, the young lord.

He should especially change his mindset; he had to let go of the past and embrace the present.

The steward smiled and said, "I am not sure about the details. But I heard that the owner of that area is an exceptional man..."

"An exceptional man..." Ye Xiao thought for a while and nodded.

He then turned around to go into his room, but the steward

spoke, "My lord, are you still thinking about doing something with that bamboo forest? You must not do that. Even the king doesn't dare plan anything against that place..."

Ye Xiao was surprised, and then he replied, "Okay, I got it."

...

It was in the Crown Prince Palace.

The envoy of the Mu Clan had settled here. Although there were about 45 of them, the Crown Prince Palace didn't seem crowded at all.

The eight, who had perished after attacking the General's House the other day, were only the vanguard of their forces.

The Crown Prince hadn't shown his face since the start. In fact, he had even gone to the Imperial Palace and hadn't come out even once.

The Crown Princess and the Mu Clan clearly knew why the Crown Prince did so - he was displeased because they had used their military force just to kill a brat, Ye Xiao!

The Crown Prince was fighting against the other princes under the table, and none of them were easy to deal with.

He would be utterly isolated and would bite the dust if he wasn't careful enough. If he lost the throne, his life would be more miserable than a civilian's!

At this crucial moment for him, the others, including his wife, had actually shown little consideration for his situation.

Therefore, the Crown Prince was pissed; he was very angry. He had already told them his plan, but no one listened to him.

However, the current situation wasn't just about him; it was about the whole clan. Hence, the Crown Prince could do nothing but hold his rage inside his mind.

So he hid away from home.

Since he had decided to hide, he surely needed to choose a secure location; the Imperial Palace was a really good place for him.

In fact, it was his only choice and it was the perfect choice.

To live with his father, the king, was not a comfortable thing to do for him, and he might even get into some trouble, but it allowed him to have some amount of control over everything!

After all, it did more good than harm to his ambition!

For the Mu Clan, they didn't care whether the Crown Prince was

or wasn't with them. It wouldn't make any difference to what they had planned, because they had everything they needed for this battle.

The people from the Mu Clan were waiting for a long time for response from their vanguard. They kept waiting till the late hours.

"Why have they not yet returned?" Said the leader - an old man. When he just finished asking, information about the eight men was finally sent back to them.

A man in black, about 30 years old, entered the palace while scratching his head. He stuttered out a few words, "B-Bad news..." He was quivering and his face was pale and filled with fear.

"What is it? What happened?" Seeing the terrified look on this man's face, people instantly felt nervous.

They stood up at the same time.

"The eight vanguards... who went to the house of Ye... died in the General's House! None of them lived. It seems that their heads were all cut off..." The man was quivering, "Furthermore, they were all killed by just one strike each; they were instantly killed!"

Chapter 34: Here Comes Master Feng

"They didn't even have the chance to strike back. Every single one of them! The Ye Clan has already contacted the government. They have told the officers that they had encountered assassins. The eight dead bodies were sent to the guardian's department of the capital..."

"What! What did you say?" The old man slapped the table hard and stood up at once, "Unbelievable!"

The others looked at each other in speechless despair.

They felt shocked as they couldn't imagine that there was actually such a powerful force in a general's family.

They clearly knew what strength the eight vanguards had; in fact, that was why they were shocked when they were told that the eight powerful men all got killed by a single strike!

The Crown Princess was sitting on her chair. She was shocked and her mouth was wide open when she heard the conversation.

They all felt that it was unimaginable! It was as if a ghost suddenly appeared right in front of them!

The Crown Princess even felt a bit dizzy at the moment.

"The Ye Clan!!" The old man humphed heavily and his eyes were filled with coldness, "Tell me. How did it happen?"

"Well... At first they were in a quarrel. Then they started to rush into the house. At the same time, the steward of the house shouted 'stop them', and then many voices sounded from the house. Seven men of the Ye Clan showed up first and stopped our men beyond the ground. Each of them... took only one strike! And then..."

"One strike..." Everyone fearfully gasped.

"That's right. One strike..."

"Tonight, I am going to experience myself the unfathomable power of the Ye Clan!" The old man's eyes lit up with killing intent.

"Well... Tomorrow is the day when the auction of the supreme dan beads will be held..." A middle-aged scholar beside him spoke out, "Besides, if the Ye Clan was truly that powerful, we might be defeated unexpectedly... First thing's first. I think we should aim for the supreme dan beads... and take them back to our clan. We could avenge Chengbai later after the auction. If we hold up our clan's mission because of some revenge, then we spoil the ship for a half-pennyworth of tar... No one wants to take such blame."

Everyone was silent.

The next moment, a voice sounded outside the door, "Message from the king."

It continued with the king's words, "The capital is involved in a great disturbance. All of you should stay dutiful. Do not make any arbitrary moves..."

And then messages from different forces came to the Crown Prince Palace one by one.

"The prime chief of the Cyan Cloud Sect has brought three disciples to the Chen-Xing City."

"The second prime chief of the Green Mountain Sect has settled with their disciples in the Chen-Xing City, right beside the salesroom."

"The prime dan-maker and the hierarch of Reaching Cloud Hall has entered the Chen-Xing City with seven disciples."

"The Peaceful Mountain Sect has entered the Chen-Xing City."

"The Long clan has come to the capital!"

"The Nangong clan has arrived in the capital..."

"The Gongsun clan..."

...

Messages were piling-up in front of them. Like it was said in the king's message, the capital was caught in a great disturbance!

In fact, the disturbance was caused by the auction of those supreme dan beads.

If they continued messing with the Ye Clan and caused another delay of the auction, then, all the sects and clans would definitely see them as the first target to hit.

And... the General's House was not far from the salesroom, so it would be impossible for them to get away from those crazy people.

The old man's face turned dark as he took a deep breath, "You are right. The clan comes first."

He surely needed to say something obedient, but everyone knew about his reluctance to do so just by looking at his dark face.

"Let's go collect the bodies of our men first!" The old man felt helpless when he said so.

When Mu Chengbai died, they had made some plans to avenge him; now there were eight more of them who had died, but he could do nothing but wait for an opportunity!

It was really driving them crazy!

...

On the other side, Ye Xiao felt relieved when he saw the sun rising up.

It was finally the day of the auction!

He was certain that he would not be attacked today.

In fact, one day was all Ye Xiao needed to fill up the spiritual space and to feed the Heaven's Cyan.

Besides, he needed to make a plan to ensure his family's safety.

However, it would be better if he could get more time.

Anyway, at least he could get a day if he could hang on till the auction.

The steward felt relieved too. People who were sent to watch the Ye Clan all felt relieved, as well as Su Ye-Yue, Lan Lang-Lang and Zuo Wu-Ji.

After the battle that happened the other night, everyone had been well prepared. At least they all knew about what the Ye Clan was capable of...

Even the Crown Prince and the king, who were in the Imperial Palace, felt relieved at this moment.

Although what happened between the Mu Clan and the Ye Clan the other night was just a battle between two forces, it was something that had drawn everyone's attention...

In a single day, things totally changed in the capital. Different forces settled in the capital, but the whole situation was oddly kept in balance! At least it looked peaceful and gave the illusion that nothing was happening.

...

Early morning, before the sun rose, the Ling-Bao Hall was still sparsely occupied. However, everyone who passed the door could feel that a lot of eyes were inspecting the hall.

When the first sunlight shone, the colorful flag of the Ling-Bao Hall was finally raised. It was a seven-colored flag which was waving in the air, and it showed the people that the auction taking place over here would be extraordinary.

People who saw the flag felt excited.

The seven-colored flag meant that this was a top-class auction!

There had only been three instances in the mortal world when the seven-colored flag had been raised, so everyone interested in this auction felt thrilled when they saw the flag.

Since the salesroom had already raised the seven-colored flag, it was already given that there would be immensely valuable items for auction!

All the clans and sects would definitely want to participate in today's auction!

They needed to take advantage of the auction to improve their strength, to break through the bottleneck of their cultivation, to train their successors...

There was a long way to go for all of them!

...

The sun was shining on the roof of the salesroom, and the flag was gently waving in the air. A lot of instruments were creating music which seemed to cover the entire auction hall. The door of the salesroom was suddenly opened, and then two columns of girls in white came out. Their long dresses were fluttering as they walked. They stood still on each side of the door as a red carpet spread between the two columns from inside the salesroom to the street.

The wind was flowing. The white dresses were fluttering, their

beautiful hair was waving in the air, and an enchanting scent was spreading all over!

"It is top quality!"

Some people couldn't help but stare at the girls while everyone realized the same problem - they didn't know if they had brought enough money or not.

They didn't want to be disgraced.

"The auction begins shortly inside the Ling-Bao Hall Salesroom! All our honored guests should please get in the salesroom!" A loud voice was echoed out like a huge bell.

Some people started to enter the Ling-Bao Hall from different ways in front of the door.

They were all wearing robes and walked leisurely. They acted like sages.

Some other people had actually arrived for a long time, but they didn't get into the salesroom with the crowd.

There was a latent rule for entering the salesroom at the auction that people should take turns to enter the salesroom - the stronger person entered first. He who broke the rule might get killed... If one was to mess with some powerful guy, his entire clan might get wiped out.

People in the martial world cared a lot about prestige.

A man would enter when it was his turn; if someone entered before him and he thought this 'someone' was inferior... then he would start a fight against the inferior fellow who had the audacity to enter before him!

And it was basically, a fight of life and death.

In front of the door, there was an emcee naming the list in a singing voice.

"The prime master of the Cyan Cloud Sect, Meng Wufei. Mr. Meng, please!"

"The master of the Green Mountain Sect, Li Changqing. Mr. Li, Please!"

"The hierarch of the Reaching Cloud Hall, Xiao Moyan, Please!"

...

The names of the important persons in the martial world were read aloud one by one. People felt awed when they heard these names.

All of them were legendary people in this mortal world, and now

they were all here.

They were all here for a simple auction!

As more and more big shots were called, about twenty of them had already entered. And there were still a lot of people crowded outside the door.

Everyone started to get excited. They wondered how many more great men would actually turn up.

There was more than one supreme dan bead for sure, but there were absolutely not enough dan beads for all of them!

A sign of a foreseeable battle was silently showing up!

Well in fact, it was a battle of financial might!

No matter who won, he was definitely going to pay through the nose this time.

Suddenly, a man with a strong body and a square face casually stepped to the door jumping the queue. He looked somewhat handsome.

People were surprised. They couldn't believe that there was actually someone who dared to break the custom!

They thought that even though no one in the queue would stop him, people from the Ling-Bao Hall would definitely banish him at once!

Surprisingly, people from the Ling-Bao Hall didn't do anything, except that the emcee spoke loudly, "Feng Zhiling, Master Feng, Please!"

"Master Feng? Who the hell is Master Feng?"

The crowd was in an uproar.

They had never heard of this name before.

But this guy came and casually entered the salesroom...

Why? Was this unknown guy really that important?

Who was he?

Where was he from? What was his background? How could he enter before all the great men who were still standing outside?

There were too many questions lying inside everybody's mind.

...

Chapter 35: Two Tumbles

Master Feng was, of course, Ye Xiao in disguise.

The Xiao Monarch had once again changed his appearance into that of Feng Zhiling. He casually walked into the salesroom and stood against the handrail on the second floor as he looked down at the crowd.

He was acting high profile in everyone's eyes.

All the people were giving him confused looks, but he remained indifferent and ignored them all.

He just silently stood there and carefully observed everyone who entered the salesroom.

The prime connoisseur of the salesroom, Guan Wanshan, walked over humbly and smiled, "Brother Feng. You are early. I apologize for not being at the entrance to personally greet you."

In fact, Guan Wanshan was thinking, [Didn't he say he wanted to stay low key? Why is he acting so haughty in front of such a large crowd? Does he not know that he may expose himself?]

Ye Xiao spoke calmly, "It doesn't matter. I just want to check and see whether my dan beads will be sold for a proper price."

Guan Wanshan replied seriously, "No need to worry about that. Such a legendary treasure is certainly something people are willing to die for. In fact, we bought 5 beads from you for only 500 thousand taels of silver. We truly have taken advantage of you."

Ye Xiao said peacefully, "Well, I am sure that if you didn't get this little advantage, you wouldn't have been able to handle this job properly."

Although he was experienced in reception, Guan Wanshan couldn't give a reply. He thought, [This guy is too straight; he talks nothing like a business man. He knows nothing about confabulation and doesn't care about my feelings at all.]

So he walked away after making a few more conventional remarks.

People from different sects were seated on the first floor, and people from the royal families and the noble clans were taking their seats on the second floor.

The eight noble clans were well known worldwide, and all of them held unimaginable power. Although their positions were still lower than the royal families, everyone knew that this arrangement was only in name.

After all, it was the royal blood that ruled the land, not the noble clans.

Meanwhile, the names from the Mu Clan sounded at the door. An old man and a middle-aged man entered. Both of them were wearing robes with serious and righteous looks. They casually entered the salesroom.

They acted nobly, like dragons and tigers, and showed an overbearing attitude!

They were showing exactly what a noble clan should be like!

Ye Xiao's eyes were distant when he saw them. He tightly clenched his right fist which was hidden underneath his sleeve.

The power of the gelid qi was aroused and swarmed in his fist.

It was traceless and silent.

"Of course they are one of the noble clans. Look at their distinguished manners."

"Absolutely. That's the spirit of a noble clan..."

People couldn't stop praising these two men.

The two men from the Mu Clan didn't seem pleased at all; but in fact, they were delighted inside their minds. They were sure that after the auction, they would be promoted as they had rendered a great service to their clan...

They felt that they had already shown everyone the great image of their clan...

Meanwhile...

When the middle-aged Mu Clan delegate was striding proudly ahead...

He suddenly felt his foot slip. He had been really complacent and vigorous, but he unexpectedly lost his balance and staggered ahead, nearly falling on the floor. But, he was an experienced cultivator and was able to use the spiritual energy in his body to forcefully steady himself. Otherwise, he would have definitely suffered an embarrassing tumble.

Even so, it still looked quite awkward. Such an accident suddenly came out from nowhere. He thought that it was ridiculous!

People's praises immediately turned into silence. Everyone was stunned. They couldn't believe that a delegate of the well-known Mu Clan was actually acting in such a clumsy manner during this important occasion.

After a while, some people in the crowd started to laugh aloud.

The next moment, the middle-aged man stood straight, completely flustered. He looked down at his feet and saw nothing wrong. He continued walking ahead as he thought that it would be

more embarrassing if he stopped now. So he braced himself up and cautiously took a step ahead. He acted like nothing had happened.

When he took the third step, he finally felt relieved. However, the next moment, he suddenly felt that his foot had slipped again!

Again, it was totally unexpected. It was even more embarrassing this time. - Poof - He staggered ahead with great momentum!

He almost rushed forward!

As he moved too fast, his hands uncontrollably rose up and he immediately fell down to the floor. He really couldn't hold himself up, so he had to quickly draw back and put his hands on the floor. He finally prevented his head from crashing on the ground disgracefully.

He then used his flying skills to raise his body and stand straight. His face was totally flushed, like it was about to bleed.

He had just brought shame on himself and his clan in everyone's eyes!

"Why is he acting like this... What the fxxk is wrong with him? He's from one of the bloody noble clans... It may be just an accident to fall down the first time, but to fall down again is even worse, isn't it just too stupid?"

"Hey you! He is from the Mu Clan alright?! Don't involve the

others! Can you talk decently?"

"Urhh... Yes, you're right... Haha ha..."

The crowd burst into peals of laughter and it lasted a long time!

The old man - the other delegate of the Mu Clan rebuked the middle-aged man in a low voice with embarrassment written all over his face, "What is wrong with you? How could you make such a stupid mistake in this important moment? You are really an unbecoming useless shxt! You shouldn't have come with me!"

The middle-aged man was so embarrassed that he had to bow and explain, "It felt like I stepped on some ice..."

The old man raged, "Bull-fxxking-shit! Ice in a hot summer?! It is in the Ling-Bao Hall! How could there possibly be ice on the floor? You could at least make up a better excuse! Moron! I should have let your mother have an abortion if I knew you would bring me such shame!"

The middle-aged man had no words to argue against the old man, so he just kept apologizing, but he was thinking, [My mother has been dead long ago... You beat her to death... How dare you mention her... Old bastard, I would kick you to death if you were not my bloody father!]

They both had suspected that someone was messing with them, but they quickly gave up on this idea, as they thought nobody

would dare to do such a thing in front of all these people. Besides, they didn't feel any trace of spiritual power, so they had no reason to make that presumption. As the old man had said, it was in the Ling-Bao Hall; even the eight noble clans, who were usually pretentious, didn't dare to declare themselves to be the most powerful.

The most important thing was that even though these two fellows had seen many things in the world, they could have never thought of a wonderful martial art called the East-rising Purple Qi!

On the second floor, Ye Xiao relaxed after assaulting the Mu Clan delegates. He quickly loosened his fist when he felt a hint of coldness on his palm.

Minutes ago, he had used his gelid qi to make two pieces of ice that were thinner than cicada's wings. He had been remotely controlling the ice and had set the ice under the poor middle-aged delegate's feet. No one had noticed it!

In fact, it was a risky move.

But in the end, Ye Xiao had successfully played a trick on the Mu Clan, and most importantly, it had gone unnoticed!

People in this place might not be that powerful in the Xiao Monarch's eyes, but right now, he was just Ye Xiao. These men here were all the top-class cultivators of this world. Ye Xiao might have the chance to overwhelm one or two of them, but it wouldn't be easy!

There were some people from the sects that Ye Xiao was unable to see through. So he kept his mind completely alert.

The assault was just an inoffensive trick, but what it had resulted in was enough to satisfy Ye Xiao for now.

[The East-rising Purple Qi is truly wonderful. It must be the number 1 martial art in the world!] Ye Xiao was thinking, [If anything I cannot personally deal with happen in the future, I can totally use such skill to overcome it. No trace will be left! It is really a perfect skill for assassinations and sneaky raids..."]

Ye Xiao kept looking at the red carpet on the first floor and found nothing. Only after this did he show his satisfaction.

The ice quietly vanished after it had made the man's feet slip. It left no marks of water or any other color. It was truly traceless and soundless.

Ye Xiao believed that even if it were on dry soil, the ice would leave no trace, especially in the battlefield where everyone was fighting and sweating...

A smile appeared on Ye Xiao's face.

The next moment, Ye Xiao saw Su Yeyue and some of her sisters enter the salesroom. Following her were two lads who were dressed decently and walked into the house side-by-side. They

seemed personable from a distance, but they were actually Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji.

One of them was walking like he had no spine, and the other was looking around with his weirdly crossed-eyes... They were somehow uncomely.

They were muttering to each other.

"Where is the little fxxker Ye Xiao? Doesn't he know that today is a big day for the 'three lords'? We should atleast show up together..."

"I wonder if I can get my jade ruyi... Damn it, is it really happening? These people are not all coming for my jade ruyi, are they..."

"Fxxk them all!"

"What? You dare...?"

"I don't... but I know that you dare..."

"Of course I do, but I'm afraid I'd lose..."

...

Chapter 36: The Girl and the Golden Hand!

There were four groups of people who had come representing the royal families, about fifteen groups from the martial clans, and eight groups from the eight noble clans who were seated in the salesroom. There were also many people from the active sects, while surprisingly, fifteen reclusive sects had actually sent their men here...

There were nearly four hundred people attending this auction, including those that were mentioned previously as well as some unattached cultivators.

Everyone who had arrived here had high status in the mortal world...

Such an auction was the only thing that could gather all these men in the recent ten years!

It was time to close the door and begin the auction. No more people would be allowed into the salesroom.

Suddenly, just as the doors were closing, a carriage slowly pulled over.

The carriage had a strange appearance. It was made completely out of bamboos, and it was small and exquisite. It looked upmarket and it was filled with the vivid scent of nature.

The carriage stopped in front of the door.

Two strong men bowed and opened the drapes. A beautiful foot elegantly reached out from the carriage and stepped on the ground. It was an extremely eye-catching scene.

At the moment, this beautiful foot drew everyone's eyes immediately.

The next moment, a girl in white with a gorgeous body and dark hair got off the carriage and stood at the entrance.

She became the center of attention by simply standing there. Even though she was just wearing some ordinary white clothes, its beauty surpassed thousands of glittering suits.

By now, the salesroom had turned completely silent.

People were all shocked by her elegance!

"So this is the well-known Ling-Bao Hall, right?" The girl in white entered through the doorway and smiled gently.

The two lines of ceremonial girls at the door were actually charming, but they became commonplace girls when compared to the smiling beauty in white.

Guan Wanshan hurried out and looked terrified. He was no

longer his usual calm self. He stopped in front of the girl in white and gave a humble salute, "It is my honor to meet you here, my lady. How is the master?"

The girl in white looked at him and smiled. She slightly returned a salute and said, "Oh I am surprised that Master Guan still remembers me. Thanks for your concern. My master is fine."

Guan Wanshan felt relaxed and kept bowing, "You have graced Ling-Bao Hall with your presence, my lady! Please! Come on in, my lady."

The girl in white smiled, "I came without notifying you. I hope you don't mind, Master Guan..."

Guan Wanshan had started sweating and kept bowing, "No. No. No... Your presence is our enormous honor..."

The girl in white, along with the humbled Guan Wanshan, entered the salesroom with a smile.

Following her were two men in black, completely expressionless, like two majestic pillars - one at her left while the other at her right.

Ye Xiao looked at the girl and her guards. He felt extremely curious.

Who was this girl?

Guan Wanshan was simply a connoisseur of the Ling-Bao Hall, not a supreme cultivator, but everyone knew that there was an extremely powerful force backing the Ling-Bao Hall. That was why even the eight noble clans didn't dare to make any trouble in the salesroom. Yet Guan Wanshan acted so humbly in front of the girl in white and was actually terrified of offending her! Why?

In addition, they mentioned a person when they were talking - the master!

Who was the master?

Ye Xiao's face was peaceful, but he was thinking nervously, [Guan Wanshan called that guy 'master'. That is nothing strange. But the noble girl also called that guy 'master'. Now that is strange... Could it be...]

Ye Xiao gasped and thought about one possibility, [... Could it be that this noble girl who seems powerful is only a maid of that 'master'?]

As Ye Xiao speculated, this girl was just a maid, but Guan Wanshan treated her respectfully - in fact, he was extremely humble. There must be a mystery behind their relationship!

The question was that who on earth could actually have such gorgeous beauty as his maid?

The girl was walking. She suddenly looked up at Ye Xiao with her charming eyes and smiled, "Master Guan, the auction is still far from beginning, and there is already a friend standing beside the handrail in the upper floor... I guess this friend is not an ordinary man."

Guan Wanshan was an experienced man, so he understood that the girl was actually inquiring about Ye Xiao. It looked like the smart girl had already noticed that Ye Xiao was not an ordinary person.

People of the salesroom were all busy preparing for the auction, so she was sure Ye Xiao wasn't a staff member. Everyone else was sitting and waiting for the auction to begin and wouldn't leisurely stand there.

So when the girl noticed that Ye Xiao was different, she naturally felt curious about his identity.

Ye Xiao stood there away from the crowd, because firstly, he wanted to watch the outstanding cultivators among the crowd in order to be prepared for any possible situations; secondly, he was in a disguise so he didn't need to be cautious about getting into any trouble; thirdly, as a profound man, he was actually trying to attract the attention of elegant young ladies...

The girl in white had given her attention to Ye Xiao, and it was just what he had wished for. The girl was interested in Ye Xiao while Ye Xiao was interested in her as well. The girl had completely drawn his attention when she showed up. Ye Xiao felt her uniqueness which made him interested in both her and her

master.

The girl and Ye Xiao held 'affections' towards each other, and they looked like a couple on their first date, but nobody knew that Guan Wanshan was in an awkward situation.

The girl was asking him about Ye Xiao and he should have answered her without any hesitation. However, Ye Xiao was the man who had provided the supreme dan beads, and he didn't want her to know this fact.

If her master learnt this fact, the Ling-Bao Hall would lose the chance to get more supreme dan beads from Feng Zhiling.

So he had to lie to the girl even though he knew he might offend the powerful master!

Guan Wanshan spoke bitterly, "I beg your forgiveness my lady. The guy is an old friend of mine. He has been in the wild for a long time so... he barely knows etiquettes. Please forgive him."

"Oh." The girl answered peacefully, "It is a man without etiquettes! A man like this may bring you huge trouble someday..."

She had a soft voice, but this sentence sounded scary.

She looked around for a bit before finally resting her gaze on Ye Xiao once again.

She decided to figure out who this guy was.

Ye Xiao sensed the sharpness of the girl's gaze.

[Well? The girl is trying to mess with me! Does she want to check my background?] He thought.

Then Ye Xiao spoke gently, "You are so imposing, my lady. I am afraid you have no rights to poke your nose into other's business as you are just a little girl. A lady speaking like that, I am afraid it has showed your ignorance. In my opinion, your master should teach you more about manners."

Guan Wanshan called her 'my lady' because of his respect, but when Ye Xiao used it, it sounded sarcastic.

The girl in white frowned, "Sir, I am afraid you are overreacting. What? Is your name really that unpresentable?"

Ye Xiao glanced at her and replied, "You spoke bitingly first. I just struck back. How am I overreacting? I don't know if my name is unpresentable, but I am not. I am standing right here."

Guan Wanshan was awfully anxious. The girl and Feng Zhiling were having a standoff right in his face; they might start a fight if this continues. He felt bitter in his heart as the situation right now was completely out of his control.

He didn't understand how this Feng Zhiling, who used to be so steady, could become so unreasonable at this moment. He actually got himself into a quarrel right as the auction was about to begin, and that too against somebody he should never mess with.

And he also didn't understand how the smart and elegant lady could become so hot-headed.

However, what he truly didn't know was that they were doing exactly what they intended to do.

Even though the girl and Ye Xiao didn't know each other, they felt the importance of each other. Ye Xiao felt that the girl was someone important while the girl felt the same about Ye Xiao, so coincidentally, they produced this conflict together. It created the seed for future interaction between them.

They were both smart and insightful.

The girl in white spoke chillingly, "You talk wildly, so you must have some outstanding abilities, I assume." She was challenging him.

Ye Xiao sneered, "Of course I have some specialties. It is a dangerous world after all. Do you dare to try me?" He faced the challenge head on!

The girl's face turned gloomy as she calmly spoke, "Go get him!"

One of the men in black behind her suddenly jumped up high with a focused look in his eyes. He turned into a black whirlwind in the air making a cracking noise, and then he suddenly reached his hand out to whack Ye Xiao's scalp.

It was a slapping move. If Ye Xiao was incautious, he would be killed in an instant!

Ye Xiao glared down at the moving figure and shouted, "Nice move."

When the man was about to reach the upper floor and get Ye Xiao, Ye Xiao had already rushed out from the handrail like a flying arrow. He was rushing towards the man in black, aiming for a direct confrontation!

- Puff! - His hand suddenly emerged from the sleeve and instantly turned golden!

It was one of Ye Xiao's special martial skills. It allowed him to turn his hand solid, like gold; it was a hand that could crush mountains into pieces! It could crush everything!

It was the Golden Hand!

...

Chapter 37: To Fight for the Promise

The man in black was aiming to jump higher than Ye Xiao so that he could occupy a commanding position in order to attack Ye Xiao with a fierce strike. However, Ye Xiao had noticed his intention and struck out earlier than the man had expected. Now it was Ye Xiao who occupied the higher position!

There was no turning-around for both of them. Both of their hands collided in an instant. - Bang! - Golden lights flashed out and dazed the surrounding people, causing everyone else to lose their vision because of these flashing lights.

The man in black felt confused and withdrew his hand. He stopped his offense and immediately decided to focus on his defense. He tried everything he could to defend himself in order to stay unharmed. He wasn't rising up anymore; instead, he was falling to the ground. Ye Xiao was still above him and his golden hand was reaching for his scalp while constantly emitting a golden glow. Ye Xiao was being extremely aggressive in order to beat the enemy as soon as possible.

The girl in white had watched every move made by Ye Xiao. She looked worried instead of calm, and she said, "Hei-San will suffer... He shouldn't have jumped like that. The way he fights is only suitable for the situation where he has the higher position. Now he is fighting from a lower position. He may have won if the enemy had been much weaker than him, but he has made a rash move as he didn't know his enemy completely. How could an experienced cultivator like him make such an amateur mistake?"

The other man in black, who was still standing behind the girl, answered with a straight face, "Yes, he did make a mistake. But if it was me, I would take the same approach. We want to beat that guy in a challenging way so as to bring honor to you. The guy looked like he was only at the Mortal Origin Stage and should have been very weak compared to Hei-San and me, so we were confident that we could beat him anyway. However, we didn't know that this guy was hiding his energy. In fact, he has at least reached the intermediate level of the Earth Origin Realm! It must be a snare he uses to fool people like us. I don't think we can win this fight."

The girl in white hadn't expected the man in black to talk this much as he was usually quiet.

During the time they were talking...

Ye Xiao landed on the ground with a laugh. He then proceeded to use both of his two golden hands at the same time which moved rapidly and created two lines of golden flashes. This made his hands look like it was lightning.

- Swish! Swish! Swish! -

He was making unpredictable moves; he completely sacrificed his defense and focused only on his offense.

The man in black, who was at a disadvantage, was ashamed and angry. He strained all of his muscles to keep his defense up and wait for an opportunity to counter-attack, but he got no such opportunity under the relentless barrage of strikes given by Ye

Xiao.

The man in black, [Hei-San](#), hadn't thought that his enemy could hit so aggressively. He hadn't expected that he would fall into such an awkward situation where he could only suffer and not be able to retaliate. All he had done was just make a mistake in gauging the opponent's strength at the beginning!

He didn't understand why Ye Xiao could pressure him to such an extent as he knew that he was much stronger than Ye Xiao! He wasn't even getting time to breathe!

Hei-San was finally forced down to the ground after he jumped up and fought against Ye Xiao. Although only a very short amount of time had passed since Hei-San had jumped to attack Ye Xiao, he had already taken nearly 40 solid slaps from Ye Xiao!

- Bang! -

Hei-San stood on the ground with his feet planted firmly like two metal pillars. The floor suddenly cracked and splinters flew in the air!

He finally stood on the ground after taking some severe hits. He stood straight up after only staggering a bit! His eyes turned red. He felt humiliated and was preparing to start a furious attack of his own.

On the other side, Ye Xiao took a beautiful somersault in the air,

and during which, he clapped his golden hands once, causing them to revert back to their previous state. By the time he had stepped on the ground, his hands had completely turned normal. It was a beautiful movement. He then spoke peacefully with his hands on his back, "You are washed-up!"

Hei-San stared at him and replied with a beast-like voice, "Am I?"

"Yes you are." The girl in white agreed, "Although you are at a higher level than him in cultivation, you touched the ground first... So, you lost."

Hei-San showed an angry blush, "But... I... No one says that the one that touches the ground loses!"

The girl stopped speaking and remained silent.

Her silence was eerie and actually made the men in black feel stressed and terrified.

Hei-San's face suddenly turned pale and he stepped forward in terror, "I am so sorry, my lady. I was wrong."

The girl glanced at him and said nothing.

Hei-San was sweating a lot and finally kneeled at the girl's feet after some thinking. He laid his forehead on the ground and spoke in a low voice, "My lady, I was wrong! I beg your forgiveness!"

The girl looked at him and sighed, "When you lose, you lose; it is no big deal. If you kept such attitude all the time, you can only be a boor. The world of the martial arts would never accept you! Think about it... If it was not me whom you were talking to; instead, if it was... do you think you would still be alive after talking like that?"

Hei-San was shivering; he was too terrified.

"Get up." The girl in white spoke with a charming voice.

Hei-San stood up to and returned to the left side of the girl while keeping his head lowered. He dared not to say anything now. The other man in black looked at him with a look which said 'thank god, you are so lucky'.

The men in black felt relieved.

The girl looked at Ye Xiao and spoke cheerfully, "Well fought. May I have your name please?"

Ye Xiao kept his hands on his back and stood naturally like an expert cultivator. He answered casually, "Feng."

"Master Feng." The girl immediately turned distant, "You are a good cultivator with spectacular skills. However, you insulted my man. That is quite an offense... Now as the auction is about to begin, it's better that we don't spend too much time talking. What do you say that you accompany me after the auction, if you have

guts?"

Ye Xiao laughed, "A challenge? Do you think I, as a man, would fear you, a girl? Okay. See you after the auction."

"A promise is a promise." The girl added.

"A promise is a promise!" Ye Xiao nodded seriously.

What happened before was nothing important; what mattered the most was the agreement which they had made at the end.

The girl nodded lightly and looked at Ye Xiao. And then she left with the two men in black.

"Wait." Ye Xiao smiled and threw over a small bottle. The bottle dropped into Hei-San's arms.

"My golden hands were poisonous." Ye Xiao spoke calmly.

Hei-San was shocked and looked at Ye Xiao.

The girl frowned and said to Hei-San, "Take it." And then she smiled to Ye Xiao, "Thanks Master Feng."

Ye Xiao smiled, "No problems. It wouldn't be good for anybody if someone died."

Then they both laughed.

The girl in white went on and walked away with the two men in black.

They became more cautious and confused, "Golden Hand? Poisonous? Got poisoned imperceptibly? What is that skill?"

They felt that this Master Feng deserved their respect.

They didn't know that the 'Golden Hand' was like Feng Zhiling's face - a disguise.

When the two men in black walked past him, Ye Xiao felt uneasiness in his mind.

The men in black had brought Ye Xiao a sense of familiarity.

He seemed to know them.

Moreover, when he was fighting against one of them, Ye Xiao had felt something peculiar - a feeling of bloodlust, originating from a blademaster.

He knew that only expert blademasters could produce such a feeling.

Ye Xiao had noticed that the man had many calluses on the edge of his palm.

The calluses were special.

[They were not the calluses that were caused by casually playing with swords. He was a blademaster.] He thought, [Blades. Blademasters. It feels familiar...]

Ye Xiao suddenly recollected the figures that had flown away from his house the other night. He looked at the direction where the girl had gone, but they had already vanished into thin air.

"It was you."

...

Ye Xiao had successfully gained vital information from the contact with the girl's bodyguard. He turned around and entered the salesroom. When he had just stepped inside the salesroom and the door was about to close, two new groups of people arrived at the scene.

These two groups did not utter a single word and casually walked into the salesroom.

...

- Dong! -

The bell rang. The salesroom turned silent.

Guan Wanshan stood on the stage wearing a red robe. He was presiding the auction all by himself this time. His old face was filled with pride and delight.

He was quite confident that, with this auction, a new record would be created.

The thirty balconies were fully occupied, so was the main court in the first floor.

Guan Wanshan was completely pleased. He looked at the big crowd in front of him and felt a sense of achievement. Usually... it was difficult to invite just one or two of these people to attend an auction, but now they were all here!

"I declare the auction to have started!" Guan Wanshan knew well that these words were what the people wanted to hear the most, so he went straight to it.

He didn't need to say anything to build the atmosphere. It might displease people if he spoke superfluous words; this auction was definitely special.

Hei-San: This name literally translates to Dark-Three. The name must be a secret agent codename similar to the name Hei-Jiu, who

had appeared in [Chapter 27](#).

Chapter 38: Transformation Began; The Crystal Lotus

Guan Wanshan got on the stage and announced straight away that the auction had begun.

As expected, everyone felt pleased and looked at him with praise.

This salesroom knew well about business...

"The first object to be auctioned is... a jade ruyi!" Guan Wanshan waved his hand and a girl showed up on stage with the jade ruyi.

"This is a top quality jade ruyi. The starting price has been set at 400 taels of gold, and the bid increment is 50 taels of gold."

In fact, Guan Wanshan sounded downhearted.

A jade ruyi was surely not an important item in such a top-class auction. Guan Wanshan originally didn't want it at the auction, but Feng Zhiling had asked him to do so. And Guan Wanshan certainly didn't understand why...

When the jade ruyi showed up, the crowd was quiet as expected.

Everyone was either closing their eyes or looking away; nobody even thought about bidding. They didn't even want to bother showing their disdain!

For these people, a jade ruyi really had no value.

They were all revered experts; how could they be interested in such a mundane thing?

Guan Wanshan felt helpless.

He thought that Feng Zhiling truly had undermined him this time... Feng Zhi-Ling had asked him to put the jade ruyi in the auction, but now it was going to be abortive as the first item...

Luckily a voice sounded, "Four hundred taels of gold!"

It was Zuo Wuji!

Guan Wanshan felt relieved. To him, Zuo Wuji's voice was like a song from the heaven!

Zuo Wuji gave the first bid and then looked around nervously, but he found that no one was bidding after him. He was delighted.

He didn't know that all the other people were saving their money for the supreme dan beads. They certainly wouldn't spend a penny on this jade ruyi. After all, they might need the 400 taels of gold to win the dan beads; how could they take that risk?

Guan Wanshan called the bid three times, but nobody even

looked at him. He banged the gavel quickly and sold the first item to Zuo Wuji at the starting price!

Although it was a low-priced deal, Guan Wanshan was happy about it. In fact, he felt a little bit thankful for Zuo Wuji. In his mind, Zuo Wuji had saved him in this awkward situation!

Zuo Wuji finally got the jade ruyi he so desperately wanted. He felt like he was dreaming, "That was so easy... I just got it? Nobody even tried to bid against me..."

Lan Langlang's eyes popped wide open, "What? That was too easy, wasn't it? What is going on?"

Zuo Wuji was holding the jade ruyi, yet he didn't feel happy.

Instead, he was feeling a hint of depression.

He used to think that his family was great, and that he was better than most of the people in this world. However, right at this moment, he found out that he was certainly not. The thing that he wanted so much turned out to be something that real cultivators disdained!

Zuo Wuji kept his head low while holding the jade ruyi in his arms.

A feeling of humiliation appeared in his heart. [The jade ruyi is just garbage for them... Why should I want it so badly? Is it all

about cultivation in this world?]

Lan Langlang was thinking, [I thought millions of taels of gold could be enough to make me a dragon among men. It turns out I was wrong... Having millions of taels of gold means nothing... Even if I have an endless flow of money, how could I protect my wealth if I am not strong like these masters here?]

...

Ye Xiao was looking at his two best friends from the balcony and he couldn't help sighing.

[Finally, you two have realized the truth; or maybe you have started to realize the truth.] Ye Xiao sighed, [What a shame... It is already too late. You have passed your perfect periods, and it's pointless for you to start cultivating now. How can either of you ever reach the pinnacle of cultivation in your lives?]

While collecting his thoughts, he heard Guan Wanshan's voice, "The next item is a Crystal Lotus. This Crystal Lotus is 1500 years old. Its petals have shown some red streaks. It is about to become a Bloodshot Lotus. It is an extraordinary medical material. The starting price is 5000 taels of silver; 500 taels of silver is added for each bid."

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up.

The Crystal Lotus?

The old man of the Mu Clan raised his hand, "5500."

The Crystal Lotus was the perfect foundation for young children to take the initial step in cultivation. When a baby was born, the pure spiritual qi that was given to him inside his mother's body would start to diminish. A Crystal Lotus could maintain the natural born pure spiritual qi inside the baby and incorporate it with the spiritual qi obtained once he started cultivating after growing older. It would help a person to become an expert cultivator in the shortest time. The child who had taken the Crystal Lotus could improve three times faster than others.

However, the child needed to be a natural born cultivator, and it needed a cultivator of the Sky Origin Stage to guide him.

In fact, there were not many people who placed bids after the Mu Clan did; only the eight noble clans were bidding for the Crystal Lotus.

The national order of this mortal world had always confused Ye Xiao. He couldn't comprehend how the three different kinds of forces were coexisting.

Bit by bit, he finally figured out the relationship of the three major figures of the mortal world - the noble clans, the martial sects and the royal families.

[I thought the martial sects did not have a high position in the world, but I was wrong. In fact, they have a remarkable position.

They actually look down upon all the ordinary items. They are not keen for political powers; they like to control things under the table and then seize the resources for their ultimate goals... So they have political influence, but only just enough to acquire their goals. They aren't interested in political powers, instead they are interested in the power that came from cultivation...

The noble clans are trying their best to get what the martial sects disregard. The noble clans are much weaker than the martial sects in cultivation, however, the noble clans are active in the mortal society, so they have bigger influence in the society than the martial sects... Even though the martial sects think little of influence, it is still something important in the mortal world... In fact, there are many people from the noble clans that have joined the sects or work for the royal families... They're worse than the martial sects in cultivation, and worse than the royal families in political influence, but they are surely able to live and breed in any situation... Even if someday the royal families are gone and the martial sects are destroyed, the noble clans will surely survive.

The royal families are ruling the world in a political way, but they are not capable of dealing with problems in the social aspect, so the noble clans are needed. The eight noble clans are settled in the three most powerful kingdoms in the world. It is actually a kind of balance - the balance between the imperial power and the noble clans.

All in all, the three groups are struggling against each other, yet they're simultaneously supporting each other. They won't make full cooperation nor will they try to obliterate each other.]

Ye Xiao frowned. He had reached a conclusion.

He was sure that what he had conjectured was absolutely right!

It could be compared to a lock with three keyholes.

Each of the three groups held one key. Only when the three of them gave in their keys could the lock be opened.

The problem was that they would never give in their keys.

If they all gave in the keys and the lock was opened, there must be someone among them that should be taking charge. That meant there would be no value of existence for them.

[I should be the lock. I should make use of them all and stay safe in the world until I get strong enough. I won't need any key; I just need to make sure they will not use their keys and keep the lock sealed forever.]

...

Ye Xiao had just recovered from his thoughts. The bids for the Crystal Lotus had come to the last stage. The Mu Clan was still sticking on it, and they had just outbid the last competitor. The Long Clan had quit because they couldn't offer a higher price.

The price was now up to 27,500 taels of silver.

Ye Xiao smiled with disdain, and then he spoke loudly, "50 thousand taels of silver!"

...

Chapter 39: The Parvenu and the Crystal Sand

Hearing Ye Xiao's latest bid, Mu Zihe - the old man from the Mu Clan, looked up at the balcony with indistinct rage.

Mu Zihe had planned to seize the Crystal Lotus for himself with this opportunity that was given to him. He had thought that he would definitely be successful in getting the Crystal Lotus, and he could use it for his grandson who was about to be born. However, when he had finally won against all the other competitors, Ye Xiao popped up and doubled the price.

"75 thousand taels of silver!" Mu Zihe took a deep breath and spoke loudly.

He understood that only the people from the martial sects and the royal families were able to sit in the balcony. He was sure that it was better to not play dirty in this case. But he really wanted the Crystal Lotus, so he bid with a much higher price even though it was already out of his budget.

"150 thousand!" Ye Xiao's voice was still peaceful and he just doubled it again.

- Wow... -

The crowd burst into discussion.

Everyone who had been waiting for the result turned their heads and looked towards Ye Xiao's balcony with astonishment.

They were already surprised as 50 thousand taels of silver was already an exaggerated price for the Crystal Lotus. However, now the price had even reached 150 thousand taels of silver; it was an extremely irrational price that they couldn't even comprehend.

Everyone was wondering who this lunatic parvenu was. Did he know the market price for the lotus, or was he just randomly raising the price?

It was a whopping price indeed.

Mu Zihe became enraged and asked loudly, "May I have your name, the master in the 17th balcony? The Crystal Lotus is one thing we, the Mu Clan, have come for. We will make every effort to get it. If you are not so keen for it, could you please give it up this time?"

He was combining both hard and soft tactics. He mentioned the Mu Clan so as to periphrastically show threats, while asking for a favor so as to give Ye Xiao a good reason to give up.

People nodded as they agreed with the old man's tactics.

Ye Xiao sneered and thought, [I might have given it up if you Mu Clan don't want it. Besides, what you know about the Crystal Lotus is just a tiny bit of its properties. You are just a bunch of fools with

a very limited outlook!]

The Crystal Lotus was the main ingredient of the dan bead known as the 'limit-breaking dan' in the Qing-Yun Realm.

Apparently, the mortals knew nothing about this dan.

But of course, Ye Xiao knew! How could he give up such a great opportunity of getting the precious Crystal Lotus?

If the Crystal Lotus was developed into the Bloodshot Lotus, it would become much more potent! Now that Ye Xiao had a spiritual space where the Crystal Lotus could be planted, he would never let the Crystal Lotus slip away...

Ye Xiao replied peacefully, "Well, it is not that useful for me, but I just have to get it because I want to play with it."

Mu Zihe was extremely pissed.

He shouted, "175 THOUSAND taels of silver!" With this bid, he had reached his limit. If he allocated too much money for the Crystal Lotus, he would fail his clan by reducing their chances of obtaining a supreme dan bead.

Ye Xiao was still calm and spoke, "250 thousand!"

He looked calm and peaceful, but in fact, his insides were dancing

with joy. He was doing exactly the same thing that Mu Chengbai had done to him when they first met.

"It actually feels so good to tease people with money!" It was the first time that Ye Xiao had bullied anyone in this manner. He usually settled matters using his fists.

It was a new experience for him to financially outmuscle the enemy so easily, and he was really enjoying this empowering feeling.

Mu Zihe couldn't bear it any longer, so he stood up and slapped the table as he shouted, "What exactly do you want?"

The crowd had sensed that something was wrong - that guy in the balcony was messing with the Mu Clan purpose! Of course he was. Otherwise, who would pay such huge amount of money for just a piece of Crystal Lotus?

Ye Xiao answered leisurely, "I don't want anything. I am just very wealthy - too wealthy..."

He sighed and continued, "I feel sick of all the wealth... I think I should just spend as much as I can... to alleviate my burdens..."

People who heard what he said all felt speechless and a bit disgusted.

What kind of excuse was that?

They could all feel that Ye Xiao was totally against the Mu Clan! He was fooling the old man willfully!

The girl in white frowned and glanced at the balcony, murmuring, "Master Feng? What is he doing? He is messing with the Mu Clan. Oh... Would he be related to the Ye Clan?"

Mu Zihe was quivering because of anger. He spoke, completely enraged, "Fine! You are a rich man. I am short for money at the moment. But I promise, we, the Mu Clan, will definitely do something to fix it after the auction!"

The threat in what he had just said was obvious; everybody understood it.

Ye Xiao sneered and said, "Fix it? Oh I am sooo scared... Ohhh, you really scared me. The Mu Clan, oh my god, is so fxxking powerful... Woohoo..."

Mu Zihe was burning with rage. He sat back down on his chair and was breathing heavily.

He hated Feng Zhiling from the bottom of his heart. He felt pissed as well as disgraced.

The next few rounds were some other tonics which were quite important for the noble clans and the royal families. The princes and lords were busy bidding. The items had all been sold as

expected.

After that, a few powerful weapons and martial books were bought by the noble clans and the princes.

Ye Xiao had noticed that Su Yeyue had won a martial book named Feng-Hua Swordplay.

[The girl actually wants to practice swordplay? As I know, Feng-Hua Swordplay is a fine swordplay method book... I am not sure if it is exactly the book I had seen.]

Ye Xiao thought.

The atmosphere suddenly turned tense as the most valuable items were about to be auctioned next; the last few rounds were about to begin!

"The last seven items, which are also the best seven items, will arrive in a few seconds!" Guan Wanshan was pleased. The auction had finally reached the most awaited part.

The supreme dan bead was of course the last one to show up among the seven items.

However, it didn't mean that the other six items were valued any lesser than the supreme dan. They were just different in kind and could not be compared. In fact, the other six items were all delivered from the head office to be auctioned alongside the

supreme dan. They had used everything they could to record the maximum possible turnover.

The martial sects were thrilled.

"The first is... the Sky Crystal Sand!" Guan Wanshan spoke loudly, "There are only 150 grams of the Sky Crystal Sand... but we all know of its wonderfulness! 15 grams of Sky Crystal in an ordinary weapon can turn the weapon into a legendary one! When the Sky Crystal Sand and the material of the weapon are mixed together, it shows a wonderful phenomena: when the weapon is used long enough, it can become a weapon with a spiritual attribute!"

Guan Wanshan smiled, "We all know that weapons with spiritual attributes have been very precious since ancient times! Now, the Sky Crystal Sand starts at the price of 50 thousand taels of silver! Each bid raises 5 thousand!"

When Guan Wanshan just finished his words, a loud voice already sounded, "A hundred thousand taels of silver!"

People were astonished.

The voice was exactly the same voice that competed against the old man from the Mu Clan. That's right, it was Ye Xiao bidding in the 17th balcony.

This time, he made the first bid.

The Sky Crystal Sand was truly valuable. Even though he doubled the price right at the first bid, he surely wouldn't get it right away!

As expected, on the other side, a man from the Long Clan made a bid after him, "105 thousand."

Ye Xiao was still calm and spoke peacefully with disdain, "250 thousand then!"

He didn't care about money at all.

He had ten supreme dan beads waiting to be sold. The money he was going to earn from them was totally enough for him to maybe acquire every other item today! For Ye Xiao, money truly had no meaning right now. All he cared about was... to get whatever he wanted in the auction!

The Sky Crystal Sand was one of the things he wanted badly!

The price was not important; he didn't care!

[Even if I don't have enough money to pay for all my winning bids, I could rob every rich man in the capital tonight.] Ye Xiao thought.

As a man who had been living in the Qing-Yun Realm, he clearly

knew that mortal money was just completely useless garbage!

Ye Xiao had been planning to return to the Qing-Yun Realm since the first day he got to this world.

The man from the Long Clan gnashed his teeth, "275 thousand..."

He didn't even finish his words when he heard Feng Zhiling speaking peacefully in the 17th balcony, "500 thousand!"

He spoke out the number easily like he would throw away a piece of paper on which he had wiped his snot.

He was so freaking rich!

Chapter 40: The Regeneration Ink Lotus and the Cosmic Hades

The crowd burst into an uproar!

"Where did this lunatic come from? Does he actually know anything about an auction? He must be some super rich madman."

"Well if this lunatic wants something, none of us can outbid him. He is [as rich as Croesus](#)! What can we do?"

"Can we stop him from spending his own money?"

Usually, when the noble clans faced such a situation, they might have considered using some violent tactics. But now that they were at such an important event, they hesitated. They didn't dare to do anything to make Ye Xiao stop bidding.

The man from the Long Clan shot an angry glance at the balcony before he sat back on his chair.

Guan Wanshan smiled bitterly as he had no idea what this Master Feng was planning. He then spoke loudly, "For the Sky Crystal Sand, 500 thousand taels of silver. Calling once... Calling twice... Final call. No one? Deal!"

- Bam! -

The gavel went down.

Ye Xiao had won the auction for the Sky Crystal Sand.

Everyone was observing the man sitting at the 17th balcony

The crowd quickly started to gossip, "He really is a bombshell. You'll never know when he'll explode."

"It really doesn't matter what I bid for it. As long as he's interested in it, he'll just double my price. He truly doesn't care how much he'll end up paying. This is such a disgrace..."

"Even if I kill him after the auction, it won't save my reputation..."

"He really gives me a headache..."

"Where the hell did this moron come from? Is he some kind of a freak?"

Everyone felt displeased by the actions of this man.

"The next item is the most legendary medicine which is well known as the rarest in the world; the Regeneration Ink Lotus! It can heal severe diseases, and legend says that it can even bring back people from the brink of death! It is truly a rare and almighty medicine!" Guan Wanshan introduced the item.

"This plant of the Regeneration Ink Lotus is three thousand years old. The branches and leaves have already turned partially opalescent... 50 thousand taels of silver will be the starting price for this treasure. Each subsequent bid will require a minimum increase of 5 thousand taels of silver." Guan Wanshan had just finished his words when the crowd had already burst into another uproar.

A plant of the Regeneration Ink Lotus with opalescent leaves could even heal the damaged soul of a world-class cultivator!

If it turned completely opalescent, it would become a Regeneration Jade Lotus! One single leave of the Regeneration Jade Lotus could heal a deadly wound of a top-class cultivator of the Sky Origin Stage in a mere second!

There was nothing that came close in this mortal world to the healing power of this lotus!

Guan Wanshan looked at the 17th balcony where Ye Xiao sat and murmured in his head, [My lord... My dear lord... Please don't bid anymore. It must be very awkward if the auction is ruined in your hands.]

However, things went contrary to his wishes.

Master Feng was the first to bid, "250 thousand!"

Guan Wanshan felt a sudden headache. He started to wonder, [Are you crazy?]

The other attendants of this auction were also stunned as expected. They figured that this guy would perhaps intent to collect every item in this world-class auction.

Master Feng's bid was followed by a deadly silence.

Guan Wanshan accepted that Ye Xiao was beyond his comprehension and thought, [You got me...]

However, a voice suddenly came from the 7th balcony, "500 thousand!"

It was the voice of a girl.

Extreme shock spread throughout the auction hall, leaving people almost unable to even guess the gender of the person behind this voice. Only one thought was found inside the heads of the attendants: lunatics always show up in groups! And now this girl actually doubled Ye Xiao's price!

People were gloating and thinking, [Finally you've found yourself a rich opponent.]

Ye Xiao was surprised, but he quickly followed, "One million!"

"One million and five hundred thousand!" The girl showed no hesitation whatsoever.

"Two million!" Ye Xiao frowned. In fact he was really keen on getting this item. He just wanted to plant it in his spiritual space, so he was rather frustrated by the determination of this girl. He had even completely lost his previously obtained delight.

The girl didn't give up. She instantly followed, "Two and a half million!"

- ... -

One would be able to hear a drop of sweat fall on the floor as the salesroom was filled in utter silence!

This was madness!

They raised an item's price from 50 thousand taels of silver to 2.5 million! They were absolutely insane!

Ye Xiao was stunned by finding that a girl could actually be this crazy.

The voice of the girl sounded from the 7th balcony again, "My dear friend from the 17th balcony... please accept my apologies... I'm not intentionally opposing you. My father has been seriously ill for many years, and we couldn't find any cure until now... Today, I have to take this Regeneration Ink Lotus even if it will cost all my

savings... I am not against you."

The girl spoke softly. It made people feel sympathetic towards her. Most people in the crowd were thinking, [Apparently you're not the one to be blamed.]

Ye Xiao collected his thoughts and stayed quiet for a while.

Two and a half million was truly too much to spend for Ye Xiao at this moment in time. After all, he still needed the money for other items, so he eventually decided to stop bidding.

When everyone was expecting him to raise the price to five million, this arrogant man actually stopped... This was completely out of their expectation.

When the gavel hit the table, people realized that the man in the 17th balcony had truly given up...

"Thank you! Thank you all!" The girl's voice was full of gratefulness, but still carried a hint of sadness, "If my father can revive from the disease, it is because of all your blessings."

Many people felt satisfied and spoke aloud, "My pleasure."

The girl in white, who had fought against Ye Xiao earlier, was sitting in the 1st balcony at the moment. She suddenly felt that she might make an enemy, [It turns out there is a girl who can actually be my opponent.]

She couldn't help but look at the 7th balcony.

Inside was a girl in cyan clothing sitting. A layer of silk covered half of her face, however, the gentleness she had shown everyone couldn't be observed in her eyes; her eyes were even sharp and cold.

"Master's wound... Now there is hope." The girl in cyan was thinking. She couldn't help glancing at the 17th balcony, "Who is this guy? He nearly stopped me... I only have notes for 3 million taels of silver in total with me today. I was trying to get a supreme dan bead after the Regeneration Ink Lotus. Now that plan is impossible..."

"That bastard has destroyed my plan!" The girl in cyan gnashed her teeth and thought bitterly.

After the scene of 'a girl trying to save her dying father' was over, the auction continued.

There were six medicines being auctioned on the stage one-by-one. Ye Xiao took all of them by doubling the starting price with his first bid!

No one wanted to mess with him as they thought that he was an extremely rich lunatic.

They didn't wish to be disgraced like the guy from the Mu Clan in

front of the public.

As Master Feng had won most of the items, Guan Wanshan's face had turned pale!

In fact, the items, which were bought by Feng Zhiling, were all taken in very low prices except for the Crystal Lotus!

Ye Xiao had doubled the starting price for every item, and nobody dared to bid after him as they didn't want to be disgraced. It seemed fair...

However, when people thought deeper about it, they immediately realized the problem. It looked like Ye Xiao had spent a lot for all these items, but in fact he had gotten very good deals, because no one dared to compete with him.

He was so tricky!

People felt angry when they figured the situation out.

Finally, one of the leading items of this auction got to the stage. It instantly drew everyone's eyes.

Two young lads carried a box onto the stage. Suddenly, a stream of cold qi coiled around the stage. People could clearly feel that it was getting colder and colder. They couldn't help shivering with half-closed eyes.

"The next item is a stone which has come from the far reaches of the universe. Its basis is the mysterious mythical metal - the Cosmic Hades!" Guan Wanshan said.

Everyone wore an expression which said 'I see' when they heard about 'the Cosmic Hades'.

No wonder it had drawn everyone's eyes.

Some people smiled purposefully, "It's still on sale..."

"This piece of Cosmic Hades has been producing extremely cold qi since it first landed in the world three thousand years ago. No matter what it was, everything within a radius of ten meters around it would be frozen!"

Feeling the coldness of the stone, Ye Xiao suddenly shook. He was slack-jawed.

At that moment, the spiritual space inside his body had started to tremble; this was something that had never happened before...

Rich as Croesus - Croesus was an ancient Greek king whose wealth was legendary.

Chapter 41: Nobody Wants It? I Will Take It!

Guan Wanshan said, "I believe all of you know something about this item, so I don't want to say anything redundant. This item has been in our storage for hundreds of years already. We have failed countless times to discover its value and uses... If any of you want it, just bid for it. There will be no starting price for this item. Let's begin with it now."

He had just finished his words and the crowd turned silent at once.

Everyone recognized the infamous Cosmic Hades.

It was truly a mysterious stone. No one would deny that it was quite a valuable thing. It would be an understatement to say that this was an ordinary treasure. Its mysteriousness alone would make it worth a lot.

However, three thousand years had passed and not one person had figured out its functions!

It couldn't be cut, crushed or melted.

People basically couldn't figure out anything about this extremely cold stone.

Well, some people had thought about using it as a cooling tool to maybe cool down the air and preserve some food and drinks in the

summer. It might be a waste of its potential to use it for such a tiny job, but at least it would become somewhat useful!

However, the problem was... the cold qi that it produced was not something ordinary. It was extremely frigid and aggressive. Even an expert at the Sky Origin Stage would fail to bear the daily effects of this kind of cold qi. It might not only give people a setback in cultivation, but it might even permanently damage their bodies!

Everyone knew that if it was successfully developed, it could become an extremely powerful weapon!

However, they all had the same question in their minds...

Who would be able to develop it? And more importantly, how?

Anyway, in the previous three thousand years, everyone that had tried to do so had eventually failed. No progress had been seen, and the question about its uses remained unanswered.

Some of these people had actually died because of its extreme coldness. As time passed, people had become wary of its coldness, and no one dared to solve the mystery of the Cosmic Hades. People didn't even want to get close to it.

That was why, when it showed up, all of the people turned silent.

The whole room turned silent, causing the atmosphere to become rather awkward.

To Guan Wanshan's credit, he didn't show any nervousness. He just stood still on the stage.

He had been nervous when the auctioning of the jade ruyi had brought silence, but it was a different situation this time. People would see it as a regular result if the Cosmic Hades was abortive. He wouldn't feel disgraced at all.

In fact, the Ling-Bao Hall was just showing this item to go through the motions.

Of course, it would be great if someone bid and took it, but if no one did, it could still calm the audience down.

The Ling-Bao Hall felt a headache every time they thought about this item.

It was truly something of little value or interest.

There were some people who knew more about the stone.

There was a story about Ling-Bao Hall and the Cosmic Hades, and it was the reason why they had to take it out for this auction.

When Wan Zhenghao, the owner of the Ling-Bao Hall, had just begun to run his auction business, he had nothing really valuable to draw people's attentions for the salesroom. He was on a

downturn.

One day, this piece of Cosmic Hades suddenly showed up, and it had really strange attributes. People didn't want to take a risk by keeping it, but Wan Zheng-Hao realized that it might be an opportunity for him. He was a determined guy, so he spent eighty percent of his properties to obtain this stone.

After that, his salesroom suddenly became famous. The name 'Cosmic Hades' had been spread far and wide since then.

It was really something mysterious and fanciful, so as time went by, everybody got to know the Ling-Bao Hall.

However, unexpectedly... every time after the stone had been sold, it was sent back to the salesroom. The same situation had happened dozens of times.

In the last two hundred years, it had even been kept inside the storage of the salesroom, and no one had ever asked about it.

The salesroom had spent a fortune to buy a stone that nobody wanted. It was a big joke in many people's mind...

However, for the Ling-Bao Hall, it was a special treasure, and it was also the beginning of their great success; it was the leading item in their collection.

So, for every grand auction, they would show the Cosmic Hades.

They called it 'seeking the man with destiny'.

In fact, people all knew that they just wanted to get lucky and sell it.

It might be of great use when the founder of the Ling-Bao Hall had just started the salesroom, so it was reasonable for him to spend such a great deal for it...

Now he was right and had brought the salesroom with huge success!

However, for the salesroom nowadays, it was just useless garbage.

Besides, people saw it as a big joke. It had already become a burden.

How ironic it was that the thing, which had helped them the most at the beginning, had now become a joke...

Anyway, they couldn't just hide it or throw it away, because the whole world knew that it belonged to them. The only proper way to deal with it was to sell it to someone in front of the public.

They bought it; they sold it. It sounded right.

But it stuck with them. There never was a man 'with destiny'!

Guan Wanshan had felt upset when he got the order to take the stone out again.

When he was just preparing to take it back and announce an abortive auction, he heard the voice of Master Feng sounding out from the 17th balcony, "250 thousand!"

Guan Wanshan didn't feel annoyed about this voice anymore; he felt grateful and pleased instead.

He hadn't felt so grateful towards Feng Zhiling, even when the latter had brought him the supreme dan beads.

He was thinking, [Oh my good lord. You really are a good man. You just solved our biggest difficulty. I hope you will not send it back, brother Feng. I appreciate it sincerely!]

Everyone was looking at the 17th balcony with expressions like 'he's a dxckhead'.

"Does he know anything about the Cosmic Hades?"

"He actually spent 250 thousand on it?"

"I think Wan Zhenghao had spent lesser on it in the old days."

"No one has spent this much for that stone ever!"

"He really is a stupidly rich moron..."

"I thought he was smart to play tricks to buy things at the lowest prices possible. Oh, How wrong I was! I must've seen it wrong!"

The girl in white frowned and got lost in her thoughts for a while. She nearly decided to buy the stone for a moment, but she changed her mind at the last moment.

She didn't want to cause any accessorial trouble with this mysterious Master Feng, especially since they had already been in a quarrel. Besides, she thought it'd be profitless to keep a gelid stone around her master as he was extremely weak at the moment.

It was just a strange stone; she didn't want to fight for it.

...

Ye Xiao was feeling quite different from the others; he was full of a kind of excitement that he had never felt before.

He had wanted to buy some valuable medicines or treasures in the auction to feed his spiritual space. In fact, he wouldn't have been interested in things like the Cosmic Hades.

However, when the stone showed up and the whole room got

cold, the space inside his body suddenly shook!

And then he had a strong feeling of eagerness from deep within his spiritual space!

The feeling of eagerness was even stronger than when he was absorbing the Heavenly Crystal Marrow!

Ye Xiao was totally surprised about it!

He could even sense the howling of eagerness from his spiritual space!

What was that?

Could it be that this Cosmic Hades was something even better than the Heavenly Crystal Marrow? Anyway, It was surely something that could benefit his spiritual space.

So Ye Xiao didn't hesitate and made a bid with the high price of 250 thousand!

He knew that this stone, which was useless in other people's eyes, might be a key to a massive improvement for him!

It might be a great moment in his life!

This price was surely reasonable for him; it could even be higher, and it wouldn't even scare him in the slightest!

No one made an offer after Ye Xiao, and Guan Wanshan had called it three times already.

Ye Xiao got the Cosmic Hades without any complications.

In the 7th balcony, the girl in cyan was staring at the Cosmic Hades and her eyes were lit up. She turned her head and said, "Go check on the 17th balcony. Find out who that guy is, where he's from, and what background he has."

A middle-aged woman who was standing behind the girl said yes to her and stood up as she prepared to leave. The girl in cyan suddenly said, "Wait!"

At the same time, something was happening in the 2nd balcony.

It was the Reaching Cloud Hall that stayed in the 2nd balcony.

Xiao Moyan, a sage-like man with three long wisps of moustache, who was the hierarch of the Reaching Cloud Hall, spoke peacefully, "This man... is not a fool at all. But why is he so confident? Does he know how to use that stone?"

The other guy who was also sitting inside the 2nd balcony, the prime dan-maker of the Reaching Cloud Hall also spoke, "This guy is extraordinary. He has been controlling the whole situation in

the auction today. He's playing tough when everybody is saving money for the supreme dan beads. He has already seized most of the valuable items. I would say that he has already become the winner of this auction..."

Xiao Moyan's eyes lit up. He spoke peacefully, "The only thing I care about is that... this guy... seems to have no interests in the supreme dan beads..."

...

Chapter 42: The Girl in White and the Girl in Cyan

The dan-maker, Shi Yue, came back to his senses, "That's true! Otherwise, he won't spend lavishly like this. Anyway, the supreme dan beads are the main items in this auction. If he can't even get a single bead, then, even though he's obtained so many precious items, he would still be a loser in this auction. With the total amount he has spent so far for the previous items, if he was to bid for the supreme dan beads, there won't be anybody that could possibly compete. It could've been quite easy for him to win the supreme dan beads, but he has already spent a huge amount of money without reservation... It is truly unreasonable for him to do so."

Xiao Moyan frowned and spoke with a lowered voice, "It is unreasonable indeed... In fact, could he be the guy who supplied the supreme dan beads? If so, it is reasonable, right?"

Shi Yue's eyes immediately lit up. He looked at Xiao Moyan and couldn't speak a word.

They both turned silent at once.

After a while Xiao Moyan surprisingly stood and walked out of the balcony, and then he spoke to the 17th balcony, "My friend in the 17th balcony, may I have your name please? Would you mind if I invite you to come and join me please?"

If he was just a normal person, he would obviously get no

answers in such circumstances.

However, he was the hierarch of the Reaching Cloud Hall - one of the top-3 sects in the Land of Han-Yang!

His words were obviously important.

The whole room suddenly turned silent.

Some people turned their heads and looked at Xiao Moyan.

They were all curious as to why Hierarch Xiao would show such kindness to this rich newcomer.

Ye Xiao smiled and replied peacefully, "Hierarch Xiao, you and me, we are both guests. I don't think it's appropriate to usurp the host's role."

Xiao Moyan laughed and said, "Right. It was my impudence. You are an outstanding man. Please come to my Reaching Cloud Hall sometime. You're always welcome."

Ye Xiao smiled, "For your cordiality, I will come and visit you someday for sure."

Everyone was shocked.

"Did Xiao Moyan just invite that mysterious guy?"

"Why did he do so?"

"Outstanding? I see nothing outstanding about that rich newcomer to be honest."

"I say he is just a mean rich newcomer! That's all."

Anyway, there were also some people from the other sects who were lost in thought.

At the moment, everyone had a strange feeling. They suddenly realized that everything in this auction had been related to this guy since the auction had started!

He hadn't even shown his face, but he had already become the focus of this auction!

Now, even the hierarch of a top-3 martial sect had given him an invitation in front of the public.

They wondered if he really was only a rich newcomer?

In the 7th balcony, the girl in cyan suddenly stood up and gracefully walked towards the door of the 7th balcony. She slightly bowed and said, "Thank you for being lenient just now. It is your liberality that has allowed me to get the medicine for my father.

May I ask your name please? I won't forget your great kindness."

Ye Xiao stayed silent for a while and then replied, "I am Feng. I was trying to get that item you won. I just don't have enough money. I was not giving way to you. So it deserves no mentioning. Go back to your balcony, please."

"Nonetheless, you've done me a great favor. I won't forget your help." The girl in cyan took out a jade pendant and suddenly threw it out. - Shoot! - It flew into the balcony. She smiled and said, "If brother Feng comes to the Kingdom of Lan-Feng someday, the whole kingdom will welcome you sincerely!"

Ye Xiao noticed a cyan light flashing in front of his eyes, and then suddenly, a warm jade pendant fell in his hands.

The girl in cyan seemed to be the only person that Ye Xiao couldn't completely see through.

He couldn't have known that this girl was from the Kingdom of Lan-Feng.

He rubbed the pendant and then casually put it into his pocket.

The girl in cyan waited for a moment and then smiled, "I am off then." And then she went back to her balcony.

On the other side, the girl in white spoke softly, "That girl is truly unusual!"

The two fellows in black that stood behind said nothing, but they still showed doubtful looks and thinking, [Why?]

"She acted like she was such an innocent and nice person. She had just built up a nice image of herself in a perfect way, right after she had acted like a baleful bidder. She acts like she was weak. That is truly estimable and also horrible. Especially when she started to realize the importance of that guy, she took her action right away. Do you know how hard it is to do such a thing for a girl in front of the public? Besides, as she dared to make such an invitation, she must be someone important in the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. It is even more frightening as she is an important person in a big kingdom."

The girl in white was suddenly vigilant, "In all these years, I've never met anyone who's as cunning and vigorous as that girl. She is even good enough to be my opponent."

One fellow then asked doubtfully, "How come I couldn't see how good she was. I think she was kind of disgraceful to do such a thing. She had just been bidding fiercely against that guy, and then she suddenly realized that he was some important man, so she went to talk to him with flattery. I feel disdain towards her. How could such a foolish girl be your opponent my lady?"

"The 'disdain' of yours exactly shows the devilishness of her!"

The girl in white humped and said, "Besides... what was to be disgraced with that? She was masked with silk. Look at her perfect

body. She must be a beauty."

"Well, she will regret if she finds out that the man is of no use at all." The man in black sneered.

"Accept it when I call you a moron. If he is useless, the girl only loses a jade pendant. It is nothing but a keepsake. But if this Feng is really some extraordinary man, then what she just gave him will become a bridge connecting them together! Maybe it will bring her some surprising profits someday! If you still can't understand it, after I've told you this much... so be it." The girl in white looked disappointed.

She thought, [Master educates these guys. Some of them may be good fighters, but so few of them are clear-sighted...]

The girl in white suddenly spoke loudly, "The lady in cyan, please, may I ask your name?"

The girl in cyan was turning to her balcony when she heard it. She answered, "How do you do, sister. Wenren is my family name, but I don't think you're familiar with it. You are so beautiful my sister. You must have a beautiful name."

The girl in white smiled, "Sister Wenren, you can call me sister Xiu-Er."

"Sister Xiu-Er, let's find another place to drink some tea together later." The girl in cyan smiled sweetly and bowed humbly, and

then she entered her own balcony.

Xiu-Er smiled gently and her eyes lit up, "Wenren... It's the name of the royal family in the Kingdom of Lan-Feng..."

A meaningful smile appeared on her face.

When the girl in cyan was back to her balcony, the middle-aged woman asked nervously, "My lady, why did you give them your name? Wasn't it too obvious?"

The girl smiled softly and answered, "I just came back to this world... I guess I need to show myself a bit to the world... The situation is not good for our kingdom at present times..."

"But I'm afraid... that the Kingdom of Chen will come and harm you." The middle-aged woman spoke.

"If so..." The girl in cyan smiled softly and said, "Let them try, I'll have my sword in my hand when they come... My sword has slaughtered over three million people..."

...

The salesroom finally turned silent again.

People started to turn their attention from the mysterious Feng Zhiling to the auction itself.

The last item of the auction was finally coming!

The two men of the Mu Clan were showing dark faces.

As the guy they hated and had planned to kill had actually aroused so much attention, they thought that it wouldn't be easy to kill him now. They felt upset.

On the stage, Guan Wanshan finally recovered from his gloomy mood.

In fact, he should be the one who had the most to complain.

This Feng Zhiling had been asking to keep himself low. Now he had suddenly popped out in front of the public and drawn everyone's attention! Guan Wanshan had been planning to keep the resource of the supreme dan beads to himself. But now, it was mostly assured that he had failed...

[If you want to flaunt yourself, then why did you act so mysteriously? I have been covering you for such a long time, yet now you just showed the entirety of your ass...] He thought.

He only managed to regain control over his emotions when the supreme dan beads were brought onto stage and he saw how the crowd was full of tenseness and eagerness.

"The next item is the last item in today's auction!" Guan Wanshan laughed. His goatee was almost tilted up, "I think you all know that it is exactly the legendary supreme dan bead with dan cloud that you have never seen before!"

He laughed and continued, "To be honest, it is the first time for me to see such a great treasure, even though I have lived for such a long time."

.....

Chapter 43: The Marvelous Dan Beads!

“I have spent my entire life in the field of auctioning. I have struck the gavel thousands of times. However, it is my first time introducing such a dan in an auction. It is only a middle class dan, but it is of an unbelievably high quality.”

Upon hearing Guan Wanshan’s words, especially the fact that the middling dan possessed such a high quality, many people subconsciously smiled.

It was definitely the first time!

The Pei Yuan Dan.

From the perspective of an ordinary person, this kind of dan was truly marvelous. Just one piece could heal nearly all illnesses and strengthen one’s physical condition. However, this was only true for ordinary people.

For cultivators, while the Pei-Yuan dan was not the lowest class of dan, it was rather close to that level. Strictly speaking, by stating that it was a ‘middle class’ medicine, Guan Wanshan was actually overpraising it!

As its name suggested, Pei-Yuan Dan was merely a kind of normal dan that the sects gave to their rookies to strengthen their bodies and train in the initial steps of their cultivation. Once they had built a solid foundation, there was no longer any need for such a low-level medicine.

Basically, it was a valuable thing for ordinary people, but garbage for cultivators.

However, it was precisely this lowly medicine that had been abruptly refined to such a level that it was even radiating the legendary dan clouds!

This was something no one had ever seen before.

“Usually, we identify items on our own, but today, for this legendary treasure, please allow me to invite the hierarch of the Reaching Cloud Hall - Xiao Moyan, presbyter of the Green Mountain Sect - Li Changqing, and presbyter of the Cyan Cloud Sect - Meng Wufei on stage to judge the item.” Guan Wanshan bowed respectfully.

These three men, which even included the Patriarch of a major Sect, were the most powerful men in this room at the moment.

None of them hesitated as they immediately made their way onto the stage.

When faced with such a legendary item, the chance to examine it from close up was, of course, largely advantageous.

A purple jade bottle, which emitted a soft glow, was placed on an intricate platform.

Under the watchful gazes of the spectators, Guan Wanshan cautiously opened the bottle. Immediately, a white mist rushed out from inside the bottle.

Although the purple jade bottle itself was opaque, the moment it was opened, it glittered with a mesmerizing bright light. The next moment, the entire bottle had turned almost transparent. Everyone in the auction hall could clearly see the single bead of dan contained within the bottle.

It was precisely the dan that was radiating the warm and bright light that pierced even the walls of the opaque bottle. This scene had captured the attention of everyone in the audience.

Even though light was supposed to be blocked from exiting or entering this bottle, this supreme dan bead's mystical glow had actually managed to penetrate through the walls of this bottle.

The white mist, which had gushed out from the bottle, coalesced above the bottle, forming a thin layer of fog. Unexpectedly, instead of dissipating, this fog was actually accumulating both in size and in density. Gradually, a cloud about two meters in diameter was formed over the bottle

As the mist continued to rush out of the bottle, the cloud continued to expand. It didn't seem to have even the slightest intention of scattering.

The next moment, a delicate and light fragrance started to spread throughout the room. Although the fragrance was subtle, it had

instantly permeated the entire auction hall. Anyone who inhaled it felt their spirits being lifted as the smell refreshed and relaxed them.

Within moments of its appearance, the delicate fragrance had already entranced the entire audience.

“This smell... This is absolutely from a supreme dan from the heavens!”

The prime dan-maker of the Reaching Cloud Hall, Shi Yue, trembled as he gazed at the bottle that contained the dan bead on the platform. An extreme obsession could be seen in his eyes, while his face had already turned into a deep red color.

He looked like he wanted to immediately rush onto stage, hug the bottle to his chest and never let go!

A dan bead with a dan cloud like this was something he had dreamed of his entire life.

To refine a dan bead to this extent, it truly represented the peak of the field of dan-making! No one could surpass that!

Li Changqing, Xiao Moyan and Meng Wufei, who were standing the closest to the dan bead, were also shocked!

The mystical dan cloud, which no one had seen for almost ten thousand years, actually existed in the real world?

And it was even right here in front of their eyes!

In front of the greed-filled gazes of the three men, Guan Wanshan capped the bottle. Only after the bottle was sealed did the cloud above begin to waver. It slowly dissipated, scattering into white mist that travelled in all directions.

When the dan cloud finally disappeared, Guan Wanshan unexpectedly opened the bottle again. As pristine dan energy surged out from the bottle once more, a dan cloud began to form.

This action greatly angered people that worked in the field of dan-making as they stared at him like they were about to rip him apart.

Wasn't this bastard purposely destroying the dan bead?

“Ladies and gentlemen, please calm down. I am not intentionally damaging the supreme dan bead. I just wanted to double check the dan cloud. This dan bead is truly a wonder! Normally, the effectiveness of dan beads will disappear bit by bit when they're exposed to light, but this dan bead here, can actually absorb natural energy from its surroundings. As long as it hasn't been consumed, the efficiency will stay full anytime, anywhere! In other words, this supreme dan bead has created its own small circulation system within the world.”

Guan Wanshan sighed, “Before this, I believe that nobody would have expected the dan to have such an ability. It has never even

been recorded in the dan-making recipes. This is truly the first time that it has been seen entering this world. The first mystical dan with dan clouds!”

As people exclaimed in wonder, the auction room instantly turned as noisy as a marketplace.

So it was actually such a marvelous item!

The eagerness of the people to get their hands on that bead had multiplied several times.

Guan Wanshan was truly a seasoned expert in holding auctions.

With just a few sentences, he had successfully driven the ambiance of the room through the roof!

But what he had said was entirely true - indeed, this function of the dan bead was something nobody had known about. In fact, people couldn't even begin to imagine its existence!

The three men on stage slowly nodded.

The eyes of the dan-makers in the room lit up with intense greedy light. They were akin to old perverts who had been starved of sex for three hundred years, before suddenly seeing a gorgeous beauty lying naked on their beds...

“If someone could extract this special refining technique and apply it to some higher-level dan...” Guan Wanshan rubbed his mustache and said, “That would be a grand achievement. That will not only bring us more chances to avoid death, it will also greatly increase our profits...”

Guan Wanshan’s continued musings made some people so angry that they felt like cursing.

The people who were permitted entrance to this auction hall, none of them were fools. How could they not understand what Guan Wanshan was actually trying to do?

[This bastard, is he trying to raise the price of the dan bead to the heavens?]

But among the audience, the dan-makers were all breathing heavily; their eyes had already turned bloodshot! Indeed, this was certainly a peerless treasure they would spend their whole lives chasing after!

After sealing the bottle again, Guan Wanshan’s lips curved into a reserved smile, “Thank you, our three valued guests. Please exit the stage and return to your seats. Our auction for the supreme dan beads will begin right away.”

From the 2nd balcony, Shi Yue suddenly yelled, “Pray tell, Master Guan. About this supreme dan, how many beads are to be auctioned today?”

In fact, it was the question that had been weighing heavily on everyone's minds, so they all turned quiet and waited for the answer.

The supreme dan bead was definitely a treasure, but they still needed to know how many beads there were.

If there was only one, then... it would be immensely difficult for most people to acquire it. In that case, many of them might quit the auction before it even began.

Guan Wanshan laughed and answered, "Truthfully, it would already be extremely lucky for all of us to see even this one bead as it is such a marvelous treasure..."

When the audience heard his words, they instantly became incredibly anxious. Some small sects felt like giving up immediately. Even people who belonged to powerful groups had turned pale as it would surely be a tough fight for them if there was only one bead.

Surprisingly, Guan Wanshan continued his words, "But luckily, we have more than one supreme dan bead at today's auction. You definitely won't be disappointed..."

The spectators' spirits instantly lifted. Did that mean there were more beads? If there were a large number of supreme beads auctioned today, then there might be less competition, and they might even walk away with a much smaller hole in their purses...

But Guan Wanshan added, "...But still, there aren't that many supreme dan beads."

Immediately, everyone in the hall felt like their hearts had been [trampled by ten thousand alpacas](#).

They wanted to drag the old bastard down from the stage and give him a good beating.

They felt that the way in which he kept playing with the suspense in the room was really annoying.

"...You all want one, but that is definitely not going to happen..." Guan Wanshan smiled slyly, "After all, everything is priced in proportion to its rarity."

Everyone tried hard to quell the itch in their hearts; the impulse to beat someone up.

[This bastard, is he trying to play us to death?]

"Master Guan, just how many supreme dan beads are there? Tell us the exact number." Xiao Moyan frowned and spoke.

With his status as a hierarch, he had been reluctant to ask as he needed to present a calm exterior. However, since the Reaching Cloud Hall was mainly committed to dan-making, the supreme dan was especially important to him. Moreover, since the question had come directly from a person as important as him, Guan Wanshan

would have to answer.

Otherwise, if the number of beads remained unclear, people would fight amongst themselves for the beads until their wallets became completely empty.

Ye Xiao leisurely crossed his legs. He sat in the 17th balcony as still as stone, as he overlooked the whole scene.

“Of course. If it is the Patriarch Xiao that wants to know it, I will absolutely give my answer.” Guan Wanshan humbly said, “The supreme dan with dan clouds. This time, we have truly done everything we can, but we’ve only managed to obtain ten beads.”

The crowd burst into an uproar!

Ten supreme dan beads!

Interesting fact - the Chinese term for alpaca is 草泥马 which sounds similar to 草你妈, or fxxk your mother, so it’s often used as a slang replacement.

Chapter 44: I Am the Owner of the Supreme Dan

For treasures as precious as these supreme dan beads, ten was definitely not a small number. In fact, it had already exceeded most of the people's expectations!

However, for the people who eagerly desired these supreme dan beads, it was never enough!

There were at least a hundred groups who were determined to win the supreme dan beads!

But there were only ten... What could they do about that?

One by one, they started to check their wallets...

Xiao Moyan breathed a sigh of relief before becoming a little nervous. Since there were ten beads, it was guaranteed that he would get at least one, but... in order to attain just that one bead would require him to triumph through a bloody competition by paying a sizeable amount!

"Next, we shall begin the auction for the first supreme dan bead!" Guan Wanshan stood on the stage, looking energetic and high-spirited, "The starting price is 100 thousand taels of silver! Each overbid requires a minimum increase of 25 thousand!"

The moment he said that, a hush fell over the audience.

For a long, long time, nobody replied.

Of course it wasn't because the beads were unwanted, but rather, people were silently calculating. To be the first sect to bid, how much would be suitable?

Finally, Meng Wufei of the Cyan Cloud Sect frowned and spoke loudly, "150 thousand from OUR CYAN CLOUD SECT!"

When he heard what Meng Wufei said, Guan Wanshan immediately furrowed his brows. Within the 17th balcony, Ye Xiao felt as though he was constipated with a stomach full of shxt. Many people were also cursing inside their minds.

[If you wanted to bid, then just bid! What's with the emphasis on 'OUR CYAN CLOUD SECT'?!]

What did he mean?

Well, the nuance was clear. It was definitely a threat!

The way he phrased it, if someone dared to compete against him in the bidding, then they would make enemies out of the entire Cyan Cloud Sect! You could weigh the consequences yourself.

As expected, after that sentence from Meng Wufei, no one dared

to bid anymore. No matter what, it was just not an intelligent move to mess with the Cyan Cloud Sect. Even Xiao Moyan sat quietly without a word.

The high-spirited and vigorous Guan Wanshan felt like he had eaten a bittergourd.

As calculative as he might be, he had forgotten to account for how shameless these powerful Sects could be.

“Master Meng from the Cyan Cloud Sect bids 150 thousand. Are there anymore bids? Anyone...” Guan Wanshan forced the words out, all while silently cursing in his heart. “150 thousand once... Anyone? 150 thousand twice... 150 thousand...”

“500 thousand!” From above, a loud voice resounded.

It was Ye Xiao.

There was no way that the Xiao Monarch could bear his supreme dan being sold at such a low price.

[Since you’ve dared to act so shamelessly in front of everyone, then I won’t hesitate to make trouble for you!

You’re dealing with my belongings; I won’t permit them to be taken away at such a cheap price!]

Meng Wufei's expression darkened as he swivelled around to face the direction of the voice.

Ye Xiao pushed open the door of 17th balcony and said blandly, "To be honest, I am not that interested in this supreme dan. I wasn't even going to bid. But to see someone trying to snatch this supreme dan for just 150 thousand, how blasphemous! You desecrate this treasure. Moreover, this trade should be fair; I don't care if you're from the royal family, major Sect or noble clan. The moment you arrive here, you must follow the rules! Using your power to bully others, how despicable can you be! So, Master Meng, it won't be that simple. If you want it, you better be prepared to pay what it deserves. Otherwise, I will be the first one to challenge you!"

Narrowing his eyes, Meng Wufei spoke coldly, "You've definitely got balls, Mr. Feng. But who the hell are you?"

The underlying message was clear: "A nobody like you, how dare you try to stop me from taking what I want?"

Ye Xiao held his head high and replied calmly, "Maybe I am just a nobody. But, I am the original owner of these supreme dan beads!"

Everyone who heard his words were immediately stunned!

"The owner of the supreme dan beads!"

"He is the owner of the supreme dan beads!"

“No wonder he was trying so hard to collect all those valuable medicines. He is a supreme dan-maker!”

The girl in white - Xiu-Er, the girl in cyan, people from the martial sects and people from the noble clans... all of them turned their gazes up towards him.

Ye Xiao narrowed his eyes as he casually glanced at the people from the Mu Clan. [Perhaps with my status as a supreme dan-maker, I can destroy those bastards from the Mu Clan?]

Meng Wufei's expression instantly turned ugly as he replied, “Even if you're the owner of these supreme dan, what can you possibly do?”

“Well, I suppose that the owner of these supreme dan can't really do much.” Ye Xiao replied leisurely, “But for my supreme dan to have been sullied in this auction, I am truly disappointed, so I can choose to take back my supreme dan beads. Regarding other people's items, I don't have a say nor can I promise anything. But I can assure you -- From today onwards, there will be no more supreme dan in this world!”

He bared his teeth as he grinned, “Once I retrieve them, I will swallow all ten beads. If they are to be desecrated, I would rather have these beads cease existing!”

That moment, everyone stared at him with wide eyes, unable to make the slightest sound!

This bastard was not only a supreme dan-maker, but also a supreme troublemaker.

If he was not satisfied, then he would surely destroy everything!

“If you really want the supreme dan bead, then bid according to the rules. Ten is not a small number. If you offer a suitable price, you’ll naturally be able to get one.” Ye Xiao spoke calmly, “Under no circumstances are you to use your power to oppress others. If I see anyone do that again, this auction will instantly end!”

Meng Wufei’s face turned green.

The two men who stood beside him had their hands pressed to the hilt of their swords. Their eyes, full of killing intent, were fixed at Ye Xiao.

But all three of them knew that since this Master Feng had exposed his identity as the ‘owner of the supreme dan’, they couldn’t do anything to him under these circumstances!

In fact, even in the future, this kind of person was definitely not to be offended!

For a supreme dan-maker as powerful as he was, just how much resources did he truly harbor?

It was just unimaginable!

Not to mention only the three of them, even the entire Cyan Cloud Sect could not hope to bear his wrath!

He could turn the Cyan Cloud Sect into everyone's enemy by simply saying something like 'I will make dan for the one who destroys the Cyan Cloud Sect'.

Meng Wufei took a few deep breaths and forced a smile, "You definitely do not mince words. How admirable. But I am afraid there has been some miscommunication between us. When I offered 150 thousand just now, I was only testing the waters. It would truly be a desecration if the supreme dan bead was sold at only 150 thousand. If anyone wishes to bid, of course they are free to do so. With my status, how can I possibly forcibly oppress the market like this... Since Brother Feng has called for 500 thousand, then I shall follow. 750 thousand please."

Meng Wufei managed to restrain himself enough to spit out those words.

[I'll have my revenge another day.]

Everyone spectating this scene couldn't help but breathe a sigh of relief. By taking a step back this time, Meng Wufei had brought shame to the Cyan Cloud Sect. But if he had not submitted, the Cyan Cloud Sect would not only have ended up empty-handed today, but it was also very likely that they would invite an even bigger disaster in the future!

Although Meng Wufei had retreated, no one would really look down on him. Instead, his forbearance had gathered quite some admiration. After all, it had been the owner of the supreme dan he had been facing!

“Hmm, one million!” Li Changqing from the Green Mountain Sect spoke calmly.

“One million and 50 thousand!” Meng Wufei instantly bidded.

Ye Xiao finally stayed quiet.

The price had gone over one million now... and it was still rising.

He was not delighted in the least at the moment; instead he was bleeding in his heart. There had been 15 dan beads in total, and he had actually sold 5 of them to the salesroom for 100 thousand each...

[I really want to jump off a building... How could I have miscalculated to incur such a loss...]

He had lost five million! At least!

[Oh my god... So much money! Let me die!]

While Ye Xiao was still drowning in his sorrow, Xiao Moyan

finally bid.

“One million and 250 thousand!”

“One million and 275 thousand!” Meng Wufei gritted his teeth.

“One million and 300 thousand!”

“One million and 325 thousand!”

Meng Wufei was nearly going to vomit blood.

He had to win the bid for this supreme dan bead, otherwise, it would really be a huge disgrace after the scuffle between him and Ye Xiao just now.

In the end, for the price of one million and 400 thousand taels of silver, Meng Wufei acquired the first supreme dan bead!

After seeing a high price, all the spectators were shocked out of their minds.

Although Meng Wufei had brought this fate upon himself, this price of one million and 400 thousand taels of silver was truly unreasonably high.

After that, the second supreme dan bead was sold for one million

and 250 thousand to Xiao Moyan.

The third was sold to Li Changqing for the same price as the second one.

Till now, the top three martial sects had gotten one of the first three supreme dan beads each. One could say that they had accomplished their most important task of today.

The others bidders breathed a sigh of relief. They all understood that the first three supreme dan beads would never be theirs. No matter what, they would definitely be seized by the top three sects. Whoever encroached upon these beads would only bring enormous trouble to their own groups.

But still... the prices had still been pushed so high that many of the groups had already felt depressed.

Within just a few turnovers, the numbers had already risen way beyond the levels of what they could compete with.

When the fourth dan bead was up, people subconsciously understood that the top three sects wouldn't bid again, so one by one, they started to bid!

“850 thousand.”

“875 thousand!”

“900 thousand...”

“...”

Although the prices continued to rise, it had already started slowing down. It was no longer the scorching battle that accompanied the first three beads. When Mu Zihe from the Mu Clan bid 950 thousand, no one made a sound anymore.

All of them were thinking that if the prices were able to lessen even further, that would undeniably be a good thing.

Some experts like Guan Wanshan had already predicted that the price would be no higher than one million this time.

But right at that moment, the clear and cold voice of a girl suddenly resounded loudly, “One million and 250 thousand!”

With this shout, she had raised the price up to the price levels of the former three dan beads straightaway!

Such a price had immediately defeated most of the bidders!

As the audience turned their heads towards the voice, they realized that it was in fact, the girl in white.

When they found out that the bidder was a girl, they were

instantly angry. [Previously, we didn't want to offend the three major sects so we didn't join the bidding. A little girl like you, who do you think you are?]

Mu Zihe, in particular, was ready to explode with rage!

[Why on earth is there always someone messing with me? Am I a pushover to them?

This time, there is no way I could bear such humiliation again! If I continue to tolerate this, our Mu Clan will be known as the clan of [cowardly turtles](#)...]

...

[缩头乌龟 literally means turtles who retreat back into their shells when facing danger. Refers to faint-hearted cowards.]

Chapter 45: Master Bai and The House of the Chaotic Storm!

This price of one million and 250 thousand had surely made many bidders back off, but it had also revealed the truly wealthy ones.

Mu Zihe's face looked like dark water as he shouted, "One million and 300 thousand!"

He could barely hold back the rage in his heart.

[Just now, when I bid for the Crystal Lotus, it was snatched away at the last moment. And now when I bid for the supreme dan bead, somebody wants to snatch it again? Do I look that easy to bully?]

Even a clay figurine could only take so much, let alone an elder of the Mu Clan, one of the eight noble clans!

The girl in white, Xiu-Er, didn't even bat an eye as she blandly replied, "One million and 350 thousand."

Mu Zihe looked at her with a sullen look. His eyes were filled with a scary warning as he said, "One million and 400 thousand!"

Xiu-Er was not moved in the least as she calmly said, "One and a half million!"

The auction grounds were filled with commotion.

It had reached one and a half million already!

The number had already exceeded the final price of the first three supreme dan beads.

Even Ye Xiao who was sitting in the upper floor felt shocked when he heard the price.

He had never imagined that this girl in white was actually that wealthy...

It seemed like the Mu Clan was about to kick against another iron board.

Ye Xiao looked around him.

Faced with such a bold, disrespectful challenge, Mu Zihe couldn't hold back his fury. He stood up and yelled out loudly, "This woman! This challenge! Are you purposely trying to make the Mu Clan lose face?"

Not long ago, he had been thoroughly humiliated by Feng Zhiling, whose true identity was the owner of the supreme dan beads, and now, Mu Zihe had to forcibly quash his burning desire for revenge. Just as his stomach felt like it was filled to the brim with rage, he was slapped in the face by another unreasonably high price!

All the anger that he had been barely managing to hold back, exploded towards Xiu-Er.

“The Mu Clan? To struggle like this!” Xiu-Er looked at him indifferently and said softly, “This is an auction; we bid for what we want. We’re competing in a fair way. Whoever bids the highest price gets the item. I didn’t think this had anything to do with losing face...”

As she said this, all of the people present thought that the girl was going to back off.

However as Xiu-Er continued speaking, her tone suddenly changed. Coldly, she continued, “But, if this member of the Mu Clan believes that I am purposely humiliating you... Then, let’s just say that it was my intention.”

The underlying meaning of her words was that the prestige of the Mu Clan was worth nothing to her.

Her words made a huge impact on the audience as people were immediately shocked!

That was really... unfathomable.

This girl in white, just who was she?

Was she just bragging? Or was she purposely trying to mystify herself? Or perhaps... Did she really come from a powerful background?

From above, Ye Xiao saw his opportunity and appealed, “Please allow me to advise the lady to be cautious. The Mu Clan is one of the eight noble clans. Before a lady does anything rash, it’d be prudent to think it over. Sometimes, it isn’t unacceptable to take a step back; it’s the Mu Clan after all...”

What he just said seemed well-intentioned.

Moreover, it seemed that he was raising the prestige of the Mu Clan.

Although Mu Zihe was angry with him, but at this moment, he gratefully nodded to show that he accepted the kindness.

The girl in white, Xiu-Er, replied softly, “Don’t worry, brother Feng. I know what I’m doing.”

Ye Xiao worriedly continued, “But... Lady, do you really think so little of the Mu Clan? This is... The Mu Clan is truly powerful. I am afraid that you can’t afford to mess around with them...”

As he finished speaking, everyone turned their suspicious gazes towards him.

This bastard... wasn’t it a little too obvious that he was

provoking dissension?

As expected, Xiu-Er smiled slightly, “Don’t worry, brother Feng. In front of me, the prestige of the Mu Clan really isn’t worth even a single penny.”

Ye Xiao rubbed his nose, sat back down and didn’t say anything more.

[That will do... If even such words can’t induce a fight and create mutual hatred, I’ll knock my head against the wall! If these fellows from the Mu Clan don’t crash and burn, it’ll really be a waste of my careful effort in stirring up this conflict...

Fxxking assholes. Since you, the Mu Clan, is this unreasonable and purposely messed with me, then of course I shall create some troubles for you.]

As expected, what the girl in white said was like adding fuel to the fire. Things had already degenerated beyond repair.

[Hmm.] The girl in white thought, [This guy is obviously against the Mu Clan and wants me to pull the trigger. Anyway... since you’re the owner of the supreme dan beads, I’ll show you some respect and go along with your schemes.]

[Besides... this Mu Zihe dared to rebuke me in front of the public. I really should teach him a lesson.] — It had to be said that the hearts of girls were truly difficult to decipher.

After hearing her words, Mu Zihe was quivering in anger. His wrath had already reached its peak as he yelled, “Bxtch! How dare you look down upon the Mu Clan! I swear I will...”

Guan Wanshan naturally knew about the status of the girl, so he couldn’t just sit back and watch anymore. Interrupting Mu Zihe, he spoke hurriedly “Brother Mu...”

Mu Zihe was boiling with anger and snarled, “Guan Wanshan, you’re just a servant in a salesroom. What makes you think you can call me brother! You’re unqualified to open your mouth at the moment!”

He was obviously lost in the flames of his anger and started to bite people like a mad dog.

He had already been pissed off multiple times during his stay in the capital. The Mu Clan had gone for revenge at the beginning, but they had actually failed and they had even lost eight of their expert cultivators. While they had been preparing for their next attempt to settle the revenge, the auction had begun, and because of that, they had struggled to restrain their anger, but their stomachs were filled with dissatisfaction which had not yet abated.

He had been in a bad mood even before the start of the auction.

And when he came to the auction with his son, his son had even embarrassingly stumbled in front of the audience, losing face in front of everyone. Then the owner of the supreme dan beads had

humiliated them and snatched all of the sold medicines. Moreover, they had been oppressed by the three major sects all along... He didn't even dare to consider bidding for the first three dan beads...

And now he was being scorned by a little girl. Mu Zihe completely exploded with anger!

He was becoming hysterical as he stomped the ground with fury!

Guan Wanshan's face turned purple when he heard Mu Zihe's words. He had originally wanted to be kind in advising the Mu Clan against their actions, however, he had never thought that his attempt at kindness would result in him being bitten by a mad dog. It was like he had suffered a huge warm fart right in the face!

He instantly felt his head heat up as he didn't know how to reply to this insult.

So he stayed silent and thought, [Mu Zihe, you will definitely regret this. You've got absolutely no idea just who the girl you are messing with truly is and who is backing her!]

As expected, Mu Zihe's body fiercely trembled as he shot a wide-eyed glare at the girl in white full of killing intent, "Bxtch. Who are you? Give me your name! Tell me who is your backer. Do you dare?"

[Again with the 'bxtch'.] The girl felt a sense of bewilderment spread through her as her temper flared up straight away.

[What is wrong with you?]

I didn't see you make any threats when those guys competed for the beads earlier.

If you want the supreme dan bead, does that mean nobody else can take it? If you bid, then no one is allowed to bid after you? Why did you suddenly become so angry and even started cursing at me?

Does this guy think that I am this easy to bully just because I'm a girl?

Even though she was well-cultured, she couldn't hold back the flames of anger burning in her heart.

"Mu Zihe, those words, are you speaking for the Mu Clan?" Xiu-Er spoke with a grim tone.

People who knew about her status couldn't help sighing silently.

[How could the Mu Clan send such a fool here?]

Mu Zihe laughed and said, "Are you scared, bxtch?! With things as they are now, what use is there to be scared?"

Another 'bxtch'. With an expression as cold as ice, Xiu-Er dryly

said, “Fair enough! Since that is the case, even if you, the Mu Clan, wishes to retreat, I won’t let you. I will see you in the martial world. But right now, the auction for the supreme dan bead is still ongoing. Whoever bids the highest price gets the item. If you don’t have the money, piss off! I don’t have time to quarrel with the poor!”

Following that, she glared with her almond-shaped eyes and enunciated clearly, “I am from the House of the Chaotic Storm, backed by Master Bai! [I am Xiu of the Heavens](#)! Mu Clan, I await your challenge!”

To have been disgraced in such a way, Mu Zihe had felt his temper rise to its peak. Just as he was about to curse back at the girl, he suddenly recalled what she had just said.

When he had finally processed her words, his jaw dropped. He was totally stunned!

While his face remained purple, all the anger within him had instantly vanished!

The entire auction hall shot him gloating looks as they took great pleasure in his distress.

In their eyes, he was a massive fool! -- ‘Now, you have finally realized who you have just offended, right?’

At this moment, Mu Zihe could only think of one thing, which

was... [I am fxxked!]

[Who... did I just piss off?

What... did I just do?]

Mu Zihe's mind was buzzing with confusion!

He felt a bit dizzy as he stood there blankly, unsure of how to proceed.

[The House of the Chaotic Storm!]

[Backed by Master Bai!]

[Xiu of the Heavens!]

These few words were like a string of bombshells, continuously blowing up in Mu Zihe's mind.

At a complete loss, he looked around the room blankly with helpless eyes, hoping he could get some help from the people around him. However, everyone who made eye-contact with him would immediately turn their eyes away. No one wanted to have anything to do with him!

They were avoiding him like he was a poisonous snake!

The House of the Chaotic Storm. Across the entire Land of Han-Yang, it was the most legendary power! Backed by the most legendary man! They were gods who stood high above this simple world, looking down upon all beings.

It received complete respect from all countries.

The seas bowed deeply, showing utter reverence.

In front of them, empires were but mere child's play.

This, is the House of the Chaotic Storm.

There was another saying: Even if there was a man who occupied the highest position in the whole world, he wouldn't be a match to the world's No. 1 cultivator in white!

The person in white the proverb described was Master Bai!

And the House of the Chaotic Storm, was backed by no other than Master Bai!

No one knew who Master Bai really was. Neither did anyone know where the House of the Chaotic Storm was really located. These names were full of indescribable mystery, but at the same time, they brought extreme fear to everyone under the sky!

Master Bai!

The mysterious man who existed in Heaven but came down to Earth.

In the myths, at his side, there always stood two people!

On the left stood Wan of the Clouds; on the right stood Xiu of the Heavens. With a wave of his hand, he could summon winds and clouds. By extending his arms, he could even grasp the universe!

And right now, the girl that Mu Zihe had offended, was actually one of the two legendary girls, Xiu of the Heavens!

...

Xiu of the Heavens, 天上之秀, literally refers to someone worthy of being born in the Heavens.

Chapter 46: Xiu of the Heavens; I Am Crazy for Dan

Mu Zihe's mind was filled with fear. He wanted to say something, anything, to try and explain himself, but he was stunned to the point of being unable to speak.

In the blink of an eye, the flames of rage that had filled his chest turned into complete and utter terror!

His body was flooded with sweat that couldn't stop flowing, immediately and thoroughly soaking his clothes. Even after he had intensely cultivated for so many years, having a far better instinct than most, Mu Zihe somehow didn't actually notice his perspiration.

At that moment, in his mind, there remained only one thought-If the House of the Chaotic Storm truly decided to take action against the Mu Clan... Then, only complete annihilation awaited the Mu Clan.

In fact, there wasn't even any need for the House of the Chaotic Storm to directly take action. As long as they just hinted their desire for the destruction of the Mu Clan, many people would naturally be happy to help them. The so-called eight noble clans might be one of the the major forces in this mortal world, but in the world of martial cultivation, it would be generous to say that they were useless. To destroy them with a mere flick of the finger, it wasn't difficult at all!

Mu Zihe's son hurriedly stood up and nervously spoke out, "Lady Xiu-Er, please..."

Xiu-Er sneered and said, "Who has given you permission to call me Xiu-Er?"

The two black-clad men standing beside her had pressed their hands on the hilt of their swords, while their eyes were filled with a blade-like killing intent. They only needed a word from Xiu-Er, before they would instantly draw their swords and split the two Mu Clan members into four pieces!

The face of Mu Zihe's son was filled with terror, "Yes, I understand. I shouldn't speak your honorable name so unadvisedly. But these few days, the Mu Clan has undergone many tribulations. My father is tired, so he was a bit short-tempered just now. He was muddle-headed and spoke impertinent words..."

Lady Xiu-Er humphed and blandly spoke, "Has the Mu Clan... not become extinct yet?"

She turned and sat down without saying another word.

The father and son from the Mu Clan were standing there, completely stunned. They felt like the way ahead of them was filled with endless darkness. Their bodies couldn't stop trembling, as though they were going to collapse at any moment.

One of the black-clad men affixed his razor-sharp gaze at Mu Zihe

and spoke clearly, “The Shadow Blades await your instructions at any time!”

And then he walked away with vigorous strides.

The supreme dan bead in this round of the auction was most certainly won by Xiu-Er.

But now, the people was no longer concerned with who the supreme dan bead belonged to. When Xiu-Er revealed her identity, the supreme dan bead was already destined to be hers. If anyone dared to bid again, then he was obviously messing with the House of the Chaotic Storm, and this was equal to courting death.

They started to feel sorry for the Mu Clan, [They are really unlucky. Look at what kind of men they sent for this auction. The youth doesn’t have a calm personality and stumbled several times, bringing disgrace to their clan in front of everybody. The elder is even worse; not only did he possess a brash personality, but he also lacks foresight. He actually made a world-class killing force into an enemy of their clan!

“When they return to their clan, the clan elders will probably strip them of their skins, right?]

Everyone was gloating in their hearts.

Guan Wanshan called out ‘one and a half million’ for the third time before slamming the gavel down with a bang. “Sold!”

Mu Zihe's body heavily trembled.

This ridiculous price of one and a half million was because he had stubbornly pushed it up.

Not only had he raised the price and costed Master Bai a sum of money, he had even badly offended Xiu of the Heavens!

He couldn't help looking at Guan Wanshan. Only now did he understand that when Guan Wanshan had tried to stop him, he was actually looking out for him. What a pity. He had treated this kindness as the [viscera of a donkey](#)...

He looked at Guan Wanshan with imploring eyes and murmured, "Brother Guan..."

Guan Wanshan was blank-faced as he waved his hand, "I'm but a servant of the salesroom, a slave of the people who will drop dead at anytime. How can I accept a man from the glorious Mu Clan calling me Brother? I am not qualified to bear such a title..."

Mu Zihe said bitterly, "Brother Guan, what are you talking about. Just now, I was too impulsive. I apologize to you... Please allow me to ask Brother Guan to put in some good words for me..."

Since Mu Zihe had thoroughly lost his face in front of the entire audience, being humble was his best option. He was grasping for a last straw -- Guan Wanshan, who stood before him, was truly the

last chance he had to save his life now.

Mu Zihe hadn't even finished his sentence when Xiu-Er coldly spoke up, "Why is this auction not continuing? What are you waiting for? Don't you want to keep running the Ling-Bao Hall Salesroom anymore?!"

Guan Wanshan shut his mouth immediately, not daring to utter another word.

Apparently, Xiu of the Heavens was rather angry...

Under these circumstances, who would dare to extend a hand towards Mu Zihe? To offer any kind of help would be seen as a direct challenge against the House of the Chaotic Storm. No sensible man, who valued his life, would do something as foolish as that!

When Mu Zihe looked around at the audience again, they all turned their heads and averted their gazes. They didn't even dare to make eye contact with him. They were treating him like he carried a fatal plague...

After looking around him, Mu Zihe completely gave in to his despair.

He stood there in a daze, looking like he had aged several years.

His son walked over quietly and whispered, "Father?"

Only then did Mu Zihe sober up as he sighed sadly. He waved his hand feebly and said, “There’s no need to say anymore...”

He shakily stood up and staggered out of the salesroom. The Mu Zihe at that moment was akin to a walking corpse.

His son quietly followed behind him.

No one stopped them; no one said goodbye to them, not even the staff of the salesroom.

Everyone knew that since they had offended Xiu Of The Heavens, they should leave as soon as they could. Otherwise, once the auction ended, even that opportunity would be lost to them.

People watched the two men walk out. It was like they were looking at two dead bodies filled with the smell of death.

Xiu-Er looked at their backs and sneered. She then paid no more attention to them.

People all understood: If Xiu of the Heavens wants you dead, even if you ran to the edge of the world, it would still not be a difficult thing for her to get you! Let alone a group as huge as the Mu Clan; it was impossible for them to hide well.

“The fifth supreme dan bead...”

Guan Wanshan's voice sounded again and it drew everyone's attention back to the stage.

But then--

“One million!” Xiu-Er's clear voice sounded out. There was no sign of emotion in her voice.

People all stayed silent; no one dared to snatch it.

Guan Wanshan sighed slightly, “Sold!”

BANG!

The gavel descended. He didn't even count to three.

Everyone gave a sigh of relief.

“The sixth supreme dan bead...”

“One million!” Xiu-Er bid again.

The crowd suddenly erupted into a small commotion.

It seemed a little bit excessive that Lady Xiu-Er would bid once

again.

[Damn! We know you're in a bad mood. It's fine that we give in for you once. But don't you know when to stop? Do you want to snatch all the supreme dan beads? The House of the Chaotic Storm is mysterious and powerful, but you can't suppress us all!]

Xiu-Er stood up and said peacefully, "Please forgive me. I allowed myself to get upset at two nobodies just now; it has nothing to do with all of you. However, I am under strict orders from my master to secure three dan beads during this auction. Since I have been tasked to do so, I have to bid. I appreciate it if you can do me this favor. I promise that your patience will be rewarded another day."

After Xiu-Er's explanation, people instantly felt more comfortable, as the atmosphere in the room calmed down. Someone even replied amiably, "What are you talking about, Lady Xiu-Er. If Master Bai has given you orders, of course you can get as many as you wish. Even if I won a bead, I would send it to Master Bai myself..."

People were all going along with his words, but in their minds, they were all cursing at that guy. How could he be so shameless?

But at the same time, everyone had the same feeling of regret: [Why wasn't I the first one to stand up and say that? It was a convenient path to build a good relationship with Master Bai. What does it matter if it was shameless; why wasn't I more shameless...]

No one knew that Ye Xiao was gnashing his teeth with hatred.

He could clearly sense that Xiu-Er wasn't really angry with what had just happened, or rather, the Mu Clan was simply not significant enough to concern her. However, she used that facade of fury to snatch two supreme dan beads.

She had spent the lowest price to get the supreme dan beads. Afterwards, she had used such gentle words to appease the audience and relax the atmosphere once again. This kind of calculative scheming, it was truly startling.

What annoyed Ye Xiao even more was that, despite the displeasure in his heart, he couldn't do anything about it.

She paid for the dan beads after all, and the price was fair...

As he thought about that, he became even more cautious of her, [She has such a status even though she's but a mere maid. Just who is this Master Bai? And... This House of the Chaotic Storm, what kind of place is it? How can it frighten everyone to this extent?]

After that, from the seventh supreme dan bead onwards, the competition got fiercer and fiercer. In fact, the scale of the battle could even be described as horrifying!

Everybody clearly understood that six of the ten supreme dan beads were already gone!

The four that remained were targeted by dozens of groups. They would never give up as long as they still had a penny to spend!

The final price of the seventh dan bead reached one million and 450 thousand!

For the eighth dan bead, the price beat the previous highest price, one and a half million, and reached one million and 600 thousand!

Even crazier was the price of the ninth dan bead which reached one million and 750 thousand!

Ye Xiao's anger had finally been relieved; he was smiling and gleefully laughing. He seemed to have seen a huge amount of money flowing into his wallet, as endless as the Chang-Jiang River...

“The last supreme dan bead!”

Guan Wanshan turned excitedly and shouted, “This is the last supreme dan bead of this auction! The starting price is the same, as are the bidding rules...”

Before he could even finish speaking, he was already interrupted with the first offer, “One million and 750 thousand!”

The next moment, several people shouted at the same time.

“One million and 800 thousand!”

“One million and 850 thousand!”

“Two million!”

When the record-breaking price of two million came out, the crowd turned silent for a short while. And then suddenly, a faint voice echoed out, “Two million and 250 thousand...”

The prime dan-maker of the Reaching Cloud Hall, Shi Yue, sat restlessly. In the end, the way he looked at Xiao Moyan was even akin to begging!

...

[viscera of a donkey - 驴肝肺 literally means the livers and lungs of donkeys. It means to mistake kindness for malicious intent.]

Chapter 47: The Weird Master Feng!

In his entire life, this might be the only chance Shi Yue could possibly seize to finally improve his cultivation level!

One dan bead might give him some hope, but it was far from a guarantee.

If there were two, the success rate could at least be doubled.

Xiao Moyan Sighed.

Considering the practical value of the Pei-Yuan Dan, 50 thousand taels of silver would be the maximum price for one dan bead. However, the Pei-Yuan Dan with dan clouds could actually make people go crazy. As for now, the price had already reached an unbelievable number of 2 million and 250 thousand; and that was just for a single dan bead!

Even a top-grade dan bead wouldn't be worth such a high price!

However, this dan bead could give rise to unimaginable future achievements for any dan-maker.

It even concerned the future of a sect!

The competitors still bidding for the last supreme dan bead were all comparable to the Reaching Cloud Hall. Even though there

were differences among them, it wasn't a huge gap. If this dan bead was snatched by any of the other sects and they managed to gain something valuable from it, the Reaching Cloud Hall could very well be surpassed in the future.

That would be a devastating result for the Reaching Cloud Hall. Xiao Moyan had to consider it.

He thought for a while, before he turned his head to look at the 17th balcony.

[The problem now is this Feng Zhiling... Can he take out any more of these supreme dan beads

Were these supreme dan beads made by himself... or did he just stumble upon them by coincidence?]

"Patriarch... We can't take any risks on this..." Shi Yue was burning with anxiety.

Xiao Moyan eventually sighed and spoke with a deep voice, "3 million and 150 thousand!"

That was over half of the sect's available funds. If he couldn't win the supreme dan bead with this price, he could only give up.

If he used any more of the sect's money and an accident happened, the daily operations of the sect would be badly affected.

Xiao Moyan secretly made a decision in mind: [The more money we have in this mortal world, the better...]

When people heard the unreasonably high price of 3 million and 150 thousand, they couldn't believe their ears.

"Only one dan bead!"

"Three million and 150 thousand!"

"This is totally insane!"

Many people lowered their heads in disappointment. It was possible to run out of strength sometimes and the same could also be applied to wealth.

The sects, who were still competing for the last dan bead, saw Xiao Moyan stand up and raise the price of 2 million and 250 thousand by 900 thousand. Once this stage was reached, they could only give up.

They all knew that if any of them bid again, they would be offending the Reaching Cloud Hall in public - even challenging it!

That was like kicking a huge hornet's nest. Nobody could afford to mess with them.

"Lunatics like Mu Zihe... are really rare in this world after all." Meng Wufei smiled bitterly and sighed.

As the Cyan Cloud Sect was the major competitor of the Reaching Cloud Hall, it signaled the end of the auction as soon as Meng Wufei quit.

The drastic bidding had finally come to an end. At this point, when everyone tried to contact Feng Zhiling, they realized that this mysterious man had already left.

He had already left, leaving absolutely no traces behind.

The girl in cyan - Wenren, the girl in white - Xiu-Er, and Xiao Moyan were all surprised.

"This guy has been maintaining a high-profile, acting as if other people didn't even exist, like he was the only one who mattered. Why did he disappear so quickly?"

...

Ye Xiao was sitting comfortably in the private VIP reception room while drinking a fragrant tea.

The auction has concluded. Now, it was time for him to get the cut he deserved.

[I'm interested to see just what kind of trouble the Mu Clan could possibly make for me this time. Humph...] Ye Xiao was thinking, [They must be busy dealing with their own problems right now.]

[Anyway, this House of the Chaotic Storm sounds really powerful...] Ye Xiao frowned, [The other night, they had put in a lot of effort to frame me. They seem to have been plotting against me so far...]

While he was thinking about what to do next, Guan Wanshan walked in with an accountant.

They felt like they were seeing a [plutus](#) when they saw Ye Xiao. They nearly bowed in worship!

The ten Pei-Yuan Dan beads from Ye Xiao had actually brought them a revenue totaling 15 million and 300 thousand!

This much money couldn't even be described by simple phrases like 'turning a stone into gold by touching it' or 'a pie falling from the sky'!

It was actually equivalent to a mountain of gold falling from the sky!

"Brother Feng..." Guan Wanshan fervently ran to Ye Xiao and shook his hands, "Never has an auction in my lifetime created such a profit. It has also created a miracle in this land! 15 million! 15 MILLION!"

Ye Xiao watched him with a faint smile and said, "Uh-huh?"

He drew back his hands from Guan Wanshan and said blandly, "Is it really that much?"

Guan Wanshan was rubbing his hands and said, "Yes. Yes. Absolutely. This time, we'll take 20 percent of it as our profit according to the agreement. However, there will still be 12 million left for you, Brother Feng!"

Ye Xiao nodded with a faint smile, "Uh-huh? 12 million. That is a lot."

Guan Wanshan noticed that something felt off, so he cautiously asked, "Brother Feng, is there anything you aren't satisfied with?"

"No, it's nothing." Ye Xiao smiled blandly and said, "Master Guan, those things that I got in the auction, please send them to me. As for the money... Hehe. Just deduct it from my cut."

Guan Wanshan repeatedly promised, "Yes. Yes. No problem."

Although Ye Xiao had taken a lot of items in the auction, the money he had spent had only amounted to 2 million and 500 thousand.

Under normal circumstances, this would have been an enormous

amount of money.

However, compared to the 12 million he was going to get, it was not a huge amount.

By now, the experienced Guan Wanshan had noticed that something was definitely wrong.

"Master Feng's smile looks... complex, somehow... no, it's weird..."

Ordinary people would definitely faint from excitement when getting such a large amount of money. Why is he acting so nonchalantly?"

Guan Wanshan couldn't understand it.

Ye Xiao remained ambivalent. He didn't say anything, instead he only urged them to complete the remaining tasks. Guan Wanshan felt confused, but he could only murmur in confusion while wrapping up the formalities, wondering what could be wrong.

Ye Xiao kept a rigid and faint smile on his face. He sat cross-legged as he watched the accountant.

The abacus was making a noise.

Guan Wanshan was really tense and his mind was running at full

speed.

[What on earth... made this guy unhappy?]

That was not a middling issue, the guy was truly their plutus. If they couldn't satisfy him, it would definitely be a huge loss for the salesroom!

"All right. After deducting the cost of the purchased items, Master Feng's earnings will amount to 7 million and 550 thousand." The accountant finally finished counting while drops of sweat were rolling down his forehead, "As for the tax that should be paid to the treasury, we will cover it. That's an order from Master Guan."

"No need. There's no need to bother the salesroom with such a small amount of money." Ye Xiao spoke in an odd tone, "I have so much money that it isn't really an issue. Besides, the supreme dan beads are nothing special to me anyway... I don't think you should be the one who pays that tax. You have worked hard for this auction and only earned a little."

"The supreme dan beads!"

Guan Wanshan was enlightened. He finally realized what it was that displeased Master Feng.

[I see.

I guess that what made this guy unhappy, is that... the ten supreme dan beads were sold for 15 million, a really huge price, but he only got 500 thousand for the five that were sold to the salesroom.

According to the average price in the auction, those five dan beads could be sold for at least 7 million and 500 thousand taels of silver.

500 thousand, when compared to 7 million and 500 thousand... was absolutely nothing!

That's a huge loss that anyone could even figure it out with his toes.

It'd be weird if this guy felt happy about it.]

However, the problem now was that the price of the five dan beads were previously agreed upon. At the end of the day, business was business. Ye Xiao couldn't say anything about it, let alone go back on his word.

However, it didn't mean that the Xiao Monarch would be happy with a loss of over 7 million!

And to make things worse, it was given to the man who made money off of him.

The Ling-Bao Hall Salesroom was not doing this auction for free;

they got 20 percent of the total sales price. That amounted to almost 3 million!

"Hold on. Stop for a second." Although Guan Wanshan had finally realized the problem, it wasn't something he could solve with his authority.

Guan Wanshan understood one other thing: If they failed to satisfy this Master Feng... then he would definitely say nothing about it, but he wouldn't come back to the Ling-Bao Hall when he got anything valuable in the future!

He might have earned a lot this time - it was of course, not a loss, but he didn't feel satisfied; it wasn't enough.

Time passed. Ye Xiao had already finished two pots of tea by the time Guan Wanshan returned while wiping sweat from his forehead. He walked over to Ye Xiao and smiled, "You see, Brother Feng, I just asked our boss for instructions... and we have come to a decision..."

Ye Xiao replied blandly, "Really? What decision?"

"Yes. Since we bought five of the supreme dan beads from you the other day for a really low price, we have taken advantage of you after all. Brother Feng is a generous gentleman and hasn't voiced his displeasure about this, but we can't just accept such kindness for nothing." Guan Wanshan looked at Ye Xiao's face while he was speaking.

"Hmmm..." Ye Xiao drawled.

"How about this... those items that you won in the auction, we'll give them to you as gifts. We won't charge anything for them. They are just some small things. Please don't refuse." Guan Wanshan said.

Ye Xiao was thinking, [That was well said. You give me things worth approximately 3 million and actually called them small gifts. And you actually asked me not to refuse... you are really speaking louder than others because of wealth.]

A joyful expression covered his face, but his mouth was saying with hesitation, "Well that... That isn't appropriate. It was an agreement which had been made in advance. I feel that I should refuse your offer... Hahahahaha..."

...

God of wealth

Chapter 48: Mutation Of The Space

Guan Wanshan and the accountant thought with disdain, [Screw you. Look at your mouth. The grin on your face has reached your ears, yet you actually said that it was improper and that you couldn't accept it?

Is there even a single damn thing that you'd feel embarrassed for?]

But on the surface, Guan Wanshan was acting fervidly, "No, no, no. Please. We're pleased that you don't dislike them."

[Of course I like them. Even if you give small gifts like these ten times a day, I will never dislike any of them!]

Ye Xiao answered in his mind, but the expression on his face implied "it's impolite to refuse, but shameful to accept". He rubbed his hands and said with a smile, "You deserve those dan beads, but now you're... Gosh. I am really... Hahahaha... You're so generous and so enthusiastic. Master Guan, you and me, we're friends!"

He tapped Guan Wanshan's shoulder while he was talking with an enthusiastic look.

Guan Wanshan's cheek muscle couldn't help but twitch...

[I knew it. I understand you... If I don't give up and give this money to you, you'd definitely not make friends with me...]

Ye Xiao left the salesroom, laden with bags filled with treasures in front of the staff of the salesroom. He left through the back door and got on the private sedan-chair owned by the salesroom, heading back home with his fruitful results.

It wasn't exaggerated to say 'fruitful results'. He had obtained about seven medical materials, one piece of the Cosmic Hades, and a bag of Sky Crystal Sand; this was quite the harvest!

As for the notes of silver and gold, they were actually kind of a burden to Ye Xiao.

The sphere's space wasn't able to absorb these notes.

When the amount of money one possessed had expanded beyond a certain amount, it really had the ability to smother them to death. Even though they were just very thin notes, it was still frightening when there were too many of them.

Therefore, Ye Xiao only took 500 notes, which were all worth the maximum value of 5 thousand taels of silver. As for the rest of the money, he decided to leave it in the salesroom for the time being.

Of course, Guan Wanshan consented at once to the request of Ye Xiao. In fact, he felt happy about it:, [Now that you've left such a large amount of money in the salesroom, how could you possibly abandon us?]

The sedan-chair had travelled for a long distance when the two carriers suddenly realized something was wrong.

What could be wrong?

The sedan-chair was too light!

There is a huge difference between an empty sedan-chair and an occupied sedan-chair!

They stopped the sedan-chair and looked inside, only to find that the man who had been sitting inside the sedan-chair have already disappeared. The two carriers looked at each other and nearly thought that they had seen a ghost.

...

Ye Xiao took the notes worth a huge amount of money with him and walked through the streets like his sleeves were filled with gold. He was overcome with joy, not only because he had earned his first giant pot of gold in this second life, but also because the medical materials that he got in the auction had surprised him. He had thought that no more than two of them could be absorbed into the space, but in fact, four of the seven materials were absorbed and had taken root.

As for the other three, they were naturally drained and thrown away like dried turnips by Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao was quite proficient in this process; as a matter of fact, he was extremely skilled with it.

In fact, there was another thing that had surprised him. The Sky Crystal Sand had also been entirely absorbed by the space. Although he didn't know its use at the moment, he was sure that the sand was valuable as it had been accepted by the space.

The Cosmic Hades, which had been re-auctioned many times before, had been waiting for its rightful owner, and it had finally met him this time - or more specifically, the right "space", because it was automatically absorbed by the space, just like the Heavenly Crystal Marrow!

It was equal in strength to the Heavenly Crystal Marrow.

No. The Cosmic Hades was even more powerful than the Heavenly Crystal Marrow - a lot more.

After the Cosmic Hades entered the space, it kept producing the gelid qi as usual. The Heavenly Crystal Marrow was also producing scorching qi at the same time.

These two energies, with opposing attributes, were actually blending.

However, the energy from the Heavenly Crystal Marrow was obviously weaker than the other. The only way it was coping with the gelid qi was through combining with the energy that originated from the other consumed medicines. But even with the help of the other medical materials, it couldn't fully withstand the gelid qi.

Therefore, the temperature of the space gradually decreased...

The whole space seemed to come to a standstill, except for the transforming energies.

The energy of the medical materials kept flowing under the egg, and most of it had even been absorbed by the egg. On the jade plate at the end of the tunnel, there appeared several new dan beads.

Ye Xiao walked over and had a closer look at it.

He was instantly overjoyed!

The dan beads that had shown up this time were also top-quality supreme dan beads with dan clouds. Among the ten supreme dan beads, there were eight Pei-Yuan Dan; the other two were purple dan beads with a shiny metallic luster.

Bone Ablutionary Dan!

It was one level higher than the Pei-Yuan Dan!

As an expert of cultivation, Ye Xiao recognized it with a single glance.

Bone Ablutionary Dan was literally used for ablution of muscles and bones to expel the filth of the body.

Cultivators who were lucky enough to use it could have a brighter future.

A “brighter future” wasn’t just a saying. A cultivator who used 10 Bone Ablutionary Dan beads could steeply increase the quality of their Jing and Mai. No matter what kind of martial arts he cultivated in afterwards, he could get twice the result with half the effort. How could this not be a brighter future?

Therefore, the Bone Ablutionary Dan was what a cultivator, who hadn’t built his foundation yet, most wanted and most needed.

The Bone Ablutionary Dan was quite normal in the Qing-Yun Realm, but since the Land of Han-Yang was a rather low-level realm, it was an extremely valuable dan. Even the major sects didn’t have many. Basically, only the disciples who were the crème de la crème could have a chance to use it.

Ordinary disciples would never stand a chance to touch it, much less use it.

[My sphere has started to produce the Bone Ablutionary Dan...] Ye Xiao was pleased with these qualitative improvements.

And then he started to pay attention to the weird egg.

The way it absorbed the energies was really horrible.

Ye Xiao frowned and stared at the egg for a while and he had finally found something new. It seemed that more mysterious veins had appeared on the egg. The size of the egg had also gotten larger. However, Ye Xiao suspected that he was seeing an illusion...

If it wasn't an illusion, then why is it that the color of the egg seemed brighter than before?!

There were no other changes, except for those mentioned above. It still had no traces of life.

Ye Xiao looked at the egg, and then gnashed his teeth in hatred... "Wicked egg. When will you hatch? How many more cultivation resources do you need to absorb..."

He then turned to the side, where the planting was going on, and then all the gloom in his chest had instantly vanished.

In the middle of the planting area, the Heaven's Cyan was already tall and straight. It was as thick as a bowl and had already reached 16 meters in height. Its crown was almost 10 meters wide!

Every soft green leaf was like a flashing light.

The green was even more delicate than one could imagine.

It was no longer a Heaven's Cyan; it had become an early stage Tree of Cultivating Tea!

Naturally, Ye Xiao was smiling from ear to ear.

The four medical materials he had just gained had rooted themselves in the north, south, east and west corners of this area. He could clearly feel that they were much more animated now that they were inside the sphere.

Ye Xiao did some maths and was shocked by the outcome!

When he had first acquired the Heaven's Cyan, it was already over nine thousand years old. However, it still needed hundreds of years to upgrade into the Tree of Cultivating Tea. But how long was it since it first entered the sphere's space?

Five or six days?!

It had actually already become a Tree of Cultivating Tea? And since it was already in the early stages; it had even completely skipped the baby stage.

So, how much faster was the growth rate inside... compared to outside?

This question wasn't easy to answer. It required scientific research. Regardless, it was definitely a lot faster!

While Ye Xiao was overjoyed and thinking about the fast growth

rate of the medical materials in the space, he clearly felt the space quiver. It brought a horrible feeling, like this place was about to collapse.

The horrible pressures came from all directions.

The pressure was crazily pushing towards the center of the space!

Ye Xiao didn't even have the time to react before he felt himself ejected from the space.

This was not the first time that he had been ejected from the space, but this time, the feeling was countless of times stronger than before!

He totally lost control, like he was dangling inside the furious billows of the ocean. He felt nauseous and dizzy; he felt as if the world was spinning, and he couldn't do a single thing to help himself!

“What the... What's going on?” Ye Xiao closed his eyes to try and relieve the feeling of nausea, but failed. He then tried to move to a nearby street corner to find something to lean on, but he couldn't. He had to crouch down and put his hands on the ground like he was crawling.

Such an afflictive feeling was something that he had never been through before - not in his previous life, nor in his second!

His thoughts were flying about in his head. He could clearly feel that his spiritual qi was being absorbed. He had fallen into an idiot-like condition as he turned completely muddle headed...

When his spiritual qi was drained completely, Ye Xiao could no longer hold on; he collapsed on the ground and passed out.

Before he passed out, he only had one thought in mind, "For goodness' sake, don't be seen by others. I am still Feng Zhiling at the moment..."

...

However, things always went contrary to one's wishes.

Right after Ye Xiao passed out, several people slowly walked towards him.

The one walking in front was the girl in cyan. Behind her, there were two other people - one was a middle-aged man, while the other was a middle-aged woman.

"My lady, shall we just go back... or shall we...?" The middle-aged woman stopped talking as she frowned.

The girl in cyan had her face covered with silk. That's right. She was the girl in cyan who had been bidding for the Regeneration Ink Lotus against Ye Xiao at the auction.

...

Chapter 49: Captured?

The girl in cyan smiled softly, "No need to hurry. We came to the Kingdom of Chen to study the local customs and to observe the political scenario of this country. Of course, the most important thing is to see how the battle between the princes is progressing."

"That is what we are here for."

"We are from the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. If we want to become the supremacy in this land, we need to be concerned about these important aspects."

The girl in cyan spoke blandly and turned around the corner.

As she rounded the corner, an 'oh' sound leaked out from her mouth out of surprise. The three of them had run into the unconscious body of Ye Xiao.

"This guy..." The girl in cyan's expression changed as a serious glint appeared in her eyes, "This guy... Isn't he the guy from the auction, the owner of the supreme dan beads?"

The middle-aged woman walked over and identified Ye Xiao, "Yes. This average-size, strong body and that square jaw. He is definitely that guy named Feng!"

The girl in cyan was agitated. She looked around and spoke anxiously, "He must have been assaulted..." She then reached her

hand out to touch Ye Xiao's neck and said, "He is still alive. He is breathing..."

She stood up and immediately started issuing orders, "Aunt Hua, go get a carriage. Don't be discovered. Bring this guy to our house in the Kingdom of Chen. This guy... If I am right, he will be very useful in the future."

The middle-aged woman quickly left to find a carriage.

Meanwhile, the girl in cyan lifted her foot and kicked Ye Xiao's body thrice. - Pah! Pah! Pah! - She had sealed Ye Xiao's three major acupoints. Now, regardless of whether Ye Xiao wakes up or not, he would be unable to perform any martial arts in the near future.

She then reached out her hand and inserted a dan bead into his mouth before taking a black napkin from her bag and covering his head with it. She said, "Mr. Zhao, please carry him on your back. And be careful. Don't let anyone see his face."

"Yes, my lady." That Mr. Zhao obeyed and bent down before lifting Ye Xiao and placing him on his back.

The girl in cyan reached out her hand once again to quickly search Ye Xiao's body. Taking off her hand from inside Ye Xiao's clothes, she stood there, shocked and confused.

She said, "Apart from some notes, there is nothing left on him... It seems that this supreme dan bead owner was robbed... In spite

of carrying a bunch of precious items, he still flaunted his wealth, so it is reasonable that someone would rob him. But why didn't the ones who robbed him take these notes which are worth a small fortune? Do they not like money... Why?!"

"Or maybe... are the robbers not from the mortal world?"

"If so, who could it be?"

"Could there be an unknown force behind this?"

"This is really surprising and beyond comprehension..."

As she was collecting her thoughts, she felt her palm heat up. She realized that it was the heat coming from Ye Xiao's body.

The girl in cyan suddenly drew her hand back like she had suddenly received an electric shock. Her face was veiled, and hence, her expression could not be seen; however, on her neck, a shade of red was visible.

Realizing what she did, she cursed herself, [What is wrong with me? Why was I so absent-minded? I actually kept my hand inside a man's clothes for such a long time...]

While she was lost in thought, she realized, [Hmmm. This guys smell is not the kind that I dislike. It smells like a purified body which has divorced the filth of the mortal world...]

[Since he has a purified body, he must be a supreme cultivator... So the one who robbed him must be at a much higher level to take this guy down without leaving a single mark on his body...]

[Therefore, the robber must at least have the strength of 6th level Earth Origin Stage cultivator... To find out an accurate estimate, I will need to wait for this guy to wake up and then confirm his cultivation level...]

By now, Mr. Zhao had walked out of the alley while carrying Ye Xiao whose head was still covered by the black napkin.

Not far from them, a carriage came into sight.

The middle-aged woman was walking besides the carriage.

The girl in cyan grabbed Ye Xiao and got in the carriage without any hesitation, and the middle-aged woman followed her in after her.

Mr. Zhao didn't follow after them. Instead, he threw a piece of gold to the coachman and said, "I will take the carriage."

He jumped on the coach without saying another word and picked up the whip. He yelled and lashed the horse, and the carriage steadily moved ahead .

He sat on the front, dangling his legs with a dim light in his eyes. He looked exactly like a coachman with years of experience driving a carriage.

He could truly look like a dragon or a tiger if he wanted to be one.

Such skill was truly amazing.

Even when the carriage had gone far away, the coachman had still remained standing on the spot with a dreamy look on his face.

"Is there really someone who wishes to exchange an old carriage for a big piece of shiny gold? This piece of gold must be worth at least thirty carriages like mine! I have really made a fortune today. Pies are falling from the sky today!"

The coachman finally awoke from his stupor once the carriage went out of his sight. He joyfully put the gold into his pocket and headed home.

"Right. I should go buy another carriage. There is still a lot more I can do with this money. I can buy some new clothes for my wife. It is so sad that she has been with me for so many years and has never experienced any good days... I can also buy some decent food for my son and daughter. Oh, and new clothes for each of them. Oh, it is time to let the kids go to school..."

The rest of the money, I shall not use it rashly. And I need to earn more money as soon as possible... I should give the kids bright

futures, not like mine - working as a coachman..."

He had seen a wonderful vision in his mind while he was thinking about it... He just couldn't help smiling...

...

Ye Xiao's body was twitching. Although he was unconscious at the moment, his body still continued twitching. It seemed like his Jing and Mai would explode at any moment...

His mind and his spiritual consciousness seemed to have exploded, and his entire body was experiencing an excruciating pain.

His face showed a frown, but his mouth remained tightly shut, and he made no sounds at all.

The girl in cyan laid him on the seat in the carriage and saw his Jing and Mai sticking out and sinking back; it was weirdly pulsating. It looked like earthworms were wriggling within his body. She knew that he was suffering from an unimaginable amount of pain every passing moment. She couldn't help but sigh.

"What malicious thing did the robber do to him? Such an inhumane method... He has been unconscious for such a long time, yet the pain is still bothering him... I have tried several methods, but I still can't find any solution for this... And I can't find any clue about such a technique."

"What kind of martial arts could make people suffer like this?"

"The robber is really unscrupulous. He not only robbed him, he had even attacked him in such a vicious fashion. It would be better to just kill him now than make him go through such horrible pain. It really makes people bristle with anger!" The middle-aged woman was also filled with indignation.

They had seen a lot of murders, and they too had a lot of blood on their hands.

However, it was the first time in their lives that they had witnessed such a malicious technique.

It was apparently making him beg for death...

What kind of deep hatred could drive people to do such a malicious thing!

"However, no wonder this guy is the owner of the supreme dan. He really has some tough bones." The girl in cyan smiled and said, "Forget about ordinary people, even an expert cultivator, when suffering from such extreme pain while unconscious, would at least scream out in agony. But this guy has never made a single sound. That is especially commendable."

There was a sense of appreciation in her tone. She sighed, "A man with such will... Is there anything in the world he can't

accomplish? He wouldn't have been able to make the legendary supreme dan beads if he didn't have such a strong will. I believe, now more than ever, that the supreme dan of the auction is from this guy!"

The carriage was moving steadily along the road. They were nearing the southern gate of Chen-Xing City. After a tiring journey, they arrived at the gate of a big house, before the carriage finally stopped.

Mr. Zhao made a gesture, causing the door to open. - 'Tik Tak Tik Tak' -The entire carriage passed through the door.

The door was closed again immediately.

...

Ye Xiao was still insensible to the changing environment. He felt like he was drifting on the choppy sea, and the rogue waves were hitting him one after another. He could have sunk and died at any moment.

Ye Xiao knew that he could do nothing more but hold onto his sense of self with all his effort. He gnashed his teeth and endured the pain to the best of his capabilities. He ignored everything that was happening outside of his subconsciousness.

He didn't even know that he had already been captured by someone else like a meat on the chopping block.

When the strong quivering was finally over, Ye Xiao's body had undergone over 70 bouts of intense sweating. If not for the girl in cyan taking care of him because of his status as "owner of the supreme dan", he would have become a skeleton due to dehydration. That was no joking matter!

It was safe to say that the girl in cyan had unwittingly become the savior of the mythical supreme cultivator - the Xiao Monarch!

Of course, neither the savior nor the one who was saved had any idea about it yet!

Chapter 50: The Nine Spaces; Sorry, I Touched You

When Ye Xiao had completely recovered, the first thing he did was to get back into his mind and check out the Space in order to find out what had happened!

The day when he had been forcibly ejected from the space, he had truly felt that the space was about to be destroyed. The worst possible outcome now would be if the space really collapsed. That would have been an absolutely fatal strike for Ye Xiao!

At this moment, he truly didn't care about his whereabouts. He was simply glad to be alive!

He entered the space and was instantly stunned with what he saw!

[Is this... Is this the Space which I had known?]

It was not destruction which had taken place; it was reconstruction!

Well, it might be a bit too much to describe it as reconstruction. There weren't many changes in the minor details. However, the entire place had been separated into nine parts!

The egg was placed at the core of the space!

The front, the back, the left, the right, the top... the nine parts were located in nine different locations, and each of them could be identified with nine different colors: nine different spaces!

The first space was on top with the Cosmic Hades inside, continually emitting the blue gelid qi. This space was obviously not filled - not even one percent of it had been occupied.

There was an ivory space below which contained the Heavenly Crystal Marrow. Likewise, it was barely filled.

There was a space on the left containing precious plants. The plants were producing a cyan coloured-qi. Naturally, it was also far from being completely filled...

There was another space containing the Sky Crystal Sand. It was quite empty at the moment, but it was certainly not as empty as the remaining five spaces, because the other five spaces were completely barren.

'The world of nine elements'!

These words unexpectedly popped up in Ye Xiao's mind as he looked around the nine spaces.

Within each space, distinct words could be found hovering in the air.

'Sky Space'

'Earth Space'

'Gold Space'

'Wood Space'

'Flame Space'

'Water Space'

'Soul Space'

'Yang Space'

'Yin Space'

The Nine Spaces!

The Cosmic Hades was in the Sky Space; the Heavenly Crystal Marrow was in the Soul Space; the Tree of Cultivating Tea and the other plants were in the Wood Space; the Sky Crystal Sand was in the Gold Space!

The rest were all empty. Apparently, Ye Xiao was yet to collect anything that had attributes corresponding to those Spaces.

The next moment, sixteen words appeared from the void and spun extremely fast, flying past Ye Xiao's eyes. They turned into purple clouds and then into purple qi before finally entering into the Spaces.

To assemble the nine elements; to reverse the world. The nine return to their origin; the ruler of the firmament!

He didn't need any explanation. Ye Xiao knew exactly what it meant.

To fully utilize the Spaces, Ye Xiao needed to collect all the nine kinds of elemental qi. Only then could he open and enter the gate which led to ultimate strength.

If he completely filled the Nine Spaces with the nine different types of elemental qi, he would become the ruler of the firmament!

Looking at the items in the Spaces, he felt like they were just a drop in the ocean. Ye Xiao felt like weeping but had no tears, [These Spaces are going to play me till death. Where the hell can I acquire this amount of treasures? I am afraid that even filling the Spaces with the entire Qing-Yun Realm may not be enough to make 'the nine return to their origin'...]

Meanwhile, he heard faint voices from his surroundings.

Ye Xiao felt like crying and drew back his mind from the Space...

[That is quite a strike. So many Spaces and every one of them is massive... What am I going to do with them. How long will it take for me to fill it?]

And then he heard a voice of a girl sounding outside, "He must have made it through the pain successfully... This guy is really tough. For a whole day... he didn't actually break down... He actually got through it..."

"Such power of will is truly worth admiring..."

"I wonder who on earth did this..."

"Yes. Such a method is really unscrupulous and cruel..."

"Hmm. Bring some water and feed him. We can't let him die. If he really dies of dehydration, that is going to be a big joke."

"Yes."

And then he heard a girl stand up and leave to fetch some water.

Ye Xiao understood a lot from this short conversation.

[First of all, I am not in my own house; second, the two women think that I was attacked... Third, my true status hasn't been revealed yet; fourth, this girl may have saved me, but she doesn't seem to have good intentions as my Jing and Mai are blocked...

Therefore, I can only conclude that I am a captive here?]

He felt relieved at the same time. The mutation before was really scary, and he was totally defenseless at that time. Let alone martial cultivators, even an ordinary person could have easily killed him. No matter what the girl's intention was, she had still saved his life after all. He would have to repay this debt anyway.

He had disguised himself and turned into Feng Zhiling. Now, if he wanted to take off the disguise, he needed to perform his martial arts again.

In fact, if no one had paid attention to him or done anything to him while he was in a coma, his body would have automatically performed the arts in order to regain his true appearance.

If so, his secret and status would have been exposed.

However, someone had shown up and blocked his Jing and Mai, and this caused his secret disguise to be maintained.

Unfortunately, this resulted in the pain that Ye Xiao suffered to become several times stronger. However, compared to his body exploding, his status and secret...

It didn't matter at all.

Ye Xiao groaned and woke up "slowly". He opened his eyes with "difficulty" and looked around.

He saw a girl in cyan walkover and ask him in a soothing tone, "Are you awake?"

Ye Xiao looked at her and found that his savior was actually the girl who had bid against him for the Regeneration Ink Lotus, so he felt relaxed. He spoke "faintly", "Lady... It is you... Where... Where am I? Did you save me?"

The girl in cyan smiled softly and said, "A simple gesture. Nothing to speak of. Brother Feng, you don't need to take it to heart."

Ye Xiao acted like he was extremely thrilled, he blushed and reached out his hands to hold the hands of the girl in cyan. He gratefully said, "Lady... You saved my life. What you have done is equivalent to giving me a rebirth. I will always remember your kindness..."

Things happened so quickly that the girl didn't have time to react. She didn't expect a dying patient could reach out his hands so fast. She only felt that her hands had fallen into his warm palms.

The pretty hands of hers, which had never been touched by any man, were actually held firmly by this guy!

A blush immediately appeared on her face and feelings of anger surged in her heart. She wanted to draw her hands back. She spoke with a constrained smile, "Brother Feng, you are too kind. It really

means nothing..."

Ye Xiao kept holding her soft hands and didn't let go. He spoke with a sigh, "Lady, you are kind-hearted and have saved me from danger. And yet you don't claim the credit. You really have a strong sense of integrity. But I am not the kind of person to treat such kindness with ingratitude, am I?"

He held her hands even more strongly and said, "You are such a kind person. You are ladylike and soft, brave and gentle. You are noble, and you spread joy to the whole world..."

The girl tried to withdraw her hands again, but failed. She was hearing every complimentary word from his mouth. She couldn't be mad, and she didn't dare to act too recklessly. She was afraid that she would hurt him again as he had just recovered from a serious condition. If so, her efforts to save him would be in vain...

She found it both funny and annoying as she said, "Brother Feng, could you please let go of my hands first? I... I am not used to..."

"Oh, oh, oh..." Ye Xiao instantly let go of her hands, "Oh. I am being rude... Sorry. Sorry..."

He rubbed his fingers, and he could still feel the lingering presence of her soft hands in his palms. What a wonderful feeling...

However, there was something wrong - seriously wrong.

Ye Xiao had obviously felt that this girl was a cultivator, and her strength was powerful. He felt that she was making a showy display of her ability.

She had been disguising herself in order to show people that she was weak.

In fact, in the Land of Han-Yang, there were not many people that could see through her disguise. However, Ye Xiao could. How could a simple trick like this escape his attention. He had once been the Xiao Monarch who had ruled the Qing-Yun Realm!

The sense of her strength was faint, but it was real. Even if she had covered it very well, Ye Xiao could still feel it.

Such strength wouldn't exist if she wasn't a cultivator who focused on swords.

However, Ye Xiao had pretended to be a lecher so as to hold and touch her hands, but he didn't find any trace of sword play!

There wasn't even any trace of martial arts!

That was weird. It was totally against common sense.

No matter how much she took care of her skin, or how many times her body was abluted, it wouldn't change the fact that

whoever cultivated with swords, or any martial arts for that matter, would have traces of this martial art on his or her hands. These traces were not noticeable to ordinary people, but they were quite obvious to cultivators, especially to expert cultivators.

But this girl didn't have any trace of cultivation at all!

At that moment, although he hadn't touched her hands for long, the girl had asked him to let go, so he had to let go.

When Ye Xiao withdrew his hands, he felt embarrassed.

He was the Xiao Monarch, not some lecherous guy. After being admonished by a girl, even if he had a thick hide, he couldn't stop the blush creeping up his neck. He felt really awkward.

After all, the hands of a young lady... were not something a man should casually hold, so he apologized in a low voice, "Well, uh... Sorry... that I touched your... um... your hands... for that long..."

Chapter 51: How To Escape Wenren Chuchu

As the Xiao Monarch was unable to touch women because of the special martial arts he had cultivated, his EQ was nearly zero!

What he had just said was totally pinheaded. Anyone would wonder if he was lacking a brain or if his brain had become totally mushy.

So was it playing, teasing or just bald-faced flirting? — Of course, Ye Xiao himself didn't even realize this.

The girl in cyan had pretended to be unflappable at the beginning. She had decided to bear with his 'hand-holding' and remain oblivious to it. But now that Ye Xiao had brought attention to the situation, her whole body began to heat up. Her eyes widened; she felt ashamed as well as resentful. She was about to lash out at him while glaring at him.

No matter if it was intentional or not, what he had just said was too over the top!

Ye Xiao knew that things had immediately gone wrong and realized that he had just said something stupid, so he groaned, tilted his head and "passed out" again...

Although his EQ was really low, his IQ was quite high; he clearly knew how to use the current situation to seize the initiative.

It wasn't the decent thing to do, but it worked!

The girl in cyan was about to get mad, but she saw him faint again. She knew he was pretending, but she still found it funny in spite of being annoyed!

[Fine. Fair enough. It can at least clear up the embarrassment at the moment!]

She humphed and stood up, grabbed the bowl of water and shouted angrily, "Get up and drink."

Ye Xiao kept pretending to be unconscious to avoid the embarrassment.

The girl started to become angry. [You took advantage of me, and now you're actually playing dead. You can absolutely move now. Do you want me to feed you myself?]

- Splash!- The water was dumped onto his face...

The Xiao Monarch was stunned. It looked like he could no longer pretend...

...

"Brother Feng, who did this to you, who used such a despicable torture method on you?" The girl held a cup of tea in her hand and

smiled gently.

She had taken off the silk veil that had covered her, revealing an ordinary face.

Ye Xiao said faintly, “Before I start to talk, could you please unblock my Jing and Mai? I could recover faster...”

The girl smiled softly and said, “What are you talking about Brother Feng? You are an expert cultivator. If I set you free, it would be like letting the dragon return to the sea, and the tiger roar in the jungle. I am an infirm girl. That would be a disaster for me, wouldn’t it?”

Ye Xiao sighed and said, “You only need these two guards of yours to flick their fingers to fight against me... What are you worrying for? There is truly no need!”

“Well, it is better to be cautious while living in the mortal world. Cautiousness guarantees years of sailing for the ship.” The girl smiled sweetly.

No matter how hard Ye Xiao tried to convince her with a flow of eloquence, she wouldn’t unblock his Jing and Mai.

[This girl looks soft and sweet, but she is very stubborn inside. She won’t easily change her mind on what she believes to be right.]
Ye Xiao came to a conclusion regarding the girl.

“Gosh. I really did not engage with women a lot in my former life. I really don’t understand how girls think. She has saved my life. Is it really necessary to take precautions against me like this? Do they think I am some kind of ungrateful rat...” Ye Xiao was upset and depressed.

“Brother Feng, you haven’t talked about why you left the auction in a hurry and how you encountered such a thing...” The girl smiled favorably. She casually wiped her hands with a silk handkerchief.

It seemed that she still minded the fact that her hands were “touched by a man”.

“It was my bad luck.” Ye Xiao showed emotions on the face and sighed, “At the auction, I purchased a lot of items, and I was going to go back home early for dan-making... Besides, I had too much money with me, so I didn’t leave with you guys... I didn’t expect that a masked man dressed in white would appear in front of me when I turned the corner to go into an alley...”

“A masked man in white?” The girl in cyan frowned, “If he was planning to rob you, why did he dress in white? If he was in white, he must not be afraid of exposing himself, but then why did he mask himself? That is very odd.”

“Who knows. The man in white...” Ye Xiao kept bragging while he was thinking, [This girl is really scrupulous.] The expression on his face was sincere though, “The man in white just swung his hand and then a stream of blue light quickly flew into my face... I couldn’t defend against it. It was too powerful...”

“Blue light?” The girl in cyan focused on these words and asked perceptively, “What kind of blue light?”

Ye Xiao was stunned, “Urh? What?”

The girl spoke blandly, “What kind of blue was it. Was it an acid blue? Or sky blue? Or sea blue? Or was it light blue?”

Ye Xiao was thinking; he acted like he was deep in thought, trying to recall the events, “It should be sky blue...”

His voice contained a strong sense of uncertainty.

The girl exchange glances with the two men and murmured, “Sky blue... It is... The middle levels of the Sky Origin Stage?”

The men were quiet like two puppets.

Ye Xiao understood that the color blue implied the top-grade expert cultivators in the Land of Han-Yang. However, there were still nine levels in this grade.

Light blue was the color of the initial-levels, level 1 and level 2; Sky blue was the color of the middle-levels, level 3 and level 4e; Acid blue was the color of the high-levels, level 5 and level 6; Sea blue was the color of the peak-levels that people commonly described as the Grandmaster levels of the Sky Origin Stage.

If it was purple blue, that meant the cultivator has reached a higher cultivation realm than most expert cultivators and has reached the class of ultimate masters of the world... Whoever reached this class wasn't far from being able to ascend to the Qing-Yun Realm.

However, supreme masters in this world that had reached this level and were capable of flight were very few. There were some, but certainly not many.

Expert cultivators with sky blue qi were among the top-class cultivators in the martial world. They were absolutely not normal.

The girl in cyan suddenly frowned, "Brother Feng... If the robber is such an expert cultivator, he can't be some nameless person. Could it be that you have crossed paths with him before?"

Ye Xiao looked innocent and waved his head as he spoke, "I am doing quite well in dan-making business apparently. I usually concentrate on this and haven't gotten involved in the martial world. If I wasn't running out of money, I wouldn't have taken out the supreme dan beads for the auction. How could I possibly piss off such an expert cultivator?"

"That's weird..." The girl was lost in her thoughts as a frown appeared on her face. She was obviously trying to find a clue from what he had described.

The girl didn't doubt Ye Xiao's words. In fact, if someone was not

extremely talented and had no perseverance in the art of dan-making, they wouldn't be able to make such world-class supreme dan beads.

Because of that, her way of thinking would not lead her to discover the truth.

Ye Xiao was gulping down water at the moment as he felt really thirsty.

He had been sweating for such a long time, and it was lucky that he didn't die from dehydration. Now that he had the time and opportunity, he naturally had to replenish some water.

"What happened next?" The girl continued with her investigation.

"Hmm. And then the... items I had with me were taken..." Ye Xiao sighed and gestured to his body, "And now I feel like I have been punched by ten thousand strong men at the same time. In fact, I am exhausted just by sitting here and talking to you."

The girl smiled politely, "It is indeed not easy."

Ye Xiao asked, "Do you mind if I ask for your name? You saved me today and I will repay you someday."

The girl thought for a while and said, "It was a simple favor. That's all. It is not worth mentioning. My family name is Wenren.

Brother Feng, you can call me Lady Chuchu.”

“[Chuchu...](#)” Ye Xiao praised, “Beautiful name! She who is delicate and touching is certainly a beauty.”

A gleam of anger appeared on Wenren Chuchu’s face, “What kind of person are you? I told you to call me Lady Chuchu... Who told you to call me Chuchu!”

She casually put the handkerchief away and didn’t touch it again. She smiled softly, “By the way, did you just say... that you were taking those items home to make dan beads?”

Ye Xiao kept his head raised, “Yes.”

“But what I have been told is... those supreme dan beads that you auctioned were not made by yourself, right?” Wenren Chuchu cunningly said with her eyes half-closed.

“That is a rumor. In fact, I am the unique supreme dan-maker in this land. Only I can make the supreme dan beads; no one else can.” Ye Xiao hurriedly tried to justify himself.

However, this declaration made it sound like a cover-up.

“Heh, heh...” Wenren Chuchu meaningfully smiled, like she had already asked all the questions on her mind. She raised her cup and said, “Please. Brother Feng, drink.”

Ye Xiao glanced at the handkerchief that was put aside by Wenren Chuchu. She had only used it once to wipe her hands. It was still clean and new, but it had already been discarded like a worn out pair of shoes.

He made an observation about the girl, [This girl is neat freak.]

Ye Xiao put down the cup and pretended that he was too weak to hold it. The cup fell down and rolled over to the girl. Wenren Chuchu quickly reached out her hand to grab it...

Ye Xiao acted fast to grab the cup first and took it back. He then spoke embarrassedly, "Please forgive me, Lady Chuchu. I don't like people to touch the things I am using..."

"Are you a neat freak?" Wenren Chuchu raised her head and looked at him for the first time since the conversation started.

Ye Xiao hadn't noticed until now that her eyes were clear blue, like the ocean and the sky, an endless starry sky; they were shockingly beautiful! Her eyelashes were long like two delicate tiny fans, filled with absolute sense of beauty!

"If this girl took off her disguise and revealed her true face, she would be even more beautiful than Su Yeyue, I guess." Somehow, Ye Xiao had such an image in mind.

Rubbing his nose, Ye Xiao smiled bitterly, "Yes, I am. I am

apparently not in my own place, but I still cannot overcome my habit. Gosh. I am sorry.”

Wenren Chuchu frowned and breathed a sigh of relief. Then she looked at the handkerchief that she had put aside and frowned again.

She looked back at Ye Xiao with a sense of terror in her eyes.

Ye Xiao lowered his head and drank his water. He had no idea what mistake he had committed this time.

...

[Chuchu, which is 楚楚 in Chinese. It is a part of the idiom ‘楚楚动人’, which means delicate and touching and is mostly used to describe girls.]

Chapter 52: The Art of Escape and the Regeneration Ink Lotus

The East-rising Purple Qi was about to resume its circulation. But what if, at this crucial moment, the girl picked up on his plan? If she noticed and then set a few more restrictions on him, then he would truly be finished. He would have wasted all the efforts he had put in previously, and the day he could escape his plight would move far into the distant future.

In fact, Ye Xiao had already begun to calculate his means of escape from the moment he had woken up.

But till now, he was still not given even half a chance to do so. Even though the East-rising Purple Qi's magical abilities were miraculous, unpredictable and could still circulate slowly when Ye Xiao's cultivation was limited, his current level of cultivation was still too weak. It would take him quite a long time to break through the restriction.

This girl, Wenren Chuchu, looked gentle and weak, and her voice was soft and delicate. But throughout their whole interaction till now, she had not given Ye Xiao a single opportunity to escape.

"Brother Feng, do you really possess mysophobia?" Wenren Chuchu's tone was still as soft as it had always been, but the forbidding quality in her voice was now clear as day.

Ye Xiao smiled blandly, "Is it really important right now whether I am mysophobic? The most important thing is that I'm already

under your control. Moreover, you have no intention of letting me go. In simpler terms, you have already made up your mind since the moment you saved me."

Wenren Chuchu smiled sweetly, "Brother Feng, you said it yourself that the supreme dan beads you refined are unique in the Land of Han-Yang, far surpassing the rest. How can I miss the opportunity to learn more about someone as awe-inspiring as you? So I thought that I should invite you to the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. Only, for this journey, depending on whether you come along comfortably or under compulsion, the process will be very different."

Ye Xiao laughed, "Lady Chuchu, are you threatening me? You do know how I got through the last day, do you not?"

Wenren Chuchu was startled when she heard that.

[That is true. This guy is short and ordinary-looking, but he is a sturdy man with bones of steel.

Previously, even when he was suffering from such intense pain, he didn't even make a sound. He is clearly not the right opponent for physical threats to be effective on.]

"You're right. But no matter what, Brother Feng's journey to the Kingdom of Lan-Feng... is destined to be unavoidable." Wenren Chuchu smiled sweetly and said, "Brother Feng's cultivation is superior. To avoid any unpleasant accidents, how about I give your body two additional finger pokes?"

Ye Xiao sighed, [As expected, she has seen through my plan to stall for time.]

He smiled bitterly, "Can I say... no?"

"Of course you can. But I will still give you a few finger pokes." Wenren Chuchu laughed. Her hands moved as fast as wind. - Pah! Pah! Pah! - She stabbed Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai with her fingers three more times.

The spiritual qi that he had started gathering just now had been disrupted once again. His Jing and Mai were heavily blocked, causing all of his previous efforts to be wasted.

Ye Xiao sighed and said, "This is your territory. As expected, my words have no power here. Right, about the Regeneration Ink Lotus... Lady Wenren, you have spent a fortune to get it, but are you sure you know how it should be used? Well, everyone has their own specializations..."

She replied apathetically, "That... even if I use it wrongly and waste it, I would rather throw it away than come to beg Brother Feng for help. Brother Feng, you can relax. There is no need for you to worry about this."

Another escape route was blocked.

But, Ye Xiao was not discouraged at all. He smiled and said, "If

you gain an object without gaining knowledge on how to use it, then you will have completely wasted it. If you really use this lotus incorrectly and throw it away, it would be such a pity. Lady Wenren, you have sacrificed so much for this lotus so that you can save someone's life with it. But sometimes, if you use medicine improperly, it can turn deadly instead..."

Wenren Chuchu humphed when she heard that. It seemed like she was dismissive of his words.

Ye Xiao ignored her disdain and continued, "But speaking of the main purpose of the Regeneration Ink Lotus, it is not to simply heal wounds... but to save lives."

Wenren Chuchu's smile was sweet as she scoffed, "Is that so? Brother Feng's knowledge is truly vast. You know every detail about the efficacies of spirit medicine."

"Please Lady Chuchu, I am flattered!" Ye Xiao smiled blandly, "I wonder, this item that you have spent so much money on, is it really for saving your father's life?"

"Naturally. My father is fatally ill. Other than the Regeneration Ink Lotus, there are no other materials that can save him!" She spoke gravely.

Ye Xiao chuckled, "Heh, heh. Lady Chuchu's filial piety is admirable. It is a pity that I don't believe you..."

Wenren Chuchu was nonplussed, "You don't believe it. What exactly do you not believe?"

"I don't believe that you bought the Regeneration Ink Lotus to save your father's life. Because although the main purpose of the Regeneration Ink Lotus is indeed to return souls and revive lives, it can only save women; it cannot save the life of a man... So, Lady Chuchu, when you said that you wanted the item to save your father's life at the auction, I didn't believe you at all. But I wonder, with regards to what I have said, does Lady Chuchu believe me or not?!"

Wenren Chuchu was still smiling, but her smile had already stiffened. The corner of her lips twitched as she coldly said, "From ancient times till now, it has been said that the Regeneration Ink Lotus is mystical medicine from the heavens with miraculous effects. So why is it that from Master Feng's mouth, I hear so many misgivings?"

Ye Xiao picked up the teacup and drank. He said, "It is a saying from the ancient times indeed. But I think that there has been no one in this Land of Han-Yang who has actually used it to save lives before... As far as I know, although it is a well-known as death-defying medicine, all those who have ever taken it have eventually died..."

Wenren Chuchu's face finally stiffened.

Ye Xiao pretended to not see her reaction and continued, "Even though the diseases were initially cured after the lotus was used... but years later, all of them died suddenly due to inexplicable

reasons. There has been no exception..."

Wenren Chuchu's eyes were twinkling and she didn't speak.

"The reason is simple... The Regeneration Ink Lotus is something with an extremely cold attribute. Although it can cure every disease like a work of a god, the frigid energy of the lotus will remain within the patient's body. The effects are invisible but continuous. Eventually, the patient dies. There is no one in the Land of Han-Yang whose body can possibly survive such extreme effects. So in the end, all those who took the Regeneration Ink Lotus died with their veins frozen!" Ye Xiao stared into Wenren Chuchu's eyes and spoke slowly.

"What an excellent speech." Wenren Chuchu's poker face remained as she clapped her hands, "Now, I am finally starting to believe that you are indeed a supreme dan-maker."

"However, it seems that Lady Wenren does not feel anxious even after hearing my excellent speech..." Ye Xiao said blandly, "So... this lady must be confident that the patient can surely defuse this power of cold... But there is absolutely nobody in this Land of Han-Yang who has the ability to do so. So, this person that you want to save, let me guess -- could it be that this person is from... above the sky?"

His words were like a thunderous blow to her. Her body suddenly turned rigid. Turning her head, she stared at him with a dark expression. Then, a sinister smile appeared on her face as a trace of killing intent was revealed in her gaze.

"If the person is from above the sky... then my deduction is quite reasonable." Ye Xiao acted as if nothing was out of the ordinary and went on speaking with fervor, "However, if my deduction is true, then Lady Chuchu, you indeed intend to save someone's life. But that person is absolutely not your father or your mother... It must be a woman though."

"Why do you say that?" Wenren Chuchu's slender fingers had already started to turn pale.

"Because even if the person is from above the sky, the ones who are able to make maximum use of this lotus have one thing in common - they are women." Ye Xiao chuckled, "Moreover, if she wants to cure the disease in her body with this Regeneration Ink Lotus, there is still another condition which remains to be fulfilled."

Ye Xiao enunciated each word clearly, "That woman has to be a virgin! Women's natural attribute is Yin, so they can certainly partially disperse the cold. Even so, the risk still remains. When the frigid energy finally explodes, the consequences could be lethal. Only virgins who possess Yuan Yin bodies are able to disperse the cold energy to the maximum extent!"

"But then, how could a virgin possibly bear children? She can't. So she is naturally not your mother. If it's neither your father nor your mother, then who else is there for whom you'd be willing to put so much effort into healing? This person's identity is almost about to be revealed."

Wenren Chuchu clenched her small hands into fists before immediately loosening them. Her chest rose and fell once, before she spoke indifferently, "Go on."

Ye Xiao had utter confidence that the answer in his heart was correct.

He said blandly, "This woman be must at least an expert cultivator..."

"If she isn't, she can't have such profound knowledge, let alone foster such a brilliant heir like you..." Ye Xiao's narrowed his eyes. Under this woman's watchful gaze, he could do nothing to escape. As such, Ye Xiao could only rely on his profound insight so as to make a most shocking conclusion which was also closest to the truth.

Before this day, the Xiao Monarch had never thought in either of his lives that he would fall under a girl's control. On top of this, he was being restrained tightly by his opponent and had no means of escape.

When the word "heir" was spoken, Wenren Chuchu's body once again turned rigid. She bit her rosy lips with her white teeth, and the coldness in her eyes became deeper.

"And I also know that even if you feed her the lotus and temporarily bring her disease under control, the woman you are trying to save can at most live for another ten years before she breathes her last... After the ten years, she will definitely perish,

that is unless you find a Regeneration Jade Lotus which has medicinal quality that even surpasses the Regeneration Ink Lotus. Only if you find the Regeneration Jade Lotus can you... extend her lifespan by five hundred years. After that, when the five hundred years have passed... you will need the even higher-classed Renascence Jade Lotus to heal her again and completely solve her life-and-death crisis!

"Otherwise, even if she reaches a much higher level in cultivation, as long as she does not consume that Renascence Jade Lotus, she cannot avoid her fate, which is to die after all her veins freeze completely.

"As far as I'm concerned, everyone, man or woman, supreme master or not, who takes the Regeneration Ink Lotus will die if the last step is not accomplished. There are no exceptions. The only thing that can save her is the Renascence Jade Lotus."

"Well to be honest, although the Regeneration Ink Lotus is rare, it is possible to find one if you search hard enough. At least you already have one. As for the Regeneration Jade Lotus... I'm afraid that there only exist a few in the entire mortal realm."

Ye Xiao said nonchalantly, "Even if you are lucky enough to find the Regeneration Jade Lotus, then... where are you going to find the Renascence Jade Lotus? As far as I know... from ancient times till now, among the whole heavens and earth, there has only been... one!"

The expression on Wenren Chuchu's face instantly changed .

...

Chapter 53: I Can Cure It. Beg me!

"By the way, I wonder if Lady Chuchu knows that there is a restriction regarding the usage of the Renaissance Jade Lotus? That is, the Renaissance Jade Lotus is only effective on a virgin's body..."

Ye Xiao's lips curled into a mischievous smile and said, "What a shame. For a woman to cultivate to the extent that she is able to use the Renaissance Jade Lotus... the most conservative estimate for someone to reach that level is three thousand years... And if she is still a virgin by then... I don't know if she is lucky or miserable... Haha, haha..."

Wenren Chuchu could tolerate no more. She jumped up and grabbed Ye Xiao's clothes and actually lifted his whole body up to drag him close to her face. She gnashed her teeth and threatened with a low voice, "You dare to laugh! Laugh one more time and I'll show you the consequences!"

Killing intent had filled her eyes as she was embarrassed to the point of rage.

Ye Xiao's whole body was completely powerless as he leaned against her hands. He had difficulty breathing, but he was still laughing loudly, "Hahahahahaha.... Of course I dare to laugh. Why wouldn't I dare? Lady Chuchu, your wrath right now is truly terrifying. Only, do you really dare to kill me?"

Wenren Chuchu glared at him in hatred as different emotions flickered in her eyes. In an instant, her beautiful big eyes were

filled with multiple complicated emotions.

As she breathed heavily, her breasts rose and fell violently, like the rough waves of the ocean. This captivating scene was enough to move anyone's heart.

Ye Xiao, who had been lifted in front of her chest, glanced downwards as he said blandly, "It seems Lady Chuchu should be a gorgeous beauty... Those breasts, they are so fair..."

"Ahh!" With a cry of shock, Wenren Chuchu's hands moved violently as she flung Ye Xiao far away from her. She then scrambled to tidy up her clothes.

Ye Xiao's whole body was instantly tossed over 20 meters away and landed heavily on the floor. He had just recovered from the serious injury, and his cultivation had been blocked. And now, his body was subjected to such a serious fall. His bones cracked as he nearly fainted from the pain. However, he still laughed recklessly, "To be able to see such a youthful sight! Even if I had died from the fall, it would still be worth it. Hahahahaha..."

Wenren Chuchu's neck had turned red from embarrassment. She glared at Ye Xiao, now completely enraged. It wouldn't be a surprise if she decided to tear him apart and devour him.

However, she remained motionless for a long while. Afterwards, she smiled and twirled her long bangs as she spoke demurely, "Brother Feng... You're really such a disgusting person. Just now, my hand almost slipped and killed you..."

If she had been angry, furious, or even if she had rushed over and beaten him to death, he wouldn't feel surprised, much less feel scared. However, when she smiled shyly like this, Ye Xiao felt his hair standing on end. Despite the warmth of the room, he shuddered.

[This girl actually calmed down in such a short time under such a situation. She is absolutely not an ordinary person!]

Just what kind of place was this Land of Han-Yang? Why were there extraordinary girls popping up everywhere? First there was that Xiu-Er who was fearfully shrewd. Now there was this Wenren Chuchu who was calm and intelligent, and her wits was even frighteningly sharp. Even though the Xiao Monarch possessed a vast sea of knowledge, he had neither heard of nor seen such amazing women!

"Is that so?" Ye Xiao patted the dust off his clothes and stood up quietly. He was limping as though he had been worn ragged, but he was still filled with a sense of ease. He smiled peacefully and said, "It is a pity that you dare not to kill me."

Wenren Chuchu looked at him with a complicated expression and said, "Who are you? Who the hell are you?"

"I am a dan-maker. A dan-maker is supposed to know more than you do, especially in the field of medicine." Ye Xiao answered apathetically, "And this field, is coincidentally where your request falls into. So you really don't dare to kill me."

Wenren Chuchu had been convinced that her poise and demeanor were at least among the pinnacle of the Land of Han-Yang. However, she had already acted inelegantly several times because of the anger caused by Feng Zhiling's actions.

And she couldn't do anything about it.

What did it feel like to be unable to take action against a helpless and restrained prisoner?

It would be hard to describe. But it must be a feeling which combined extreme disgust and depression!

"What do you mean?" Wenren Chuchu exhaled deeply and smiled gently again.

"First of all, remove my restraints. I feel really uncomfortable when my body is restrained." Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "I need to operate my martial arts to recover as soon as possible."

He didn't wait for Wenren Chuchu to speak and continued to say, "Oh right. I think there is a high probability that I can help the person you are trying to save defuse the ten years crisis with or without the Regeneration Ink Lotus..."

Wenren Chuchu's eyes lit up and she bit her lips, "Is that for real? Ten years... What about ten years later?"

"Heh, heh. That will depend on my mood." Ye Xiao shrugged his shoulders and said, "I believe you are also aware that the Regeneration Ink Lotus you're holding is already turning grey. That is to say, this lotus is about to become a Regeneration Jade Lotus..."

"However, although this evolution is rather fast, it still requires at least one to two hundred years, and you only have ten years before you need it. If this lotus doesn't turn into a Regeneration Jade Lotus in ten years time... The person you are taking care of now will only have a single path - death."

"In other words, even if I were to help you get through the ten-year crisis without the Regeneration Ink Lotus, you will still face the same situation in ten years time, because you have no means to turn this Regeneration Ink Lotus into a Regeneration Jade Lotus in ten years."

Ye Xiao extended a finger and said, "I have to say that you are most fortunate, because I can solve the problem!"

"You can? You can make the lotus complete its evolution earlier?" Wenren Chuchu instantly raised her head and stared at Ye Xiao with shining eyes.

"But if I continue to be restrained like this, how can I be in high spirits? Even if I know the method, I might not be able to recall it right now."

Ye Xiao humphed and lifted his head proudly, an expression

saying "I am absolutely blackmailing you" appeared on his face.

[I can cure it, but since you treat me this way, I won't. Beg me!]

Wenren Chuchu could hardly control her hatred to the extent that the roots of her teeth were itching.

Ye Xiao smiled infuriatingly as he raised his cup, "This tea is really not bad. You should drink more, Lady Chuchu."

Wenren Chuchu bit her lower lip as she stared at him. Suddenly, she smiled sweetly and said softly, "Brother Feng, no matter what, it was I who saved your life this time. I have also been nursing you with water and medicine for the past few days. Will you deny this favor from me, Brother Feng?"

Ye Xiao didn't buy it at all and said, "I do not agree with what you just said, Lady Chuchu. Why is it that I hear an intent of 'forcing me to repay your favor' in your voice? Besides, what do you mean by telling me that you saved my life? That guy never had any intention of killing me. If he did, with his spectacular strength, I wouldn't be able to resist at all. I would have already died eight hundred times."

"And there's more," Ye Xiao took a breath, "If someone else had found me, that person may have treated me as an honored guest. Not everybody treats the dan-maker capable of refining supreme dans so contemptuously. You've only fed me water and medicine. What kind of service is this anyway? That would be the very least of what other people would do. Even if they don't treat me like a

forefather, they would never block my Jing and Mai and keep me as a prisoner in such an uncourteous way."

"Treat you like a forefather?" Wenren Chuchu looked at his face which could barely be considered righteous but still ordinary; she felt a strong urge to spit on it.

[I saved you but you don't feel grateful. That's still fine. Now you actually want to be treated like a forefather. What kind of person are you? Do you even have a sense of shame?]

The sweet smile on Wenren Chuchu's face was becoming increasingly strained. She said, "Brother Feng, could you please tell me your solution first? If it really works, I swear that I will free you at once and apologize to you in earnest. And I will never restrict your freedom again."

"You sure?" Ye Xiao looked at her with narrowed eyes.

"I promise!" Wenren Chuchu spoke seriously.

"But I don't trust you." Ye Xiao coughed and said leisurely.

"YOU!" Wenren Chuchu's almond-shaped eyes opened widely.

"Only women and small-minded men are hard to get along with. I am not sure if you are small-minded, but I am pretty sure you are a woman!" Ye Xiao was completely at ease as he continued, "And you don't even meet me with your true face. Tell me, even if you break

your promise, what can I do about it?"

"There is a chance that once you get the prescription from me, you'll just kill me and bury me instantly. And then you'll start to make a fortune with my prescription..." Ye Xiao waved his head, "The hearts of people in the martial world are dark and sinister. I have to guard myself. No matter what, I must guarantee myself a path of retreat."

Wenren Chuchu's chest started to rise and fall again because of anger. She looked at Feng Zhiling with her wide-opened eyes that were filled with fury, no longer able to maintain her elegant demeanor and sweet smile. She shouted angrily, "How can I be compared to an ordinary woman! I am Lan-Feng Kingdom's..."

She suddenly stopped at the middle of her speech, knowing that she would expose herself if she completed her sentence. Her fury was even greater than before as she said viciously, "How do I gain your trust?"

"Never mind. A dignified man like me cannot be bothered to concern myself with the fussy behavior of a little girl. I'll accept that you served me to a certain extent, so I will tell you my prescription in return." Ye Xiao became generous. "Only I am able to proceed with my prescription anyway. You can't learn it even after you know what it is."

"You... You..." Wenren Chuchu was extremely speechless.

As she looked at this Feng Zhi-Ling in front of her, she could only

feel a sullen rage stuck in her throat that she could neither swallow nor spit out. She wished to stuff a dirty pair of socks that had been worn continuously for hundreds of years without being washed in his loathsome mouth.

"Since you don't worry about telling me, what was the point of saying those words? To piss me off intentionally? Besides, what do you mean I did serve you to a certain extent? Could you even be any more cheeky?! You behave like that, yet you dare to call yourself a man? Contemptible, impudent, indelicate and paltry - those are words that fit you!"

"According to my estimations..." Ye Xiao looked at Wenren Chuchu's expression and said, "The person you are trying to save must have encountered this crisis because of a special martial arts that she has been cultivating... That martial arts has been passed from generation to generation for a long time, and it is fundamentally defective... The Regeneration Ink Lotus, the Regeneration Jade Lotus and the Renaissance Jade Lotus happen to be the materials that can fix the defects..."

"Although this martial arts is defective, it is extremely powerful and easy to upgrade. Even a beginner can have the potential to dominate a certain realm..." Ye Xiao looked at Wenren Chuchu whose face was turning darker and darker. He spoke slowly, "It seems you do know that I am not talking about the Land of Han-Yang..."

...

Chapter 54: Are You A Man?

Wenren Chuchu spoke coldly, "How could the Land of Han-Yang deserve such a marvelous martial art!"

Ye Xiao indifferently replied, "If the technique Lady Chuchu is cultivating is unluckily the same one as the person that you are trying to save, then you will face the same problem yourself in the future..."

The Xiao Monarch suddenly started to thoroughly inspect her body from head to toe.

Wenren Chuchu felt her hair stand on end, as though his eyes had unscrupulously stripped off all of her clothes. She shouted, completely enraged, "What are you looking at?"

"Looking at your body's... current condition... Hmmm. Lady Chuchu's strength, Jing and Mai, and bones... You're truly a martial arts prodigy rarely seen even in a thousand years. And, the most uncommon thing about you is... that you have a pure Yin female body."

Ye Xiao praised unabashedly, "You're truly a brilliant talent."

Wenren Chuchu was furious with him for his shameless gaze, but she was also shocked at the same time, [He... can actually see through my martial potential and natural endowment!]

"But it is a pity that..." Ye Xiao said, "The better your endowment and the better your talent, the faster your martial art will upgrade during cultivation. When it upgrades faster, it also means that you are dying faster. I really don't know whether I should congratulate you or..."

Wenren Chuchu was completely speechless.

[Does this guy... even know how to talk?]

Wenren Chuchu's expression was frigid as ice. Without even the trace of a smile, she spoke blandly, "Brother Feng, there is only one thing that I want to hear from your mouth... Do you truly have a practical solution or not?"

What she meant was "I am not here to listen to your words about me dying early".

"Why can't you be patient? I am currently explaining the solution to you, am I not? How can I make you understand the solution without explaining the problem clearly? Fine. Let's put it in a simple way. The solution mostly depends on the martial art that I am cultivating." Ye Xiao spoke peacefully, "I am a dan-maker, and the fire I use to make dan is totally different from the others. For that reason, I can make the legendary supreme dan... And my fire, which exists in the dan-makers' myth, is the Purple Sky-fire!"

"The Purple Sky-fire?" Wenren Chuchu frowned, furrowing her pretty eyebrows.

[Does this kind of fire really exist? It's not just a myth, is it?]

Ye Xiao was totally calm even though he had just made up a "myth", and he said, "The Purple Sky-fire is the No.1 sky-fire in the world. It is the progenitor of the dan fire. If I wasn't highly talented and lucky, I wouldn't have found it... In other words, in the world, there is absolutely no other person who has this kind of [dan fire](#)!"

"Are you absolutely certain?" Wenren Chuchu frowned.

"If there is another person who has the same skill as me, Lady Chuchu..." Ye Xiao spoke arrogantly, "I, Feng Zhiling, can make a bet with you now. If there is another person like that, I swear I will spend my entire life making dan for you, at least one batch per month, with at least ten beads per batch, and every one of them will be a supreme dan bead with dan clouds!"

Wenren Chuchu was observing his face. Her eyes flickered, and her expression wavered.

Such a promise could totally make her heart tremble!

Among other things, just the words "every one of them will be a supreme dan bead with dan clouds" could already thrill people to the point where their blood would boil!

It seems that the 'Purple Sky-fire' was truly a mythical fire!

"Since you have already spoken to this extent, how can I not believe it?" Wenren Chuchu said, "Just... can I have a look at your Purple Sky-fire? Seeing is believing. I am sure that you can at least fulfill this small request of mine!"

Ye Xiao said blandly, "Unfortunately, my dan fire is invisible. However, it can be sensed."

"That is the main reason I am so confident." Ye Xiao looked at her calmly, "That martial art I was talking about, I believe you have cultivated it into a certain level. I am afraid that you are going to need the Regeneration Ink Lotus soon... How about this. I will first solve your crisis right here and let you feel it yourself... I will make sure that you won't be needing the Regeneration Ink Lotus once I'm done, and you will only require the Regeneration Jade Lotus when the time comes. You won't doubt it if you experience it yourself, will you?"

Wenren Chuchu took a deep breath, "Really?"

She had the kind of talent which made her a prodigy compared to all her fellow disciples. It was said that her cultivation speed was so high that even the departed founder of her sect couldn't have rivalled it.

However, as Ye Xiao stated, the faster she cultivated, the closer she got to the crisis.

It might take three hundred years for others to reach the level that would cause a crisis to occur, but it might only take her ten

years.

That thought had caused her many sleepless nights in the past.

The Regeneration Ink Lotus wasn't something easy to find.

It was an extremely rare and inaccessible treasure.

Where could she get it?

That was a problem.

She thought that if the man in front of her could truly solve her problem, it would be much better to stay friends with him rather than capture him and force him to become a slave that made dan for her!

"Absolutely! As real as the gold and the silver!"

Ye Xiao felt relieved. He had at least passed through half of the dangerous situation.

Otherwise, with his present condition, as the girl was attentive and decisive, it was absolutely possible that this girl would take him to the Kingdom of Lan-Feng.

If that happened... it would be a real problem for him.

Wenren Chuchu smiled softly again and reached her hand out to poke his body with her finger a few times. Ye Xiao felt relieved as an indistinct power surged into his body. The restriction on his body had finally been removed.

His martial arts returned to its natural condition, and he was finally at ease.

Wenren Chuchu smiled sweetly and performed an elegant bow, "Brother Feng, I apologize for offending you earlier. Please trust me. What I wanted to do at the beginning was to make friends with you. There was no other intention in my mind."

"Of course I trust you." Ye Xiao smiled sincerely - he lied without even blinking his eyes.

At the same time, he was thinking, [If I really trust you, I am the biggest fool in the world!]

...

Wenren Chuchu's temperament became enthusiastic towards Ye Xiao. She ordered her servants to prepare a meal, a grand meal actually, and she even treated him like a forefather indeed.

The pavilion.

The soft wind.

The green willows.

The red flowers.

A man and a woman sat opposite to and looked at each other. A breeze was blowing, causing the white silks surrounding them to flutter.

It was like a graceful scene taken straight out of a poem.

However the only blemish in this otherwise perfect scene was that both of them had unattractive appearances. It was more or less a killjoy...

"Brother Feng, how can this problem be solved? Could you please tell me something about it, so that I can be prepared, at least mentally." Wenren Chuchu raised her cup and said with a smile.

Ye Xiao coughed and said, "There is nothing to prepare really. The process is quite simple. You will only need to relax your whole body and let your power operate by itself. And then I will perform my Purple Sky-fire using my palm and place my hand on your belly where the dantian is located. The negative influence caused by your cultivation of that martial arts will be removed bit by bit after every cycle. Bit by bit, it will be wiped clean..."

He looked at Wenren Chuchu and said, "I think your cultivation

has reached quite a high grade, but it's still not at the Sky Origin Stage yet, right? If so, it will only take 36 cycles to remove the impact that has been accumulating during your cultivation... After this, you can safely continue with your cultivation. There will be no more negative influences during your cultivation until you reach the next key level, wherein you'll need the Regeneration Jade Lotus to get through. My solution is going to have an effect in an instant. You are the one who will be taking it, so you will feel it. There is no way I can fool you about this..."

Ye Xiao kept explaining about the process, but he totally missed the blush on Wenren Chuchu's face. In fact, she was so embarrassed that, let alone her face, even her neck had turned beet red.

Her two small eyes were like agates.

[Relax my whole body? Your hand on my belly?

That... That...]

Wenren Chuchu wanted to kick him to death!

[You actually spat that out like it didn't even matter! But this is about the reputation of a girl! The belly of a girl. Do you think it is something a man can simply just... put his hand on?]

Poor Ye Xiao had been a virgin for two lifetimes. He had never cared about such "minor details", so he kept talking with fervor as

if nothing had happened, "Naturally, if you have already reached the Sky Origin Stage, then the time will be much longer. It will at least take 99 cycles. Besides, I will need to operate the Purple Sky-fire on both of my palms. One of them will be placed over your dantian producing suction, while the other will be placed on your tailbone producing a propelling force. One pulls while the other pushes; my two hands work cooperatively. That will make sure the impact of the coldness inside your body will be completely removed."

"Right. There is another thing that is important. That is you will not be allowed to wear anything. At least, the dantian and the tailbone are absolutely not allowed to be covered. Otherwise, the flow of coldness will be reversed at any moment. Once the coldness starts to reverse, you will instantly die! You are an expert in cultivation. I don't think I need to explain further, right?"

Ye Xiao finally finished his lecture. He raised his head and looked at Wenren Chuchu's face and found that she was already so bashful that her face had turned red; even her neck was red at the moment. She fiercely stared at him, as though she was going to swallow him.

"What's wrong? Is there anything you still don't understand?" Now, Master Feng got confused.

"What's wrong?! You tell me what's wrong?!" Wenren Chuchu finally exploded, "Feng Zhiling! Answer me. Are you a man or not?"

Ye Xiao was stunned and said, "Ah? That... Can't you tell? Do I

need to prove it?"

Wenren Chuchu meant to say was - Are you a man or not? Am I a woman or not? A distinction should be made between males and females, and do you know that?

However, she had just spoken out the first sentence before she felt too ashamed to complete her thoughts, and Feng Zhiling simply countered her question with a question of his own.

He even showed a confused look which showed innocence and surprise.

She suddenly felt like spitting out blood.

...

['dan fire' is the fire that is used to make the dan beads.]

Chapter 55: I Will Do It

"Brother Feng, are you sure that you aren't fooling around?" Wenren Chuchu's eyes were filled with ferocity, and her face was showing an ugly expression.

"What?" Ye Xiao asked in surprise while eating a drumstick. He looked innocent and confused, and his eyes seemed pure.

"You..." Wenren Chuchu nearly spat blood, "Can't you consider... the distance that should be kept between men and women? The solution you were describing... How could you... How could I..."

She was too shy to continue.

Ye Xiao finally understood and said, "Urh... That..."

He took the drumstick out of his mouth at once. Suddenly, he too started to feel embarrassed and didn't know what to do. So he coughed and stuttered, "That... I am so sorry about it... Well... Ahem... I didn't consider it well enough... Forgive me. I'm really... I... I... I have never touched a girl in my whole life... Ahem... so I didn't give enough consideration to this kind of thing... I thought that since you are also a cultivator... maybe... you probably... wouldn't care..."

Ye Xiao was so ashamed that he was babbling incoherently.

This was the first time that, right when the Xiao Monarch was

brimming with confidence and overflowing with eloquence, he encountered such an embarrassment.

He couldn't deny it. Even if he tried his best to deny it, it would only sound like a lame excuse.

Ye Xiao truly didn't consider such an aspect, [I am just helping you with your illness, am I not?]

Other than solving the problem, he didn't take anything else into consideration.

When Wenren Chuchu saw the tough guy, Master Feng, suddenly become so awkward, she couldn't help but laugh. - Pu - She wouldn't have thought that this Master Feng, who looked to be over thirty years old, would actually act like a young boy when facing this matter.

This kind of squirming, this kind of awkward embarrassment, and this kind of shameful helplessness - these were definitely not things that he could fake.

[It seems that this guy is too focused on dan-making and hasn't been in any relationship yet. He really doesn't think much about things between a man and a woman...] Wenren Chuchu didn't know why she came up with such an idea.

[What he just said means he really didn't consider that. Otherwise, he wouldn't be so embarrassed. It seems that I am the

one who has bad thoughts...]

Wenren Chuchu continued her train of thoughts.

[This Feng Zhiling is good at playing tricks, has a thick hide, does well in cultivation, is a supreme dan-maker, has deep thoughts and tough bones. He also knows much about human nature and is well-informed. But why on earth doesn't he understand anything about stuff between men and women?]

Wenren Chuchu was so confused and felt weird.

She suddenly felt that the guy in front of her was filled with contradictions.

"Well. I am sorry... but Lady Wenren, you really should give it a try. After all, it concerns your life and your future accomplishments..." Saying this, Ye Xiao peeked at her face and said, "Please don't worry. I don't have any improper interests in you..."

Ye Xiao meant to say, [I will cure you, and then you let me go. We become friends. I won't think much about you, and you won't need to worry too much about me.]

But he shouldn't have peeked at her face when he was saying that.

Wenren Chuchu was so angry that she had nearly fainted!

[You looked at my face while telling me you have no interest in me?]

"Do you mean to say that I am ugly?! So I'm not attractive to you?" Wenren Chuchu gnashed her teeth and suddenly forgot to feel shy. Her face actually turned green.

"No... No..." Ye Xiao realized that he had said something wrong. He kept waving his hand while babbling incoherently, "No, no, no... I meant that you were ugly... Wait, no... I meant you are not that ugly... No, no, no, Lady Wenren, please let me explain... You know what I meant, don't you... You should know what I meant... Ahhhh! ~~~"

And then there was vegetable soup on the Xiao Monarch's face.

This was because Lady Chuchu was so angry that she had exploded and threw the soup onto his face.

- Tok tok tok... -

While Master Feng was busy wiping the soup off of his face and was about to shout out "what's wrong with you", he only saw an alluring view of her back leaving in a rage!

Every step of hers was making the floor creak loudly!

She must have been furious at that moment!

They had been drinking leisurely, and it had been such a poetic scene, but suddenly, it had completely broken down. The soup was dripping down his face onto his body; on his shoulder, there seemed to be a fish bone. The fine silk behind him was now stained by the soup as it hung limply downwards like a dead fish...

Ye Xiao sat there stunned for a long time, unable to say a word.

He eventually just shook his head and sighed, [Why are you so short-tempered. I told you we're all cultivators. I can't believe you don't even understand that. I'm helping you... I tried to make it clear and you actually treated me like this... Gosh... Whoever is unfortunate enough to marry you in the future must be blind...]

Without a word, he walked back to his room to change his clothes. He wanted to take a bath, but he didn't have such a luxurious service.

[A decent man won't fight against a woman!] Ye Xiao thought, [Let alone that I really don't have a chance to win...]

...

After a while, Wenren Chuchu leisurely walked back in with her hands behind her back. She smiled sweetly and said, "Brother Feng, I apologize for startling you just now."

Ye Xiao sighed and threw up his hands, speaking sincerely, "Sure. Lady Chuchu, if you don't care about your health, or if you don't want to live anymore... you should just treat me as a captive again. You know how stubborn I can be. Don't expect me to cure your illness anymore, let alone remain friends with you..."

"It was my fault." Wenren Chuchu smiled softly, "Brother Feng, you're a generous man. You surely wouldn't care, right?"

Ye Xiao spoke angrily, "How do you know whether I am generous or not? Even I don't even know if I'm a generous man! Do I care? Of course I care!"

Wenren Chuchu was surprised.

[How could this guy be so narrow-minded in front of a girl? What kind of man is he?!]

But after she spoke a few more conciliatory words, Ye Xiao knew that he couldn't push her too far. The advantages that he could get had already been attained. He definitely couldn't piss off this mad woman again...

If this unrestrained girl would lose her temper once again, then it would truly seem that the only route which awaited him would be that of a prisoner.

Wenren Chuchu was upset.

[What do I do?

I don't care about my life. If I will die, so be it... But what should I do for my beloved master who treats me like her own daughter?

The opportunity is right in front of me. I have to take it.

If I don't, how can I know if this guy is lying or not?

If I do it, what about my reputation?]

Being touched on the belly by a man... her entire body had begun burning up just thinking about this!

Even though she was shrewd and decisive, she felt helpless and hesitant.

"Do you mind if I ask about your cultivation level..." Ye Xiao talked first.

It wasn't a good situation if they kept silent at the moment, so Ye Xiao thought that since he was a man, he should talk first.

Wenren Chuchu casually answered, "9th level of the Earth Origin Stage..."

"Ahem!" Ye Xiao coughed and couldn't help sweating.

[What the hell. Such a little girl has actually reached the ninth level of the Earth Origin Stage. It was lucky that I didn't fight against her, otherwise, she could've killed me with a single finger... I am only at the 1st level of the Earth Origin Stage...]

"You're really a genius." Ye Xiao said, "In fact, it's quite simple. If you care about your reputation so much, and if the person you are trying to save isn't that important to you, we can just wait for several years. Another opportunity may arise in the future."

Wenren Chuchu asked, "What do you mean? What opportunity?"

Ye Xiao said, "You are at a high level of cultivation for sure, but there is still quite a distance before you will need the Regeneration Ink Lotus. You at least need more time... By that time, perhaps you have already married someone. If you come to me for the cure with your husband, that will be fine. If so, you won't need to worry too much about me and your problems with reputation will become not so serious..."

Wenren Chuchu raised her eyebrows again with her eyes wide-open. She became extremely angry and shouted, "Do you mean to say that my reputation isn't important once I get married? Feng Zhiling. What do you mean by that? Do you feel good making a fool out of me?"

Ye Xiao's eyes widened and he was speechless.

[What the hell!

What do you want me to say then?

If we do it now, you will care about your bloody reputation! Yet you still want to be alive! You still want to improve!

I suggested another solution for your own good, but you don't want to accept it, and you actually got bloody angry!

If you really care that much about your reputation, why don't you just die with it! At least I won't need to be in a dilemma! Even saying one word is like fighting a huge battle against millions of enemies...

This is so fxxking annoying!]

"I will do it!" When Wenren Chuchu said as her blush nearly spread to her chest.

She made up her mind and thought, [This is not my true appearance anyway. This prick will never know my true face...

Besides, the situation with master doesn't allow for anymore time to be wasted.

I am her inheritor. How can I not take the chance even though it is a small one? If I need to be aggrieved... so be it.

Instead, I should see it as getting bitten by a dog...]

"What? Did you just say... that you'll do it?" Ye Xiao was shocked when he heard her words.

He had been practicing his power. The two extremes, gelidity and heat, and he had become proficient enough to operate them as he wished.

He had made up the "Purple Sky-fire" earlier, but it wasn't a complete lie. The process of curing her was to use the scorching qi to disperse the cold qi in her body. This scorching qi was indeed produced by the East-rising Purple Qi, so there was nothing wrong to call it the Purple Sky-fire.

The name might be fake, but even if there was a kind of dan-fire named the Purple Sky-fire, it would definitely fail to match the most powerful martial art in the universe - the East-rising Purple Qi!

It was the invincible opponent of every other martial art!

Therefore, Ye Xiao was confident about the cure. It was just that, the way he needed to utilize it was unacceptable.

However, he hadn't thought that after the girl talked so much about her reputation, said "no" so many times, and actually threw soup in his face, she would actually come around and say "yes"?!

Chapter 56: Take Off Your Clothes

"Fine! I will do it!" Wenren Chuchu gritted her teeth. Her voice was shaking, but she had already made up her mind. She raised her head and her cold and fierce eyes locked onto Ye Xiao's face as she spoke, "Brother Feng, if you are telling the truth, we will certainly follow the agreement; I won't make any trouble for you... I will treat you like a forefather... But..."

She gnashed with her teeth, "But if you lie to me... and intentionally take advantage of me, Feng Zhiling, you should know there are situations in the world that can only be described as... 'begging for death'!"

Her voice sounded terrifying and scary.

Ye Xiao felt displeased and said coldly, "You don't think that I would risk my life just to touch your belly, do you? Who do you think you are?"

When speaking, he squinted at her face and murmured, "Do you really think that you're a world-class beauty? Just how good do you feel about yourself..."

Wenren Chuchu was so angry that her chest violently rose and fell as she started clenching her teeth unconsciously. She fiercely stared at Ye Xiao with eyes burning with hatred.

"What are you looking at?" Ye Xiao shouted, "Do you want to do it or not? Make your call!"

"... Do it!" Wenren Chuchu spoke these words through her clenched teeth.

"So you want to get cured. Then prepare for it, will you?" Ye Xiao said impatiently, "Tell your men to guard outside the door. Close all the windows. Make it private. What are you waiting for?"

Wenren Chuchu was standing there, not even moving an inch; it was as if her feet were nailed to the floor.

"What are you thinking about? Hurry up and make the arrangements, will you?" Ye Xiao asked and felt strange, "Get back in here after you are done with the preparations. Let's get started quickly. The sooner we start, the sooner it ends... Why are you still standing here?"

Wenren Chuchu gritted her teeth and took a deep breath. She then abruptly rushed out of the room.

After a while, the voice of the guards came along, saying that the whole property would be locked down right away.

"All paths 150 meters around the property will be blocked. Nobody is allowed to get close. Whoever gets close will be killed right away!"

Wenren Chuchu finished the preparations and waited for a while, before she walked back into the room with her head

lowered and her body shaking.

"Is it all done?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Done." Wenren Chuchu spoke with a quivering voice.

"Let's get started. What are you waiting for?" Ye Xiao squinted his eyes and said, "Take it off!"

Wenren Chuchu's body quivered as her face turned pale. Her eyes were similar to that of a helpless deer while looking at Ye Xiao, making her look even more vulnerable.

Ye Xiao tidied up the bed and turned around. He saw her still standing there, so he frowned, "What the hell is wrong with you? Do you want to get cured or not? Take off your clothes if you want... You are fine with wasting time here, but I have been missing for over a day now... My family must be worried. I have to get back as soon as possible. Let me finish curing you quickly so I can go back. Gosh... why are you so sentimental... You looked like a decisive person. What's wrong with you?"

Wenren Chuchu was much stronger than the guy standing in front of her. However, she felt like a sacrificial lamb, filled with fear and helplessness.

Until now, whether she was at home or at the sect, she had never had any sort of contact with men. Even her little hands had never been touched by anyone else.

It was unexpected that during her journey in the Kingdom of Chen, her hands would be touched a lot, and now, even her naked body needed to be seen and touched! The worst thing was that she had to willingly take off her clothes herself.

The man involved was actually a stranger whom she had met the day before.

Such a terrible experience had nearly made her pass out!

She slowly and quiveringly raised her pretty hands and reached to her waist. However, she was not brave enough to take off the sash...

Ye Xiao frowned. He was really weary of this now.

[I really don't understand why girls are so troublesome, and why she spends so long just to take off some clothes. For all I know, it only takes a second, right? Just get it done already... You can waste as much time as you want, but I can't afford to waste any!]

He couldn't help saying aloud, "Can't you just do it like I do - Shoot! - and be done instantly... It is just taking off some clothes... You do it every night before you sleep, don't you? Is it really that hard for you?"

Wenren Chuchu felt ashamed and angry. She replied with rage, "I am a girl!"

"Of course you are a girl. I know it, and you don't need to emphasize it. A guy would never dilly-dally like you do. But, don't girls take off their clothes?" Ye Xiao squinted and disdainfully said, "The only thing you need to do to save your life is to simply take your clothes off. I don't understand why you dilly-dally like this? Are you alright? Are your clothes so complex that you can't remove them on your own? If so, you should let me know so that I can help you with it!"

[You want to help me with it?]

Wenren Chuchu fiercely gritted her teeth.

Facing such an unromantic fool who knew absolutely nothing about a girl's mind, she really didn't know what to say. This guy didn't know anything about a girl's shyness at all.

[Do you really think it is about whether I know how to take off my clothes or not? It is about whether I can or cannot, okay?!]

[I really can't imagine what kind of surroundings he grew up in. What a weirdo!" Wenren Chuchu felt confused]

If she knew that Ye Xiao was currently living his second life and he used to have such a prominent figure in his previous life, she would definitely be baffled.

However, Ye Xiao had been a virgin in his previous life because of

the martial art he had been cultivating. He would always run far away from the girls as fast as he could.

He would never try to get close to any girl. It would be a severe problem if he got involved with a girl...

That's why he ended up as a well-informed and experienced man who knew nothing about things between men and women...

"You... Turn around first." Wenren Chuchu blushed.

"You are so troublesome..." Ye Xiao sighed. He didn't talk much though. Instead, he simply turned around.

The sound of rustling clothes could be heard behind him. After a while, it finally turned silent.

Another while passed, but he still did not hear a single sound from her. Ye Xiao frowned and spoke impatiently again, "Are you done? Can you do it or not?!"

Wenren Chuchu almost wanted to kick him to death, but instead she spoke with a quiver, "All right. Give your... Give me your hand..."

[Women are so troublesome!] - Ye Xiao sighed. Standing with his back facing her, he reached behind him and extended his hand towards her.

As soon as he did, he felt his hand being guided by a smaller hand. That hand was trembling, almost to the extent that it couldn't keep its hold on Ye Xiao's hand.

After a while, he could feel a sense of warmth slowly getting nearer. Perhaps his hand was approaching a warm object.

The next moment, he felt his hand land on a warm, smooth and jade-like skin.

The warmth he felt from his hand was truly fantastic!

At this moment, Ye Xiao even felt his soul quivering. It was an indescribably marvelous feeling.

He felt some desire originating inside him. He wanted to keep his hand on that place forever and never move. He felt as though his body had become incredibly light, as though he was floating in the air.

The next moment, apart from the marvelous softness, he felt a scent of a girl's body entering his nose. All of a sudden, he felt lost and intoxicated; it was as if he was dreaming.

Behind him, the body he was touching was shaking. Wenren Chuchu spoke with a shaky voice, "You... You... Why don't you begin..."

Ye Xiao seemed to suddenly wake up from his stupor and felt astonished. He murmured, "You siren, how dare you distract my mind. I am going to operate my martial art against you!"

Wenren Chuchu was so terrified that her body was quivering. It was the natural fear of a virgin girl when she was naked in front of a male; it was not that she was weak.

However, she found that Ye Xiao was quivering too. He looked even more terrified than she did... She found it to be really funny, [It is natural that I, as a girl, feel fear facing a guy. What do you fear in spite of being a man? Do you think there is anything I can do to you? I am in such a situation, what can I do?]

Especially when she heard the words "You siren, how dare you distract me", she couldn't help laughing out loud. [It seems... this Master Feng is not playing a fool; he really knows nothing.]

She said, "What are you murmuring about. Stop the nonsense and get started quickly!"

As soon as she finished speaking, she felt a stream of scorching power originating from Master Feng's palm. The power, which was irresistible and enormous, suddenly flowed into her dantian!

Such a huge stream of power was something even Wenren Chuchu, the top disciple of a top-classed sect in the Qing-Yun Realm and knew almost every martial art in the world, was totally unacquainted with!

This unheard-of strange power was like a flame which could even burn the soul!

[This is the Purple Sky-fire, isn't it?]

This supernatural thing is truly unheard of!

Such... a comfortable feeling!

She had expected to feel a tremendous amount of pain, comparable to being burned in scorching flames, but she didn't feel any pain at all. Instead, she felt an extremely comfortable feeling spread throughout her body.

It was the feeling of comfort coming from the depths of her soul. Even though Wenren Chuchu was usually steady and calm, the extremely pleasant sensation made her unable to control herself as a moan unintentionally leaked out.

"Ahh~~~"

Ye Xiao heard it and quivered. He shouted angrily, "Vixen! Don't ever make such a seductive sound again..."

Wenren Chuchu was so ashamed that her body turned hot because of the moan she let out after losing control. When she heard Ye Xiao's words, she suddenly felt that it was fine to do that. She actually did something she would never have dreamt of: she spoke with an insinuating voice, "Is this the Purple Sky-fire? Oh,

it's so amazing!"

Ye Xiao was shocked by the extremely soft voice as he quivered. He angrily said, "Don't speak like that!"

A virgin throughout both lives, what a poor thing! When did he ever experience such a soft and sweet situation? It was the first time for him in his two lives. He suddenly felt choked up with emotions. He panicked and his hands and feet scrambled to keep up with his messy thoughts, but he managed to keep operating his spiritual qi...

Chapter 57: A Silly Young Man's Therapy

During his two lives, he had not even held a girl's arms, yet this time, he had skipped that part and had jumped straight to touching a girl's belly...

How had things ended up this way? The feeling on his hand was extremely pleasant... He was feeling the warmth, the smoothness, the breathing, and the pulsing Jing and Mai of a girl's body...

Ye Xiao was totally flustered at this moment. Did it mean that that the treatment he had proposed was akin to lifting a stone and smashing it on his own toes?!

He forcibly kept operating his martial arts and used the intense heat of the East-rising Purple Qi to absorb the cold qi in Wenren Chuchu's body as her martial arts continued to operate.

The East-rising Purple Qi was indeed an extraordinary martial art which belonged in the legends. It had already started to take effect. As he continued to operate his spiritual qi, he felt a string of the cold qi gather in his palm. He became encouraged by this and decided to speed up the pace of his operation. As for now, his mind was clear, and he could finally concentrate.

The two of them were bonded by their bodies, and their spirits were connected. They surely knew about each other's' condition. Wenren Chuchu was able to notice all the changes happening inside Ye Xiao. He sat still, but the heat continuously entered her body. She felt more and more comfortable, it was as if she was

bathing in a hot spring. She just wanted to fall asleep that way.

However, she didn't dare show any carelessness.

She had come to know the astounding effect of Ye Xiao's martial art. She operated her spiritual consciousness and was surprised to discover that the rooted cyan streams of cold qi, which represented her death, were being dispelled bit by bit inside her dantian. As the shadow of death that had been hovering inside her head gradually disappeared, she suddenly experienced a feeling of elation.

It was not entirely because of the disappearing shade of death or the possibility of a clear path of cultivation in her future that made her feel happy.

It was because... this guy was curing her with all his heart which made her actually feel "a sense of belonging". It was a feeling that she had never felt before; unfamiliar, yet enjoyable...

She sighed in her mind and stopped the vision of her spiritual consciousness. She slightly turned her head and quietly gazed at the side of Ye Xiao's face.

[This guy is not really that good-looking... and he is a bit old... but he looks so charming when he is working seriously.

And he gives me a sense of safety which extends to the bottom of my heart.

And... a few moments before, when he was panicking and didn't know what to do... he looked so cute...

He must be a guy who has experienced everything except for relations between a man and woman!

Even if he is cunning enough to rule the whole world, when he faces a girl, he is only a silly young man...]

While thinking of that, she felt something soft arise in her heart.

She looked at Ye Xiao's motionless face, and she actually got lost in thought.

Initially, if the therapy had really worked, she had planned for him to acquire the Regeneration Jade Lotus to cure her master and kill him afterwards since he had disgraced her.

It seemed ungrateful to do so, but she didn't have a choice in order to protect her own reputation!

However, now that she was gazing at his face, she understood one thing, [Even if that day comes, I probably couldn't do it.]

She realized that... the gap between them was huge...

[Although he is a supreme dan-maker, he is a dan-maker of the mortal world; he is a man of the martial world.

And for me, after solving the problems of father and master, I have to go back after all...

Even if I am not the inheritor of an elite sect of the Qing-Yun Realm, I... am the princess of a kingdom after all... How can I...]

Thinking of that, she felt sad and couldn't help sighing.

If Ye Xiao turned around, he would have discovered that the girl was now wearing a weird expression. He would have also notice that the girl was actually fully dressed.

She had only cut a circular hole on the part of her clothes covering her dantian, and only a small part of her belly was exposed.

However, that was the furthest she was willing to go... She was a virgin after all. It was not easy for her to reveal the skin of her belly even in such circumstances.

It could be summarized as such: If she hadn't been so eager to cure her dying master and to test the feasibility of Ye Xiao's solution, she wouldn't have let any guy touch her body, even if she were to die!

In fact, at the beginning, she was still really hesitant.

However, after feeling the Purple Sky-fire warm her body and comfort her mind, she felt happy, and this happiness brought along both fear and confusion at the same time...

Time passed slowly, bit by bit...

Wenren Chuchu was a perceptive girl. She clearly felt that her energy was getting purer and purer as the impact of the cold qi was dispersing bit by bit. The breath of the man became heavier at the same time.

He was obviously tired...

[In such position, reaching his hand behind his back to my belly, he keeps operating his martial art for such a long time with no breaks. How could he not be tired?]

Thinking about that, Wenren Chuchu moved her body quietly so as to make Ye Xiao operate in a position that wouldn't be that difficult for him...

She even showed a shy smile on the corners of her mouth.

[Nerd... He probably thinks that I am an ugly girl. Humph... If I reveal my true face, I promise you will be enchanted immediately, nerd!

But... can I show him... my true face?]

While collecting her thoughts, Wenren Chuchu felt shy for a moment, perplexed for a moment, sad for a moment, helpless for a moment, and like she was in a dream for a moment...

She was a girl who had learnt battle tactics her entire life; she started cultivating when she was about five, and she learned to command the army when she was about seven; when she turned thirteen, she had adventured in the Qing-Yun Realm...

This kind of emotion was something she had never experienced before.

Neither she nor Ye Xiao, whose EQ was zero, knew that it was something every young girl would eventually experience. There was no woman who had not.

Later, after Ye Xiao confirmed for the third time that the cold qi inside Wenren Chuchu's body had been completely eradicated and nothing remained in her dantian that he could draw out, he finally stopped the operation.

Before he opened his eyes, he heard Wenren Chuchu's voice, "Is it done?"

They had been spiritually connected during the therapy, so he wasn't surprised that she could notice all of his movements. But what surprised him the most was the tone of her voice. It was unprecedentedly soft and gentle. It was a different kind of gentle, something unlike the one she used in the earlier conversations.

The earlier ones were on purpose, while the present one was from the bottom of her heart.

Ye Xiao nodded and said, "Done."

And then the bed shook; Wenren Chuchu had already left. Ye Xiao composed himself before turning around. He could still feel the heat that remained in his hand, leaving behind an aftertaste.

He saw her standing in front of the window, tidying up her clothes.

Her cyan robe as well as her hair were being buffeted by the wind. Her tall and slim body looked especially attractive under the lights of the setting sun.

"This woman is slow in taking off clothes, but fast in putting them back on." Ye Xiao murmured in mind.

The silly man didn't know that the girl had never undressed at all.

At the moment, she had merely put on a robe and had covered everything with it.

"Brother Feng, I now believe that you really have the capability." Wenren Chuchu looked outside of the window and spoke gently, "But... I wonder if you will come with me to the Kingdom of Lan-Feng to cure my master?"

"Absolutely not. We have a deal. I helped you with your illness and proved my capability. You shouldn't interfere with my freedom." Ye Xiao answered decisively, "However, I could cure your master. But first, she needs to come to the Kingdom of Chen."

Wenren Chuchu sighed.

She didn't even try to force his hand.

That was surprising for Ye Xiao.

In Ye Xiao's mind, even though he had helped her with her problem, she might still decide to not keep her promise about setting him free. She should have at least bargained with him. He had spoken decisively because he was trying to take the initiative for the inevitable bargain which was to follow. However, he was left surprised that the girl had actually allowed him to leave without any conditions!

"Just... the Regeneration Ink Lotus... how do I raise it? Is it really possible to turn it into the Regeneration Jade Lotus in a short time?" Wenren Chuchu asked.

Ye Xiao could barely believe his ears. [Is she still that forceful Wenren Chuchu? The question is an interrogative sentence, but why does it sound so soft?]

"I have solved your problem just now. Isn't it the best proof of my

capability? If you can trust me, give me the lotus." Ye Xiao spoke without mincing his words, "In your hands, to be honest, it will be a waste. Such an item can only be effective in the hands of someone great like me! Only I can unlock its true potential!"

Wenren Chuchu didn't turn around; she nodded slowly instead.

"Then when I come back next time, how do I find you? Should we establish a means of communication?" She asked with a low voice.

"There is no need to bother. When you come, you will find me for sure." Ye Xiao said, "I believe that even if I hide, you will have your own way of finding me."

Wenren Chuchu nodded again.

That was right. In the world, there were not many people that could escape from the surveillance of Wenren Chuchu.

As of now, Wenren Chuchu could clearly feel that the spiritual qi inside her body was flowing at an unprecedentedly active condition. She even had a feeling that she could enter the highest grade in this world - the Sky Origin Stage anytime she wanted!

In fact, she felt that she could do more. Perhaps, she only needed one third of the time she had estimated to reach the Grandmaster levels of the Sky Origin Stage!

It was something she had been dreaming about. She had gained

such an advantage now, and she was closer to her dream, but she actually didn't feel much pleasure; instead, she was filled with an indescribable disconsolation...

Chapter 58: The Girl's Temper. Beat Him Up!

[The faster I improve, the sooner I can leave this world...]

Ye Xiao was also keeping an eye on his own condition. He had been continuously using his power, so he must have consumed a lot of it. If that's the case, then why was it that he didn't feel tired at all? On the contrary, he felt like he was in a pretty good shape. He used his spiritual consciousness to check his own spiritual space and was surprised to discover that inside the Yin Space of the Nine Spaces which was previously empty, there now existed some cyan fog!

The cold qi, which had been dispelled from the girl's body, was actually not banished by the East-rising Purple Qi; it had been absorbed by the Spaces... In other words, the cold qi was actually the kind of energy that the Yin Space needed!

At this moment, Ye Xiao was incomparably astonished and overjoyed!

He had been thinking that his treatment would be some kind of thankless task which would consume a lot of energy, however, he would have never imagined that he would actually acquire such a big reward!

If not for this coincidence, it would have been quite difficult for him to find out what this yin qi was.

After realizing this, Ye Xiao suddenly became filled with expectations about curing Wenren Chuchu's master. Since she was the master of this girl, her cultivation must be of a much higher grade... To put it simply, Ye Xiao could gain much more

yin qi than the amount he had gained from Wenren Chuchu.

When he thought about that, Ye Xiao immediately told her, "If you can't find me when you come here again, you can go to the Northern General's House. You will know how to contact me when you get there..."

In order to get more yin qi, Ye Xiao had to make it more convenient for her; of course, it was this convenience that brought many complications.

Wenren Chuchu smiled gently, "You do have connections with them. During the auction, you had been acting against the Mu Clan the whole time. I guessed that you might be related to the Ye Clan... I was right."

Ye Xiao gloomily said, "It is not a good thing for a girl to be too smart..."

Wenren Chuchu heard him and actually sighed. She spoke softly, "Do you think I want to be this smart and become this concerned about everything... I want somebody to be the smart one for me..."

They were both quiet for a long time.

Ye Xiao was sitting on the bedside while Wenren Chuchu was standing in front of window. As she gazed out of the window, Ye Xiao looked at her back.

"Sorry for offending you this time." Wenren Chuchu spoke in a sombre voice, "I was planning to invite you to the Kingdom of Lan-Feng because I admire your skill in dan-making... I never thought that I would be the one to owe you such a big favor."

Slowly, Wenren Chuchu's voice regained its initial tranquility.

Ye Xiao didn't talk.

"But it is fortunate that I came up with such a plan... Otherwise, I don't know how long we would have needed to struggle before we can find a way to dispel the cold qi... This was such a lucky coincidence." Wenren Chuchu spoke again with a half-smile.

"One does what one must. You don't have to keep it in mind." Ye Xiao spoke indifferently.

"Feng Zhiling..." Wenren Chuchu said embarrassedly, "When my master comes to you for the treatment, will it also have to be like this... to proceed with her skin being touched?"

Ye Xiao was highly perceptive and noticed something strange in her words, but he didn't think too much about it. He would never

guess what she was thinking anyway. He said, "Yes. The reason why we have to do it this way is probably because my cultivation is not good enough to operate the Purple Sky-fire outside my body. I have to touch your skin to connect my spiritual qi to yours... To reach the level where I can operate the Purple Sky-fire outside my body, I need to at least reach the Grandmaster levels of the Sky Origin Stage which would allow me to fly up to the Qing-Yun Realm."

Wenren Chuchu's slim body suddenly shook as she cried, "You... You are actually planning to abandon this land and fly to the Qing-Yun Realm?"

Ye Xiao didn't understand the reason for her sudden agitation. He said with astonishment, "Do you mean that I cannot break the limit of this world and progress to the higher realm?"

"Hmmm, no... I didn't mean that. It was just too..." Wenren Chuchu became embarrassed as the blush on her face once again reached her neck. Her voice became as soft as the buzzing of mosquitos. Even though Ye Xiao had ultra-sensitive hearing, he still couldn't clearly hear the last two words that she had spoken.

"Brother Feng... Since you have completed your part of our agreement, I shall keep my promise and set you free." Her voice contained a sense of melancholy and depression.

Ye Xiao frowned and thought, [That tone of hers... could it be that she regrets making the agreement? Does she want to catch me once more after letting me off?]

"Don't worry, my words carry no other meaning. It is just that... after you leave, I have to give up the former plan and go back to my kingdom straight away." Wenren Chuchu spoke in a low voice, "In three months, I will come back here with my master. I hope that you will give us a surprise at that time."

"Hm, I see. I also look forward to the day we meet again." Ye Xiao said.

When she heard those words being spoken so indifferently, without even a trace of expectation, Wenren Chuchu couldn't help but bite her lower lip.

[Asshole!]

"Do... you want to see my true face?" In a fit of irritation, she asked this question. She didn't even know why she did so; it had just come out of her mouth.

Maybe she was simply dissatisfied with his reaction?

Or maybe she did not resign herself to be considered ugly by Ye Xiao?

Ye Xiao shook his head, "There is no point in seeing your face... No, thanks."

Wenren Chuchu's slim body shook as a desolate smile appeared on her face. She murmured, "That's right, what's the point of him seeing my true face?"

She quietly stood by the window for another long time.

And when she finally turned around, her expression was ice cold.

She spoke blandly, "Since we have made an agreement already, Brother Feng, let me walk you out."

"You're letting me go just like this?" Ye Xiao actually felt a bit surprised.

[That is surprising, isn't it? Is she not afraid that I'll go back on my words or try to hide from them? Does she really not want to use any special technique to set an unbreakable block on me or something...]

"Why don't you leave already? Do you want to live here?" Wenren Chuchu suddenly became angry and spoke fiercely, deviating from her normal behavior.

Ye Xiao was more confused and felt that this girl was too susceptible to mood swings. He couldn't help but sigh in his mind as he thought, [Girls are really incomprehensible creatures after all. No matter what, I have just solved a big problem for her...]

And now, she suddenly became unfriendly.

There's a good saying describing this: In this world, women are the most difficult to understand

He internally sighed again and followed Wenren Chuchu out.

When they arrived at the door, Wenren Chuchu stopped and took out a jade box from her clothes. She passed it to Ye Xiao and spoke expressionlessly, "Here is the Regeneration Ink Lotus."

"Okay." Ye Xiao immediately took it and held it in his hand. His eyes glanced around; he looked eager to leave.

Wenren Chuchu gritted her teeth again.

[Asshole. You could at least fake it... Couldn't you just pretend that you are a little reluctant to leave? I have been taking care of you all day, you have even touched me. Do you really need to leave so desperately?]

She then gritted her teeth and said, "Feng Zhiling, you better remember this. It is a big gamble for me to give you the Regeneration Ink Lotus! If you ever lose it or ruin it... I will... I'll... I will rip your skin off bit by bit!"

Ye Xiao shook his head and laughed, "Lady Chuchu, if you keep being so violent... who would want to marry you in the future?"

Wenren Chuchu was still angry, but then she blushed again.

"Just leave." She said.

A breeze blew past, blowing her robes in the air. Her long hair that was ruffled by the breeze was also floating. Her slim and tall body seemed like it would fly away with the wind at any moment.

But her eyes were filled with a sense of solitude and loneliness.

"Goodbye." Ye Xiao wouldn't dare to stay longer, would he? As he was allowed to leave, he left without any hesitation.

"Hold on!" Watching him leave so quickly, Wenren Chuchu gritted her teeth. She felt that she was going to freak out because of this unromantic man.

"What?! Is there a problem?" Ye Xiao turned around speechlessly.

"Just one more question." Wenren Chuchu took a deep breath and said, "Feng Zhiling... Your face... is this your true face?"

She didn't want to ask this question and hadn't planned it. She told Ye Xiao to hold on because she was still slightly angry, that was all.

However, when Ye Xiao turned around, she had nothing to say, so she tried to come up with something. Then she suddenly got an

idea, [My face is disguised; could he be disguised too?]

After all, that was just her trying to think of a topic.

Ye Xiao stayed silent for a while before asking her, "Lady Chuchu, is your present face your true face?"

Wenren Chuchu wouldn't have even dreamt about receiving such an answer. She was shocked and replied, "What?"

"Think about it, Lady Chuchu; the same applies to me. We both have a tacit understanding." Ye Xiao laughed, threw up his hands and shrugged his shoulders.

Wenren Chuchu's slim body shook a little and she murmured, "It turns out you are not showing your true face either."

She suddenly became enraged.

She had been taken advantaged of and had gotten nothing in return; only at the end did she realize that she hadn't even seen his true face!

She got angrier the more she thought about it. Suddenly, she spoke in an ear-piercing voice, "You actually lied to me!"

Ye Xiao was astonished, "I lied to you? Never. What did I lie about?"

Wenren Chuchu dashed over with a furious look on her face and frantically started to beat him up. She gritted her teeth while punching him, "Feng Zhiling, how dare you lie to me! Feng Zhiling, you lied to me..."

Her punches were getting stronger. It seemed like she was trying to release all the grievances in her heart. This girl's temper, as well as her feelings, were all contained in her punches.

Since she was at the Level 9 of the Earth Origin Stage and Ye Xiao was only Level 1 of the same stage, she could naturally beat him up however she wanted. She was really doing it with ease and enthusiasm. Ye Xiao couldn't do anything to defend against her, and he was dumbstruck by the sudden attack.

Unwittingly, before he realized what was going on, he had been struck by the storm-like punches more than a dozen times.

Ye Xiao was totally speechless over this injustice!

He felt that he had been completely wronged.

Chapter 59: Unavoidable Confrontation; Draw a Sword to Help

“You... can’t you be a bit more reasonable?! ...” Ye Xiao was beaten until he was completely black and blue. He tried to dodge the attacks while attempting to understand the situation, before shouting out in anger, “You, you, you... didn’t you show me a disguised face too? You, you, you... just how did I lie to you? What did I lie to you about? You woman, you mad woman... You’re really unreasonable!”

As he was violently thrashed by such an overwhelming force, Ye Xiao naturally felt humiliated to the extreme.

It was his first time being beaten up in both his current and previous life.

[I actually got beaten up by a woman!

This is too embarrassing!

This woman is so unreasonable... Way too unreasonable...]

At this moment, Ye Xiao’s mind was filled with these kind of thoughts, to the extent that he became incapable of thinking about anything else!

With this thrashing, Wenren Chuchu was beating him to her

heart's content. As she hit him, she spoke furiously, "I told you that you were an idiot, yet you didn't believe me. You dare to try reason with a woman? You deserve to be beaten up...!" Towards the end of her tirade, there emerged a trace of humor in her voice.

Hearing her words, Ye Xiao suddenly became dispirited.

[Shxt! I am such a fool!

I actually tried to argue with a woman...

I am getting beaten up for absolutely no reason at all...]

Wenren Chuchu was getting more and more vigorous while beating him. After she felt that she had vented enough of her anger, she jumped up with a graceful spin and floated casually through the doorway. Only a playful voice resounded from within, "Brother Feng, I will come back in three months..."

- BANG! -

The door was firmly shut.

Ye Xiao was standing in front of the door with a runny nose and a swollen face. He wanted to cry but had no tears. Right now, he was simply speechless!

As he felt angry and ashamed, he furiously shouted, "No matter

how much you try, you will never be able to find me! You mad woman!”

Yet he only heard a fully satisfied and vigorous laughter from inside the property, which was then followed by utter silence.

He suppressed his anger which nearly made him spit out blood. He then turned around and left while murmuring, “Women are so unreasonable...”

His figure was moving further and further away.

He hadn’t noticed that the door had been ajar.

Half of Wenren Chuchu’s face was shown through the crack, and she watched Ye Xiao leaving with angry strides. When she heard his murmuring, she couldn’t help laughing out loud as she muttered, “Such a fool...”

When she turned around, she found two people looking at her at the moment.

“My lady...” The middle-aged woman looked at her questioningly.

Wenren Chuchu’s face turned hot for a second, before returning back to normal. She spoke indifferently, “Start packing. We need to leave as soon as possible. We’re going home!”

She said nothing else and elegantly walked back to her room.

She looked at the bed on which Ye Xiao had sat before and thought about how he had operated his martial arts on her - and how those big warm hands had been pressed on her belly. She couldn't help but shudder as heat coursed through her body. She gently sat down as her jade-like hands slowly stroked the spot where Ye Xiao sat a while ago, vaguely feeling the heat of his body which had continued to linger.

Her eyes were getting desolate and hazy as she murmured, “[My sworn enemy... You are really my sworn enemy...](#)”

After leaving Wenren Chuchu's secret hideout, Ye Xiao made a few winding detours. Only when he was certain that no one was following him did he throw the Regeneration Ink Lotus into the Spaces.

He was preparing to throw away the box like he always did, but he suddenly found something else inside the box. He opened it and discovered a delicate, small handkerchief. There were some cloud-like patterns faintly embroidered on it; they looked illusory, and a faint lotus was laid at its center, .

If some ordinary person saw this, he wouldn't feel anything special about it. However, Ye Xiao knew a lot about such flowers. He knew the story behind this lotus.

This lotus grew in the valleys that are perennially covered by

mist. Its name was the Mist Lotus.

This lotus looked illusory and gave an impression of some faint beauty of fairylands. However, it was extremely poisonous. The mist lotus could make people fall into coma and turn them into a skeleton in a short amount of time. It was truly overbearing.

It looked soft, pretty and elegant, but it was extremely poisonous. It reminded Ye Xiao of the crazy girl, Wenren Chuchu.

[The girl also looks soft and pretty, but in fact, she is vicious and decisive. If she revealed her true face, she would be a world-class beauty.]

Her situation could be compared to the lotus.

On the border of the handkerchief, a faint line of delicate script could be seen.

“The flower is beautiful when seen through the mist; the heavens sink when she dances in the wind. A demon to the enemy; a beauty to the one she serves.”

Ye Xiao was deep in thought as he held the handkerchief, and then he shook his head and smiled, “A woman like you... you think you are a beauty, really...”

If Lady Wenren Chuchu was here and heard what he had just said with such confidence, he would definitely be beaten up again. In

fact, he would receive a beating much fiercer than the one he had just experienced. A girl had already put a handkerchief in the box for him, yet he didn't understand her intent and even slandered the girl while talking to himself.

It would have been an act of mercy just to keep him alive.

It had to be said that this guy's EQ could actually be so low; this was truly inconceivable!

After slandering the girl, he casually played with the small handkerchief and suddenly thought of something. He felt like the sense of the softness and smoothness were still on his fingers. He kneaded his fingers like he could still feel the touch of her belly and murmured, "That belly is beautiful somehow... It felt pretty good when touching it."

He then put the handkerchief into his coat and smelled a faint fragrance. It made him feel like Wenren Chuchu was still around him...

[Did that chick keep a Mist Lotus in her sleeve all along? I didn't even notice...]

"How pathetic, I was totally beaten up by that mad woman..." Ye Xiao spoke bitterly, "I will remember this. When I have the chance to hit her back, I must beat her till her ass is broken!"

He imagined the scene where he was spanking the girl's buttocks

until she cried and begged for mercy. That made him felt delighted.

With an imaginary victory, he held his head high and headed back home.

He had walked for a long distance and would arrive home after travelling a few more blocks. Suddenly, he frowned...

The wind was blowing from the direction to his house.

It seemed there were people coming over rapidly. Ye Xiao felt motivated and went forward.

The first person approached him like a whirlwind, moving at the speed of lightning, but his entire body was splattered with blood. By the time he saw Ye Xiao, he was already within ten meters of him. Suddenly, his body twisted as he said a low voice, "Move aside unless you want to die!"

Following that, he flashed past Ye Xiao, barely making contact with his body.

Even though he was so busy moving, he had actually pushed Ye Xiao towards the wall.

Although that person had barely brushed him, Ye Xiao felt an enormous force strike him. With a whoosh, his body had flown to the corner of the street.

He was extremely frightened.

[This guy must have reached a marvelous level of cultivation. Why is he wounded so badly?]

Just when he thought about this, he saw three figures flying towards him. Blades that gleamed like reckless lightning whistled past the location where he had just been standing.

Obviously, if he hadn't been pushed by the man who was being hunted, these three sword lights would have definitely have hit him directly. The three fellows didn't look like they would allow anyone to escape...

If there was someone who was a bit weaker standing in his place, he would certainly be ripped to shreds by these sword lights!

Ye Xiao was furious!

[Since this is the case, why don't I return the compliment.]

The sword lights had just missed Ye Xiao, and he heard one of the three guys say, "There is an ant over here..."

"No need to mention it!" Another guy replied with a deep voice.

The following moment, three gleaming sword lights suddenly

circled in the air and shot toward Ye Xiao's neck.

“He has seen the light of our blades and knows that we are hunting. We can't let him live.”

“Just kill him!”

The sword lights rapidly approached him.

The three of them didn't even turn around to look at him.

The three gleaming sword lights instantly reached the corner of the alleyway and changed directions to pursue Ye Xiao.

To them, it didn't matter whether Ye Xiao lived or died. These three people had completely disregarded him. The only reason they wanted to kill him was because they had seen him during this chase!

Ye Xiao was extremely furious. He turned his head and dodged to the side. The three sword lights embedded themselves deeply into the wall. At the same time, Ye Xiao shook his wrist and three cold lights appeared in his hand. With a swish, the three lights flew out.

It was the gelid power.

The energy that didn't belong to this world had shown up for the first time!

It instantly froze the moisture in the air, converting it into ice; three exquisite small knives were formed and thrown.

The cold lights flew outwards. Ye Xiao didn't look towards his targets either. He turned around and operated the Lunisolar Shadow. - POOF! - He disappeared.

The three guys had already gotten out of the alley and were about to move out of sight.

But all of a sudden, an extreme crisis descended upon them.

The three of them were astonished at the same time.

They looked back and only saw the three lights that had already reached them.

When they turned around the corner, the lights had also turned around and chased after them!

The two of them swung their swords. - BANG! - They blocked the ice knives when it was about to be lodged between their eyebrows. They felt a stream of coldness go into their brains through the middle of their eyebrows as they quivered.

Looking at their longswords, they realized that their swords were already covered by a dense layer of frost! The hilt of their swords

had become so cold that it felt like they were holding a ten-thousand-year old stalactite. They were chilled to the bone, and they almost threw their longswords to the ground. They hurriedly executed a spiritual technique to forcefully suppress the gelid energy.

A shocked shout echoed in the alleyway.

The third guy was a bit slow with his sword. - KAK! - He chopped apart the knife, but the edge of the knife had actually pierced his shoulder.

Immediately after being hit, he lost all feelings in his shoulder. The next moment, he felt cold accumulate between his eyebrows, and his entire arm became paralyzed because of the gelid power.

- Pah! - His sword fell on the floor.

His body became covered by ice at an astonishing speed!

Even his beard, eyebrows and hair were covered by ice!

The knife had left a hole in his shoulder, but no blood came out from it. At this moment, even his veins had become frozen!

He had turned into an ice sculpture.

The three of them were totally scared out of their wits. They

came to a halt at the same time as cold sweat drenched their bodies due to fear.

In fact, considering their cultivation levels, they shouldn't have been this helpless. However, they had been focused on the powerful enemy who had been fleeing ahead of them...

They hadn't paid any attention on anything else.

Unfortunately, they had encountered such a weirdly powerful enemy on the way. They didn't even have the time to react. By the time the attack arrived, it was already too late to react.

"Who was that?" The three of them looked at each other with sweat dripping down their foreheads. Their hearts were pounding in fear.

They couldn't believe that in this world, there was actually someone who was this strange and powerful!

The third guy hurriedly operated the spiritual method in order to dispel the cold, and his two fellow cultivators helped him with it. Finally, he recovered, but his shoulder was still wounded with frostbite.

The muscles had even turned blue.

"It was... it was the guy whom I tried to kill..."

...

[Sworn enemy (冤家) in Chinese can also refer to one's destined love.]

Chapter 60: Killers Were from the House of the Chaotic Storm

“It was... it was the guy whom I was trying to kill...” The ice that covered the third guy started to melt into water which flowed down like a stream. At the same time, terror could be seen in his eyes.

When thinking about how he had tried to kill someone like that with just one sword move... and how it turned out to create such a trouble for himself, he felt that a snake was climbing on his back, causing him to tremble.

The three fellas were dumbstruck.

The one who had been running away from them was already injured. He was so close to being caught, because he had become exhausted by the time he had crossed the corner of the alley. He was thinking, [I have spent my life running freely around the whole world. I was invincible! Yet I am going to die here today!]

The next moment, his eyes almost popped out.

He too saw the three knives which shone like the stars in the night sky.

He also saw the three guys who had been chasing him being hit at the same time, and noticed that they had actually lost their courage to continue the chase.

The man's eyes lit up as he increased his pace in order to leave quickly.

How lucky! He actually managed to keep his life intact!

He thought of the man he had pushed aside just now, [Yes, it must be that guy. There was nobody else within a hundred meters of us...

It had to be him.

I am not usually a kind person. I tried to do him a favor because... there was no need for an innocent person to die because of me... since I was not going to survive this anyway...

I pushed him!

I would have never imagined that what I did has actually saved my life!

If I didn't care much or maybe tried to kill him myself to clear the path... then now... I am afraid I would have been lying on the floor without a chance to get this life back...]

Imagining that, he was drenched in cold sweat.

[I remember his face. Such a great favor, I will definitely repay

him!

I am Ning Biluo, and I am not the kind of person who doesn't have a sense of gratitude!]

He suddenly moved and disappeared without a trace...

...

It hadn't been a long time - only two days had passed since Ye Xiao had left home. Generally, it wouldn't be considered as a case of disappearance at all.

However, during this dangerous period, two days was a long time. After waiting for a "long time", the steward was nearly driven crazy!

A storm was brewing in the capital. The streets were filled with fear, and everyone was suspicious of one another. Leaving home during this time was nothing but asking for death.

Indeed there had been several events happening during these days - really strange events.

It seemed like the Mu Clan had stopped planning their revenge towards Ye Clan. Before the world-shocking auction had even fully ended, every single man of the Mu Clan had already retreated from the capital. It was amazing how quickly they had ran off.

It had left many people perplexed though.

[What is going on with them?

They aggressively arrived showing a wild bravado, but ceased all activities without doing anything? It looked like they were fugitives. What are they doing? Is it really necessary?]

Anyway, since the Mu Clan had fully retreated, Steward Song sighed with relief.

At least the safety of his young master was assured for the immediate future.

However, panic overtook him once again! Ye Xiao was missing!

It had been two days since his young master was last seen, and he had already asked Lord Lan, Lord Zuo and Lady Su about his whereabouts. However, even his closest friends didn't have a clue about his whereabouts. For Steward Song, the only possibility was that his young master was missing!

At that moment, Steward Song was totally stunned!

[Could it be... that master was kidnapped by the Mu Clan? Otherwise, why would the Mu Clan leave in such a hurry?]

Anger had clouded his judgement as he led his 36 blood guards to the southern gate!

“We have to save our lord! Even if we have to give up our lives!” He ordered like a homicidal maniac as his eyes were bloodstruck!

He was really risking everything this time.

The galloping of the horses sounded like a roaring thunder, bringing forth a surging killing intent.

These veterans who had retired from their former lives of swords and blood, none of them were ordinary people. This time, they were emitting fierce vigor and violent killing intent which they had been suppressing for years. Everywhere they passed, the surrounding people would instantly become terrified.

They kept rushing south, disregarding the exhaustion of their horses which were nearing death's gate. They had gone hundreds of miles until they arrived below a mountain. Once they had reached the foot of the mountain, they cried out in alarm as they held their horses!

What they could see was a hellish scene that was too horrible to look at!

Tens of men and tens of horses were lying in disorder on the floor. All of them were bloodied corpses. Not a single one was left alive!

“They... they are the people of the Mu Clan!”

One of the blood guards looked at the sign of the broken carriage, on which the Mu Clan’s insignia could be seen. The sign had been cut into half, but it was still identifiable.

“The people of the Mu Clan? Why are they all dead?” The steward dismounted his horse as a frown appeared on his face.

“They have all died, and all of their belongings are gone...” One of the other blood guards, a big and tall man with a full beard, said, “Did they encounter bandits? How else could this scene be devoid of valuables? This was a professional hit!”

“Bullshxt. In a suburb of the capital, what kind of robbers could be so strong to rob and kill the people of the Mu Clan? Let alone in the suburb, even in the whole Kingdom of Chen, even in the whole Land of Han-Yang, do you really really think that there could be such powerful bandits?” The steward scolded, “Are you a pig?”

The blood guard grinned and rubbed his head, “No...”

People started laughing.

The steward carefully checked around, but found no traces. He murmured, “What kind of people could do this so cleanly? That is really illogical!”

“There are seventy bodies in total. Except for the eight guys that died in our house, all the people of the Mu Clan that entered the capital of the Kingdom of Chen are here. Not even a single one survived.”

One of the blood guards looked at one of the bodies on the floor and said, “The old man in the middle is Mu Zihe. He was the leader of the group for this trip. He was the fourth younger brother of the patriarch, and he has a high position even though he was only in the Earth Origin Stage. He died here anyway. The people who killed him must have thought nothing about leeway this time.”

“And they have done it so cleanly.” The steward sighed. He realized more and more that this thing was too complicated.

It was even possible that the Ye Clan would be blamed again..

The problem was that it truly had nothing to do with them. Even if every force of the Ye Clan got together, they would never have a chance to do such a thing. In fact, Steward Song was actually determined to die this time as long as they could chase the people of the Mu Clan down.

He knew how powerful the Mu Clan was. If the Ye Clan fought against them directly, it would be not far from an ant hitting a tree. In Steward Song’s mind, if his young master was really captured by the Mu Clan and they could catch up with them, there was still a tiny chance to rescue Ye Xiao even if it meant losing all of his people in battle.

With such a powerful force, these Mu Clan's people were actually wiped out. How powerful would the killers have to be. To the most conservative projection, there absolutely wasn't such a powerful force in the Kingdom of Chen!

“Look! The mountainside!”

One of the blood guards shouted.

The steward looked up and was immediately stunned.

He nearly slapped himself on the face. He had actually been worried about being framed and kept saying that it was done too cleanly.

It turned out the killers hadn't even thought about hiding their identities. In fact, they had even gone ahead and left a message, notifying the world that it was their doing!

They hadn't noticed the obvious words on the mountainside, because what was in front of them had been too stunning for them. The words on the mountainside were totally undisguised, but they had made the “[black under the light](#)” kind of mistake - they hadn't noticed the obvious place and made a foolish mistake.

“The Mu Clan is too arrogant, so we came and killed them on purpose; to anyone who wishes to know who did this, it was the great House of the Chaotic Storm!”

Below the words, there was a pattern of a building in the storm which was drawn intentionally with blood.

It was actually quite vivid. Obviously, after the killers wiped these people out, they actually drew a pattern here leisurely.

“This, this, this... this is so...”

A Blood guard was stunned, “It is so arrogant... This House of the Chaotic Storm... What is it?”

The steward’s face was blank, “Mind your words. Since there is no trace of our lord here, he wasn’t captured. We need to go back right away. It won’t bring any good to stay in such muddy waters.”

It could be seen from his face that he was far from relaxed; on the contrary, a deep sense of worry was plastered on his face.

[The House of the Chaotic Storm has finally showed up!

The most mysterious and terrifying force in the world.]

The steward was terrified.

When he saw the words “House of the Chaotic Storm”, he couldn’t stop his heart from beating heavily.

He was frightened! Not only was he unable to find his young master, he had even stumbled upon information about the House of the Chaotic Storm...

He felt rather upset as nothing seemed to go his way.

When they all returned home, they started to search around again. Although they had searched the whole capital, they failed to find any clues about Ye Xiao's whereabouts.

That night, the steward wasn't able to fall asleep.

The next day, they continued their search, yet it was still to no avail.

Not only were the people of the Ye Clan trying their best to search for Ye Xiao, Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang also sent a lot of people to help them find Ye Xiao.

People were worried, especially Zuo Wuji. After he had brought the jade ruyi home from the auction, he had earned a title of "a prodigal who returns is more precious than gold". That had really delighted him.

And all of this was only possible because of Ye Xiao's help. Now that Ye Xiao was missing, how could he not be worried.

Lord Lan was also worried. He kept his eyes widely opened and searched everywhere with his men. He had been searching for a

long time, but was yet to find even a single clue. It wouldn't be long before he would completely freak out!

“Why can't we find him!” Lan Langlang's eyes were bloodshot as he furiously yelled, “You're all useless garbage! Keep searching! Don't you even miss a rat's hole!”

“My lord, it's the Lord Sun's house in front...”

“Screw it! I don't care what lord he is. Get in and search!”

“My lord, it's the Lord Sun's home...”

“GET IN AND SEARCH!”

“What? Who dares to stop me? BEAT HIM UP! SMASH EVERYTHING... GET IN! AH, AH, AH, AH...”

...

After searching one street, he was caught and sent back home.

Did this moron come to help searching? Or did he just come to make trouble for his own family?

...

[‘black under the light’, 灯下黑, means people are not aware of the

events that distinctly occur around them.]

Chapter 61: Return

They had only started searching earlier this morning, but the reports impeaching General Lan had already piled up on the king's desk!

The king, of course, was furious about it, "Lan! Keep your baby son under control! Otherwise, I will use my law to do it for you!"

The Lan Clan was frightened, so they hurriedly sent people to drag their young lord back home.

As Lan Langlang was being dragged home, he struggled with his legs swinging and he kept shouting, "Get off me! I am looking for Xiao Xiao..."

Zuo Wuji was totally disdainful of his foolish acts, [It is just simply searching for someone, and you can actually make things look like you are confiscating somebody's property... Your head should have been cut off...]

The Prince Hua-Yang's house also heard that people were looking for Ye Xiao. The young princess immediately gave her order, and the guards in the house all got out to help search in the capital.

Three forces were working together in order to find Ye Xiao.

The young princess, Su Yeyue, hurried over to Ye Xiao's house with her maid.

"Found him?"

"Why have you still not found him yet?"

"Is there anything bad happening to him?"

"Is it possible that he's simply having too much fun at a brothel? So much that he can't even get himself to leave? Follow my lead!"

The girl gave her order with a shout and the brothels in the capital were all in bad luck. Every brothel was broken into and searched. All the clients were kicked out of their rooms and stood in a line in the gardens...

The clients were all disgraced. However, they felt less embarrassed when they saw that everyone else was naked too. What was there to feel ashamed about when everyone looked the same...

At the beginning, they instinctively raised their hands to cover their faces, because they could be identified by their face. They thought that it was better to cover the face, as the rest of their bodies were usually no different with others. However, after a while, some of them looked around and stopped covering their faces. Instead, they started to cover their crotches with shame. It turned out they were not entirely the same in some places of their body, and the difference was very obvious.

Of course, some other guys also stopped covering their faces, but they didn't cover their crotches either. They actually acted like they were swaggering around by standing there with legs astride. They looked proud. There were difference between two men not only in their faces, but also in some special place, and the difference was also very obvious...

Ahem, what exactly was so obvious? (I surely have no idea what it is, as I am an innocent person... I don't understand what this is all about...)

While the disturbance was spreading in the capital...

The young lord, Ye Xiao, whom everybody was looking for, finally returned.

On his way back, he found a silent place and reverted back to his true face. Although there were wounds on his face, Wen-Ren Chu-Chu hadn't hit him too heavily after all. Besides, the East-rising Purple Qi was truly a remarkable martial art. With its help, all of his wounds were nearly healed...

So the Xiao Monarch still retained his decency more or less...

Once he stepped in the street in front of his house, he heard a large amount of people cheering!

"The young lord is back! Our young lord is back!"

Those were his servants that were cheering.

"Lord Ye is back! Lord Ye is back!"

That was from the people of Zuo Xiang Fu and the people of the Palace of Hua-Yang.

"Thank god this fella is back. I can finally seize peace..."

That was from some other people. They felt lucky. They couldn't resist feeling lucky; after he was missing, their houses had been searched dozens of times every single day...

Who could bear such annoyance?

Whenever those people searching for Ye Xiao entered their houses, their doors would be opened with a thunderous sound and they would be forced to squat down.

That was really such an unbearable memory...

When Su Yeyue heard that Ye Xiao was back, she rushed out like a whirlwind and stood at the door akimbo, shouting angrily, "Where were you and what have you been doing! Bastard! Come over! I will teach you some lesson for real!"

Ye Xiao felt warm in his heart.

The girl was shouting with anger, but in her voice, her concern was easily discerned.

Besides, while shouting, her eyes had already turned red, and her mouth was twitching; it looked like she was about to cry...

At this moment, she was truly adorable!

Watching Ye Xiao walking over leisurely, she felt truly surprised, as she felt like she had recovered everything that she had lost. She suddenly rushed down from the doorsteps. Her small figure was about to run into Ye Xiao's arms. However, without any reason, she suddenly stopped!

She stopped at the place about half a meter away from Ye Xiao and looked at him. She spoke, "You... You are not a ghost, are you?"

She reached her hand to touch his body and then his face. She felt the warmth of his body and suddenly shouted, "You didn't die!"

She jumped up high.

And then the tears started to flow down.

These last two days in which Ye Xiao was missing, had truly been terrifying for this girl.

She had pretended to be calm at the beginning until she could no longer do so. Then she went out to search with her men, but she couldn't find anything.

In fact, although nobody gave up searching, most of the people had long lost hope!

Usually, they wouldn't worry. They knew that Ye Xiao could completely lose track of time while he was fooling around outside.

However, this time, it had been right when the Mu Clan was in the capital!

His biggest enemy was right outside, preparing to kill him!

In people's minds, Ye Xiao's disappearance must have something to do with the Mu Clan. However, those people of the Mu Clan were all dead... Ye Xiao was still missing!

They had searched the entire capital, but they had actually failed to find even a single clue.

Except assuming the worst situation, they didn't know what else to think.

When they were about to lose their hopes... he actually showed up from the corner of the street. He actually walked over calmly and leisurely.

The surprise brought by his appearance actually made people freak out.

"What are you talking about? Why would I die? I am totally fine!" Ye Xiao touched his nose and said. His heart felt warm. Although it was at dusk and the sun was setting, he actually felt good about the afterglow.

A feeling of "is it the close affection of the world" filled his heart.

"In such a special time, why were you still fooling around? Where the hell have you been?!" The princess, who had just relaxed, suddenly stopped feeling joyful; some negative emotions that were caused by her extreme anxiousness totally exploded. She shouted fiercely, "Do you even know what a special moment it is right now! Do you know we have nearly gone mad trying to find you! Do you know how dangerous it is! Do you know how much I care about you... Do you know..."

She shouted loudly while swinging her hands; almost half of the street could hear her clearly.

And then she suddenly paused. She stopped shouting. The next moment, she cried loudly. "WAH!" She jumped into Ye Xiao's arms and held him tightly. She quivered because of crying.

With a beauty in his arms, Ye Xiao turned stiff. His hands were hanging in the air, and he didn't know what to do.

A man with an EQ of zero was exactly like that; he completely had no idea how to deal with such situations!

A beauty threw herself on him... He hadn't experienced such a thing before - in both of his lives... Instantly, he felt anxiety overtaking him. He wanted to push her away, but he felt it was wrong to do so... In fact, he felt a certain hint of warmth in his heart; her actions had really moved him.

The next moment, a thought that had never occurred to him appeared in his mind, [In my present life, I am no longer cultivating the Pure Yang Martial Art. I don't need to fear that thing...]

And then he kept his arms open and watched Su Yeyue weeping in his arms. Her tears and snots were on his clothes, but he had a feeling of tender affection. He slowly... furled his arms.

Eventually, he held the small body in his arms slowly and firmly.

It was unprecedented; that was truly his first time in both his two lives to hold a woman so completely and so earnestly!

At this moment, his heart was beating wildly.

At the same time, a happy feeling of "possession" filled his heart.

That feeling was new and touching for him. It was a feeling that he couldn't let go and didn't want to let go. (Ahem. It is exactly what I felt when I first held my wife...)

Su Yeyue cried for a long time until she realized she was weeping in Ye Xiao's arms. She hastily pushed his arms away and wiped her eyes. She didn't dare to raise her head as she spoke with her face blushed, "Where am I..."

And then she turned around and ran into the house like a rabbit with her head low.

It was truly a scene of the saying: "keep silence like a virgin, run like a running rabbit". It was no doubt that the girl was a virgin, but the well-known Xiao Monarch was... also a virgin!

The girl actually felt embarrassed...

Ye Xiao shouted behind her, "Watch out! Watch your step! Don't run onto the wall..."

Su Yeyue's voice with shame and anger immediately came, "None of your business!" And then she disappeared.

The onlookers laughed with kindness. They even felt inspired by the pure affection between them.

"Off you go, guys..." Ye Xiao casually swung his hand, "Yes, I am back. I am fine... Heh, heh, heh... Be off now, please. Everything's

fine."

The steward hurriedly gave an order to a guard, "Go to the house of Lan and tell Lord Lan Langlang that our Lord Ye Xiao is back... Tell him not to worry."

The guard nodded his head and hurriedly left.

What if nobody informed Lan Langlang?! How many more stupid things could he possibly come up with...

Zuo Wuji stepped forward and laughed, "Xiao Xiao, now that you are back and safe, I guess I should just be off then. If not... hahahahaha... I am afraid I would get beaten up hard."

He made a weird laughter with an undetermined meaning. He then waved his hand and left with his men.

After seeing his best friend leave, Ye Xiao entered the house. The steward had his usual bright smile on his face until Ye Xiao entered, when his face instantly darkened, "My lord, your wounds..."

Ye Xiao swung his hands, "Nothing serious. I was captured. It took me quite some effort to get back..."

"Who dared to do so?" The steward turned furious.

[So even when there is no Mu Clan, there is still another force after our young lord?! This is something that should definitely be looked into more closely.]

"Hmm. About that... You don't need to worry..." Ye Xiao spoke, "I have turned them into friends. No. In fact, they weren't hostile to me at the beginning. Anyway, they are most likely off the capital already. It isn't worth mentioning anymore."

Chapter 62: The Genius Girl

Since Ye Xiao had said so, the steward didn't think that he should keep asking, so he just said, "My lord, do you know... those men of the Mu Clan are all dead..."

Ye Xiao promptly turned his head and exclaimed, "What? All dead? What's going on exactly? Do you know who did it?"

"It is confirmed." The steward frowned, "It must be the most mysterious organization in the world, the House of the Chaotic Storm... No one was left alive, and they even left some words for the world to see... It seems that the House of the Chaotic Storm is deliberately going against the Mu Clan?"

Ye Xiao immediately realized something.

[It seems that Xiu of the Heavens has really done it!]

She had actually done it without any reservations; she had completely wiped out the members of the Mu Clan that had entered the capital. She was decisive, heartless, cruel and powerful, all at the same time...

It really scared Ye Xiao.

"The House of the Chaotic Storm, which many thought to be only a myth, have really surfaced." Ye Xiao murmured. His eyes lit up as he recalled the day when he had chased those men to the

mountain...

The bamboo forest...

It must have something to do with the House of the Chaotic Storm.

[Sometime in the future, when the sky is clear and dry, I'll take some gasoline and burn that bloody bamboo forest down... Let me see what can be lured out of it...]

When he returned to his garden, he saw Su Yeyue sitting in the pavilion, resting her jaw on her hands. She was gazing at the moon in the sky.

Ye Xiao walked over gently and sat opposite to her.

The girl looked at the moon and said, "Xiao-Xiao, do you ever wonder... if there are people on the moon?"

Ye Xiao replied, "I suppose so. According to the myths, a goddess lives there, Chang-Er, right?"

The girl answered with a "hmm" and said, "Xiao-Xiao, you got me so worried."

Ye Xiao smiled warmly, "Don't worry. Who am I? I'll always be ok."

Su Yeyue nodded softly and said, “You’re fine now... but, I was really scared...”

She became silent for a while, before suddenly speaking out in high spirits, “Xiao-Xiao, you didn’t go to the auction the other day! What a pity! I was there and it not only opened my eyes, I even gained something. It is a book, the Sword Art of Feng-Hua. It’s a marvelous sword technique! I can be a superior cultivator from now on...”

“The Sword Art of Feng-Hua? Is it really that powerful?” Ye Xiao frowned, “Let me have a look.”

Generally, this kind of request was inappropriate. If Steward Song was present, he would have definitely stopped him straight away. The martial art books that were qualified enough to be sold at the high-level auction of the Ling-Bao Hall were at least high-grade books. Anyway, he was still the Xiao Monarch inside, so he only intended to identify the book. Even with his greedy eyes, he wouldn’t spare it a glance. As for the girl...

Of course she wouldn’t mind.

She grinned before taking out a book from inside her clothes and giving it to Ye Xiao. Only now did Ye Xiao notice the elegant sword placed on the stone chair beside her.

[It seems that this girl is really interested in martial arts. I wonder whether the book is the complete version or if it’s only an

unfinished work.] Ye Xiao wondered and asked, “Yeyue, what level have you reached in your cultivation?”

Su Yeyue turned a bit bashful as she answered, “About the 7th level of the Mortal Origin Stage...”

“Level 7. The Mortal Origin Stage...” Ye Xiao nodded and felt a bit surprised. As a spoiled princess in the Palace of Hua-Yang, she had actually reached the seventh level of the Mortal Origin Stage. This was already quite impressive. So he said, “Did you start cultivating since you were a kid?”

“Nah...” Su Yeyue hesitated, but she decided to continue, “My father has been fighting on the battlefield his entire life, so he didn’t want me to learn any martial arts. He thinks that a girl lacks delicacy if she decides to practice any kind of martial arts. I have always been interested in it though. Since two years ago, I started to learn something from the guards of my house... Well, I have to keep it a secret and not let my father notice. So I am doing ‘[three days fishing, two days drying nets](#)’; I only practice occasionally. Sigh... it is a pity that the guard who taught me the cultivating method died in a battle not long after the last lesson...”

Ye Xiao was shocked!

[What?

Two years ago?

Taught by a guard?

Practiced secretly?

‘Three days fishing, two days drying nets’?!

And she actually reached the seventh level of the Mortal Origin Stage in two years?

Is she a monster or something?]

With a record like that, she could be counted as a person having a fine aptitude but not outstanding in the Qing-Yun Realm. However, they were living in the Land of Han-Yang. With such an achievement, it might not be enough to call her a genius among geniuses!

And she was cultivating without her parent’s permission; she practiced secretly; she cultivated from time to time...

That meant no one was guiding her!

At the first place, the guard that had been teaching her had already died in battle... That meant the guard only had an average aptitude in cultivation. How could the cultivating method used by such a man be any good?

Under all these negative conditions, she had been cultivating on

her own and had actually achieved the seventh level of the Mortal Origin Stage.

This was just inconceivable!

The Xiao Monarch was really astonished!

He nearly wanted to believe that the person in front of him was a monster!

“What’s wrong?” Su Yeyue noticed that Ye Xiao had become silent, so she hastily asked, “Am I too slow? Am I too weak? My father had always said that I have no talent in cultivation, that I am not qualified for cultivation...”

Ye Xiao’s mouth quivered, [What? No talent in cultivation? Not qualified for cultivation?

What the hell... If you are not qualified for cultivation, then there won’t be any people qualified for cultivation.]

Ye Xiao wasn’t born in a noble clan in his previous life; he had been an orphan. After he had luckily gained the Pure Yang Martial Art, his cultivation speed was praised as ‘[one day, a thousand miles](#)’ by his master. He was even compared to a peerless genius that was seen once every ten thousand years!

However, now that he learned about Su Yeyue, he finally realized that there was always someone better in the world. Su Yeyue’s

aptitude should be at least superior to his aptitude in his previous life.

“I think cultivation suits you.” The Xiao Monarch said, “Come on. Let me check your aptitude.”

After speaking, he immediately held her hands.

Honestly, he really had no intention to take advantage of her. He just wanted to know more about the monster-like genius sitting in front of him!

Her hands were cool and soft like jade. The East-rising Purple Qi instantly operated, and a tiny but long stream of spiritual power ran around her entire Jing and Mai.

And then Ye Xiao loosened her hands and laughed bitterly.

He laughed bitterly out of amazement and self-mockery. If he had already been a genius that was rarely seen in even ten thousand years, then how were people to describe her aptitude? Rarely seen monster? Immoral and against nature itself? He couldn't believe that her aptitude was much better than what he had expected.

In terms of aptitude, she was better than Ye Xiao in his previous life, and she was no less than the outstanding Wenren Chuchu that he had just met - in fact, she was even better than Wenren Chuchu. However, she had never had a good teacher and had been cultivating all by herself. She had gone through many unnecessary

paths that had damaged her Jing and Mai...

However, this damage was almost negligible in Ye Xiao's eyes.

[Female body of Spiritual Yin. Natural-born superior Jing and Mai. Bones of pure Yin. The Jing and Mai are like rivers. This body is totally a perfect body for a cultivator...] Ye Xiao sighed, [If a person like her was in the Qing-Yun Realm, even the two super sects will fight so hard to have her as their inheritor! The interesting thing is that in the Land of Han-Yang, her father actually forbids her from cultivating, and he has told her that she was unqualified for cultivation...]

This time, Ye Xiao had truly understood several words: [a reckless waste of god's good gifts, the pearls were covered by dust!](#)

This was mind blowing!

“Close your eyes. I will give you a present...” Ye Xiao spoke gently.

“What present?” She was embarrassed and happy at the same time. It was the first time she would receive something from Ye Xiao. She closed her eyes as he told her to.

“Open your mouth.”

“Ahh~”

The next moment, she felt warmth within her mouth as a round dan bead was placed on her tongue. It quickly dissolved into a fluid, passed through her throat and went into her stomach. She was flurried and suddenly felt a fragrance spread inside her mouth. When she was about to carefully taste it, the fluid had already turned into some kind of hot qi which was flowing throughout her entire body, including her Jing and Mai.

She felt an indescribable sense of comfort spreading all throughout her body.

She immediately opened her eyes, “Wow? It feels so good! What was it? Why was it so tasty? Do you have more?”

Apparently, she wanted a second bite after enjoying the taste.

It was understandable for a little girl to have such an idea! However, she didn’t know that all the negative influence in her Jing and Mai had completely vanished after eating that tiny dan bead!

In fact, it had even strengthened her!

Ye Xiao could only smile bitterly.

He asked her to close her eyes, and then he placed a Pei-Yuan Dan Bead into her mouth in order to help her wipe the illnesses inside her body. He had good intentions, but the girl actually wanted to

eat the dan beads like sweets. That was a bit over the top. Although he was capable of providing her with more of these “sweets” since he had the powerful Spaces under his control, it would still be quite a waste.

“No. That’s the only one.” Ye Xiao threw his hands high up in the air.

At the moment, there were still some things he couldn’t let the girl know.

If the girl had a big mouth and spread the information about, there would never be another day of peace for him.

“So tasty.” Su Yeyue licked her lips to enjoy the endless aftertastes and regrettably said, “If there are more of this kind of tasty beans, then I can eat eighty or a hundred everyday... I would never think that it is too much.”

Ye Xiao was speechless. [Taking the undeserved gain for granted; what a girl.

Eighty or a hundred everyday?

That is truly...]

The next moment, the girl suddenly frowned, “Oh no. Pain in my belly...” She jumped up and looked around, “No, no, no, no, no...” And then she left rapidly.

Ye Xiao furrowed his brows; he had actually forgotten about this...

‘three days fishing, two days drying nets’ :- It is a metaphorical description of people who lacks perseverance and don’t persist on doing things.]

‘one day, a thousand miles’: 一日千里, literally means traveling a thousand miles within one day. It means something is very fast or happens very quickly.]

‘reckless waste of god’s good gifts’:- means a big waste of something very valuable. ‘The pearls were covered by dust’ means a good thing is neglected making it hard to be discovered like the pearl being covered by dust. (暴殄天物, 明珠蒙尘)]

Chapter 63: Silly Girl; The Sword Art ff Feng-Hua

The Pei-Yuan Dan Bead would not only clean the impurities inside her body, it would also strengthen her organs... Su Yeyue felt a sharp pain in her belly almost immediately; it was quite a quick reaction. It was proof that her aptitude for cultivation was exceptional.

After all, what she experienced was not the ablution of muscles and bones.

In the time it took for an incense stick to burn, faint footsteps indicated Su Yeyue's return. She groaned and complained, "Xiao-Xiao... you had given me a cathartic pill, right? It seriously made me feel ill..."

"No, I didn't. Take some rest and you will be fine. You will feel refreshed in just a few seconds..." Ye Xiao smiled as he spoke.

He wasn't just comforting her. She had suddenly expelled a massive amount of impurities from her body. It would surely cause her body functions to be disrupted for a short period of time, but it was a part of the self-adjustment process. After a few hours, the process would end, and all the discomfort would be dispelled. Afterwards, the advantages of expelling the impurities would become evident.

"Well, I better go home then... My stomach feels really terrible. It won't look decent if I stayed here." Su Yeyue answered faintly.

“Don’t worry. Just spend the night over here.” Ye Xiao persuaded her, “I have already sent my men to inform your father. Besides, I won’t be at ease if you were to go back like this.”

She was looking really ill at the beginning, but when she heard Ye Xiao’s words, she immediately felt a little refreshed. She gave a grin so wide that her canines became visible, “Are you really worried about me?”

If it was Wenren Chuchu who was asked to stay overnight, she would instantly become worried about her reputation. This girl, on the other hand, was actually concerned about his sincerity. Ye Xiao sweated and nodded, “Yes, I do.”

“Fair enough.” Su Yeyue’s mind was pure like crystal water. She didn’t even think of how inappropriate it would be if she were to stay overnight. Instead, she spoke happily, “Then you should quickly prepare a room for me... I am going to rest. And I also need to take a bath. I should go to bed quickly, as I am so tired and sleepy.”

As she had been anxious during the past few days, she was indeed exhausted.

...

It was midnight.

Ye Xiao sat on his bed, legs-crossed as usual, while operating the East-rising Purple Qi. He was concentrating on his cultivation. This time, he was controlling the scorching hot power of the East-rising Purple Qi, so his entire body was shrouded by a mist of hot qi.

After the preparation was completed, he took out three pieces of the Sky Crystal Sand which he had purchased in the auction and held them in his hand.

The dense, scorching hot power of the East-rising Purple Qi suddenly gathered at the center of his palm!

Ye Xiao felt like he was creating a micro-sun in the palm of his hand.

Beads of sweat started to gather on his forehead as he rapidly operated the energy with all of his efforts, trying to complete this micro-sun as soon as possible.

The pieces of Sky Crystal Sand laying in his hand were slowly rotating while they were being enveloped by the scorching hot power of the East-rising Purple Qi. It could be faintly seen that, while the Sky Crystal Sand pieces had turned red hot, they were not really melting.

It was unbelievable that the [Real Soul Fire](#), which originated from the East-rising Purple Qi, and was the top-class power in the world, actually failed to melt the Sky Crystal Sand!

Ye Xiao breathed out in a rush and his entire body felt weak. He stopped operating the martial art and returned the Sky Crystal Sand pieces. He murmured, “My cultivation is insufficient... I am unable to melt it.”

His plan this time was to melt the Sky Crystal Sand pieces and create a weapon for himself that he could properly use in his current condition. However, in spite of doing his best, it still couldn't be done, so he had to give up.

“To melt the Sky Crystal Sand, in terms of the general martial arts, even for the extremely high-level fire-attribute martial arts, it would require a cultivator to be at the eighth level of the Earth Origin Stage at the very least. However, the East-rising Purple Qi is not some random martial art... Even though I failed this time, I think that I will be able to melt the Sky Crystal Sand once I reach the third level...”

Ye Xiao breathed out, “I can do nothing at the moment after all... I have no choice but to wait till I reach the third level of the Earth Origin Stage and see what happens then.”

He then grabbed the book of Sword Art of Feng-Hua that Su Yeyue had purchased in the auction. After examining it, he felt a bit speechless.

It was exactly what he had expected. This book of the Sword Art of Feng-Hua was only a fragmented version, as the missing information would amount to far more than “just a bit”...

If she had followed this book to practice, with her peerless aptitude, she might achieve a lot, but eventually, she would most likely stop improving after reaching the Sky Origin Realm. Plus, it was possible that certain long lasting side effects would appear.

“Well, let me complete it for you.” Ye Xiao had travelled all over the world, so his understanding of martial arts was truly broad and profound. There were so many books of martial arts imprinted in his brain. The Sword Art of Feng-Hua wasn’t some high-class swordplay method. Let alone this fragmented book, even if it was the full version, it would merely be one of the “first grade” level books.

No matter what, it was surely far from “supreme”.

However, he had to complete the book with the Sword Art of Feng-Hua as the base. Otherwise, if it drew attention, he would become the target of everyone’s greed!

Ye Xiao was always cautious about it.

After he finished the book, Ye Xiao thought for quite a while and then integrated a copy of “Scripture of Yin” into it.

Among all the arts known by Ye Xiao, it was the premier martial art for girls to practice.

...

The next morning, Su Yeyue, who had spent all night in General Ye's house, jumped over to Ye Xiao with a face filled with excitement and surprise.

"Xiao-Xiao!" She leaned towards Ye Xiao and exclaimed, "Look at me! Look at me!"

"What's wrong?" Ye Xiao looked at her pretty face with a "what are you talking about?" look on his face. He felt confused.

"Ahhya... You pig!" Su Yeyue pouted, and then she was back in good-spirits as she once again pointed to her own face and said, "Look at me again carefully. Take a closer look."

Ye Xiao carefully inspected her face and said, "Why don't you tell me what exactly is going on?"

This remark caused Su Yeyue to feel discouraged and spoke angrily, "Haven't you noticed that my facial skin has become better?"

Ye Xiao shook his head blankly, "No, I haven't. Is it really better now?"

Su Yeyue immediately felt depressed.

She woke up early this morning to freshen and dress herself up, but when she looked into the mirror, she noticed that something was different - really different. She found that her skin had

acquired a rosy glow; it was both pinker and whiter. She felt that she had become extremely beautiful, to the point where she wasn't even sure if she was awake or dreaming.

Most importantly, there used to be some dark spots on her face, but at that moment, they had completely vanished.

Facing such an astonishing change, she was naturally extremely excited, so she rushed to Ye Xiao in order to show off. However, she wouldn't have imagined that this guy would actually fail to notice any difference...

“You are a complete moron!” She was really upset.

However, she was also thinking, [How come after sleeping here for just one night, my face has become so beautiful? Could it be... could Ye Xiao's house actually be a wonderful place for beautification?]

Although she didn't speak out, she had made up her mind, [In the future, I will definitely come here to sleep as often as I can.

Humph! It is going to be my home sooner or later!]

She grabbed her copy of Sword Art of Feng-Hua quickly, hung her head low and left grouchily.

She wasn't aware about the changes that had been made to her incomplete copy of the Sword Art of Feng-Hua. Although Ye Xiao

hadn't completely changed everything, he had changed a massive amount of details...

In fact, after she had gained the Sword Art of Feng-Hua, before she had time to check it out carefully, news of Ye Xiao's disappearance reached her ears. That was also the reason why she kept the book with her all the time.

If she had read it even once, with her eidetic memory, she wouldn't really need to keep it by her side. As such, even though she would read it and practice with it, she would never find out that the contents had been changed.

At the moment, a voice from outside reported, "My lord, people from the Palace of Hua-Yang have arrived, and they are saying that they have come with the order to take the princess back."

"Alright then." Ye Xiao answered casually.

A long time after the girl left the house of Ye, Ye Xiao started panicking, [Oh no! Am I going to be caught telling a lie?]

Last night, Ye Xiao told her that he had sent people to inform the Palace of Hua-Yang about her staying overnight. In fact, he had never done that...

...

When she went back to the palace, without a doubt, she was

severely scolded.

“That was not presentable. That was unacceptable!” Prince Hua-Yang was furious. He was utterly frustrated as if his most precious treasure was snatched by someone else. He scolded her while stomping his feet, “You are an unmarried girl. You had actually stayed overnight in your intended husband’s house... You, you... you... you damn girl. You are trying to piss me off! Are you not?!”

She kept her head low as she listened to him, but her expression showed indifference.

[Dad is always like this. He likes to make a fuss.]

“You. You are going to completely disgrace me!” Prince Hua-Yang paced around, trying to find some tool for punishment, but how could he bear to see any of these tools being used on his precious daughter? So, eventually, he felt his anger and depression reaching new heights; his pace became faster.

After a long time, she stood up and patted down the dirt on her knees, and then she went into the inner house with a smile on her face...

Prince Hua-Yang gave out a long sigh. He felt that he was incompetent and had failed as a father. He had scolded his daughter severely, but he had only made her smile...

“Mom, let me tell you a big secret.” Su Yeyue cuddled in her

mother's arms and spoke in a whisper.

“What big secret?” The old princess asked with interest.

“Well the secret is... I had slept overnight in Xiao-Xiao's house. This morning when I woke up, I found my skin had become delicately smooth...” Su Yeyue started flattering herself, “Mom, look at my face, isn't it much more exquisite? Isn't it smoother? My facial skin is much better, isn't it? That is a big secret, isn't it?!”

After the old princess heard the big secret, her expression changed quickly. She stared at her daughter with a pale face. It was as if she had been struck by lightning, “Slept overnight... Skin became better? That, that...”

The princess was quite well-informed. She naturally knew that generally, before a girl got married, her skin would not be in the best condition.

The time that a girl's skin became radiant was right after she got married and was moistened by the rain and dew... The several years following that was the period of time when a girl was in her most beautiful condition.

Now that she heard Su Yeyue say so, the thoughts of the princess went in the wrong direction, [This silly girl hadn't come home for a whole night. Did she actually do that thing with that guy Ye Xiao?

That, that... that... Damn it...]

“What exactly did you two do?” The princess turned green in the face, “You, you... You damn girl! How dare you do such a disgraceful thing! You are going to piss me off to death...”

Su Yeyue was surprised after seeing her mother’s reaction. Her eyes were wide opened, and she looked very confused, “What disgraceful thing? I... I didn’t...”

...

[It seems the scorching hot power he was using in his hand is called the Real Soul Fire (真元之火).]

Chapter 64: It's Predetermined Here Comes The Trouble

No matter what explanation the silly girl gave, the old princess still checked her body. Finally, she realized that things were unlike what she had imagined; her thoughts had gone astray from too much worry...

Now, she felt relieved.

[However... Humph!

Her skin turned so exquisite after staying over for just one night...Even if that kind of 'thing' didn't happen, other things must have definitely happened...Otherwise, how can a girl suddenly become so radiant?

If these 'other things' kept on happening, then that thing, which I am most concerned about, will happen eventually...

Although the two kids have already been engaged for a long time... such laughable things should never be allowed to happen!]

The old princess made up her mind.

Therefore, it didn't come as a surprise to anyone when Su Yeyue was grounded.

She had been raising hell in her room for days, but she still failed to get rid of the restrictions. She was extremely upset!

She had never thought that she would actually be grounded, not even in her dreams.

And of course, she didn't know that... it was purely because of that single sentence which she had said to show off.

She would only get to know about this... in the very distant future...

...

It was inside the bamboo forest enclosed by the mountains.

"Xiu-Er has made a reckless move this time. Please punish me." Xiu-Er, who was dressed in white, lowered her head and stood in front of the man who was also dressed in white, and was sitting on a wheelchair.

The man in white sighed with his eyes half-closed and said, "Xiu-Er... Your actions have done a lot of damage to our plan this time... The Mu Clan has suffered greatly from this event. Now, they will never dare to return to the capital even if we don't take the initiative to attack them."

Xiu-Er kept her head low, "Yes."

"However, that Mu Zihe actually dared to abuse you. He deserved this. It was righteous that he died." The man in white smile blandly, "Whatever. I had been planning to make use of the event involving the House of Ye to produce some disturbances in this world... Now that this plan has been suspended, it doesn't really seem to be a bad development."

"Yes."

"But your actions have really helped the House of Ye. It has given the House of Ye a relief from being deeply troubled and helpless..." The man in white frowned, "What happened... superficially speaking, it seems everything was reasonably driven with some coincidences... But I feel that there was someone acting as a go-between, adding fuel to the fire, so as to make sure that this would happen."

Xiu-Er kept her head low and spoke, "If there was truly someone doing so, it must be that guy, Feng Zhiling."

"Feng Zhiling..." The man in white smiled blandly, "Investigate him thoroughly!"

"Yes."

"By the way, pay attention to the war affairs of the three kingdoms. Instigate the war as soon as possible." The man in white spoke with a profound look in his eyes, "As long as we, the House of the Chaotic Storm shows up, the overthrowing of the royal

court must follow... This time, you revealed our identity. Maybe it was destiny..."

"Only the removal of the dynasties can produce enough bloodshed to bolster my recovery... Seize the opportunity."

"Yes."

"Xiu-Er, you take charge of instigating the problems between the three kingdoms, make the war start as soon as possible."

"Yes."

"Wan-Er."

"Yes, master."

"After the auction, those dan-makers would have gone back to their sects by now, right?"

"Yes. You are speculating things accurately, master."

"Hmm. But most of the other people from those sects haven't gone back, right?"

"Yes."

"These men are staying here so that they can associate with the noble clans or even the royal clan, right?"

"Yes. You have sharp eyes, master."

"This is not something special. These guys would never turn back without gaining some profits every time they leave their territories. These noble clans, officials and royal clans are exactly those who could offer them the profits they want."

There seemed to be a sense of disdain on his face. He sneered as he continued, "In fact, this world is truly weird. The noble clans regard the royal clan as a foolish entity, while those sects think that the people of the noble clans are fools. In the meantime, the royal clan considers the other two to be fools. It is like a bunch of fools playing a recurrent stupid game..."

"The noble clans are using the royal clan. They are using the power of the royal clan to ensure their lifestyle and the continuation of their bloodlines... In their eyes, the royal clan is nothing but a tool that they can manipulate as they please..."

"The sects think that the noble clans have no future... that they are still struggling to continue their bloodlines... since they have been struggling for thousands of years for nothing but the continuity of their ethnicity... So the noble clans are fools in the sects' eyes."

"The royal clan think that they are holding supreme power and when it's needed, they can unite with the noble clans to fight

against the sects, or use the sects to suppress the noble clans. They think that they could get an advantage from both sides and claim the maximum profit for themselves. So they see both the sects and the noble clans as tools and fools..."

"However, in my opinion... in this world, these three stupid forces are merely maintaining the stupid balance..."

He spoke blandly, but had a profound look in his eyes, "So, as long as the unstable balance is broken, it will instantly turn into a situation where the current dynasty will be suppressed... No matter what, the present situation in the Land of Han-Yang is destined to lose its balance."

"A new dynasty will definitely rise and naturally, the previous dynasty will fall!"

After talking so much, he seemed a bit tired, so he leaned on his wheelchair and spoke slowly, "How to break the balance... Wan-Er, it's up to you."

"Yes, master. The maid understands."

"Hmm, have you settled on a plan?"

"The maid knows that as long as we kill one or two of the important characters of those sects that are in the capital... and plant some false trails... then the balance of the sects will be broken. Afterwards, we will draw the noble clans into the

disturbance within the sects. When that happens, the royal clan will surely become involved... After that, no matter what the consequence will be, the balance will surely be broken, and massive cracks would have shown up for us to exploit."

"However, only after the end result can we decide our next move."

The man in white nodded with satisfaction, "Your strategy is quite good. That is how it should be. However, you missed something. There are still wise men in the royal clan. The royal clan is the source of all disasters..."

He spoke with his eyes half-closed, "As for the present Kingdom of Chen, the ruling king is a bit too old... and the crown prince is a bit too impatient... because the other two princes have grown up and are ready to do something..."

"The disturbance should begin with this. It was the most..."

When speaking about this, he suddenly stopped and didn't continue.

But Wan-Er's eyes lit up when she spoke, "Yes. Thank you for the enlightenment, master. This maid knows what to do now."

"Hmm. Don't call yourself 'the maid' in front of me from now on. I feel uncomfortable hearing that." The man in white looked at Wan-Er and Xiu-Er gently and said, "Just use your names."

Ecstasy flashed in both of their eyes at the same time. A blush appeared on their cheeks, as they answered, "Wan-Er/Xiu-Er complies with your wish."

"Break the balance, then the dynasty changes. In a very short time, a new balance will be formed..." The man in white observed the clouds floating up in the sky and spoke blandly, "Disturbance, it is as simple as that."

...

While all of this was going on, on the other side of the capital, Ye Xiao was wasting no time in order to cultivate.

...

The capital was a lot more peaceful. The Prince's Palace stopped seeking further troubles. As for the Crown Princess, since the death of those people from the Mu Clan, she had been completely silent...

On the surface, it seemed that everything had been settled down and all the conflicts had reached a conclusion.

However, there was one place that was still enveloped in chaos.

The Ling-Bao Hall Salesroom!

People including Guan Wanshan were so worried that they almost wanted to hang themselves!

Everyone wore an anxious expression.

The big boss of Ling-Bao Hall had actually come to the Chen-Xing City.

The first thing Wan Zhenghao said when he arrived in front of the salesroom was, "My Cosmic Hades... You didn't sell it, right?"

He asked it in haste!

It was an extremely urgent issue!

He didn't even give any conventional greetings to Guan Wanshan. He just walked in front of him and started asking questions.

Guan Wanshan was immediately dumbfounded.

[What does the big boss mean with that?

We didn't even want to introduce it to the auction in the first place. It was you who demanded us to try to sell it out in every big auction. We had to sell it out no matter what price it cost... in case it humiliates you.

Now we just got this "hot potato" sold, yet you came right away to ask such a question.

What does it mean?]

"It has been sold." He composed himself and answered gingerly.

"Sold?" The big boss's, Wan Zhenghao's body, quivered a little as his face suddenly turned pale. At this moment, he felt like he was about to lose control of his bowels.

"To whom?" A man in black closely following the big boss suddenly stepped forward and asked indifferently.

This man had never accompanied the big boss before.

So people felt strange when they saw him.

But when he spoke, the big boss quivered a bit. Even his expression became terrified.

Was this guy in a much higher social position than the big boss?

Then who was this guy?

"It was the man who took out the supreme dan... He bought the

Cosmic Hades..." Guan Wanshan was perceptive and realized the seriousness of this situation, "His name is Feng Zhiling..."

He had just finished his words when he saw the big boss's fat body quivering. The big boss's white and fat face suddenly turned grey.

"That is over..."

The man in black beside him frowned and asked, "Can we still find that guy now?"

"Yes. We absolutely can." Guan Wanshan confidently answered, "Because after the auction, he didn't take all the money he had earned. He saved most of it in the salesroom... Even if he doesn't come to sell his supreme dan anymore, he will still definitely come to collect the money."

Guan Wanshan smiled blandly, "Nobody will give up such a big amount of money. Besides, he is short of money at the moment, so he won't give it up."

Wan Zhenghao and the man in black sighed with relief at the same time. They laughed and spoke in a chorus, "That's good. That's good!"

"Well since it's like this, I think we should live in Chen-Xing City for some time. We can leave whenever we get back the Cosmic Hades." The man in black made a decision straight away.

Chapter 65: Cultivate with Great Concentration

The big boss nodded, his action resembling a chicken pecking grains, "Yes, yes, yes."

And then they all entered the salesroom.

While walking, the man in black casually inquired, "The Cosmic Hades, what price was it sold for?"

Guan Wanshan answered humbly, "250 thousand."

"250 thousand?" The man in black was stunned. He showed an extremely weird smile and asked, "Gold?"

"Ahem. Not gold. Silver." Guan Wanshan replied.

"Khoff, khak, khak, khak..." The man in black had a coughing fit. The continuous coughs made his face turn red. After coughing for a while, he started to laugh loudly.

Wan Zhenghao's big fat face suddenly turned into the color of a pork's liver!

"Brilliant! Truly brilliant!" The man in black gave a thumbs up and raised it to the nose of Wan Zhenghao, "Even selling the entire Land of Han-Yang would never be enough to exchange for half of

that Cosmic Hades, yet you sold it for just 250 thousand taels of silver... Wan Zhenghao, in the entire universe, only you can absolutely claim the title of the super No. 1 black sheep! You cannot decline to shoulder this title because you fully deserve it!"

Wan Zhenghao felt humiliated, and his face was completely red. He felt too ashamed to show his face, and so, he had no choice other than to lower his head.

However, the man in black clearly didn't want to let it go.

"Such thoughtless wastage is obviously indescribable and tremendous." The man in black shook his head and sighed, "It is a dissipation that could lead to chaos and darkness! It is really a high-class dissipation that could darken the moon and stars!"

Behind him, Guan Wanshan, who was following them up the stairs, happened to overhear this conversation. His sight turned dark as he sat heavily on the stone step.

[What did I hear?

Was it an illusion? Were my ears out of order? Or am I actually dreaming!]

....

Ye Xiao surely wasn't aware that the salesroom would be waiting for him and had set up a massive trap ready to be sprung at any

time. At the same time, he had planned to return to the salesroom and claim his money after everything settled down.

As of now, he was cultivating like a madman. After all, it was of utmost importance that his strength improves.

Since he had some free time, he kept devouring all kinds of knowledge.

As for the strange Space inside his body, he was using it extremely efficiently!

There was another reason why he was working so hard. In the last few days, he had realized something, something that was so serious that he didn't know whether it was good or bad.

Because of this "something", he was more unwilling to go out.

Because...

Inside the Sky Space, the Cosmic Hades, which was recently added, was truly powerful. It was way too powerful. The frost qi it was emitting was getting thicker and thicker, showing no signs of dissipation. Because it was too powerful, it had already made a severe impact on the other Spaces.

The Nine Spaces, by their nature, always restricted each other. The Spaces complemented each other and it maintained a delicate balance. However, if one of them was far too powerful, to the point

that it was beyond the summation of the power of the other eight, the balance would naturally be nonexistent. And right now, that was exactly what was happening. The Sky Space was too powerful, and it seriously broke the balance of the Spaces.

Ye Xiao clearly felt that the other Spaces were showing signs of suppression.

Together, the eight Spaces actually failed to match the power of the frost qi released by the Cosmic Hades.

If the situation kept on proceeding in this direction, where only the Sky Space remained powerful and the other Spaces became unable to restrict it, the balance between them would be completely broken. There could only be a single outcome - the Sky Space, which held the frost attribute, would absorb the other Spaces.

This was without a doubt the last thing that Ye Xiao wanted to happen. With no other options available, he had to personally enter the Spaces and use the blue gelid qi of the East-rising Purple Qi as the temporary bridge to transport the frost qi of the Cosmic Hades to the outer world!

[No matter how overbearing you are, you're just some frost qi of the Cosmic Hades, I will get you out of my Spaces to the outer world. After that, you won't be able to destroy my Spaces anymore, will you!]

He had no choices left except for that one last option. With the

experience from his previous life, he knew that it was rather risky to do so. The East-rising Purple Qi was the marvelous martial art created by the nature of heaven and earth, but Ye Xiao was inferior in cultivation at the moment. He doesn't have the least bit of certainty whether he could withstand the frost qi of the Cosmic Hades.

That was some incredible power that even the other eight Spaces together could not compete against. Besides, even if the East-rising Purple Qi was extremely powerful and could withstand the frost qi, during the transport, it was Ye Xiao's body which needed to bear the impact of acting as the temporary carrier and bridge. With the current condition of his body, could he bear with it for long enough?

However, Ye Xiao could only put all these thoughts aside. The current situation was so serious that his only option was to take this risk!

In fact, it started out as a smooth process when he began drawing out the frost qi.

More than that, after being extremely frightened, Ye Xiao was so astonished that he nearly dropped his jaws to the ground.

The East-rising Purple Qi was truly domineering. The powerful frost qi didn't have any influence on it. Moreover, after Ye Xiao drew out the frost qi and started transferring it inside his Jing and Mai, he realized something...

[What the hell!

How come my gelid qi is showing signs of improvement?

The improvement is tiny, inconspicuous, but it certainly has improved for real!

Is it really possible for such a good thing to happen?]

While he was feeling surprised, he casually drew more of the frost qi and tried to test his observation.

Unexpectedly, something changed. - Boom!- The Spaces "found" this "outlet", pushing all the accumulated frost qi towards this point.

What happened was that Ye Xiao became the only path to lighten the pressure produced by the frost qi.

Ye Xiao's original intention was to join in and gradually release the pressure on the other eight Spaces. He was trying to draw away the frost qi gradually and steadily, however, perhaps the other eight Spaces were too exhausted after being pressured by the Sky Space, that they, without any delay, started to push the frost qi to the outlet they just discovered.

This was killing Ye Xiao. He suddenly felt like he had fallen into a ten thousand years old ice cave. He was almost frozen into an ice sculpture.

However, in such an extremely cold atmosphere, he suddenly realized that the East-rising Purple Qi had actually become more active!

The entirety of his Jing and Mai also began operating automatically!

The frost qi released by the Cosmic Hades could actually enhance the cultivation of his gelid qi by a massive amount!

When Ye Xiao realized this, he was instantly overjoyed. He entered the super intense full-cultivating mode during which he would neither eat nor drink. In order to do so, he "invaded and occupied" the watchtower of the House of Ye!

Because the territory of General Ye lacked any tall trees. The top of the watchtower was the place which was the closest to the sun.

Ye Xiao gave the order that he would temporarily take over a sentry post on the watchtower.

Everyday after that, as a precaution against getting recognized by others, he would wear the clothes worn by the guards' and sit in the watchtower with his legs crossed!

He enjoyed the sunlight at daytime and absorbed the nimbus of the moon at night.

He kept on cultivating throughout the day and night without rest!

After a few days, all of the people in the Chen-Xing City felt that this summer had lost its heat.

The powers of yin and yang complemented each other.

Things would develop in a certain direction when the situation became extreme; the power of yang rose when the power of yin reached an extreme.

Under the great influence of the frost qi and Ye Xiao's intake of heat through the sun, the strength of the East-rising Purple Qi reached an abnormal level!

The frost qi inside the Spaces rushed into his Jing and Mai with a crazy impetus, even the yang qi from the world rushed into him with identical frenzy!

Usually, when he cultivated the gelid qi, he needed to absorb the yang qi into his body and use some martial art method to transform it, but now, he didn't need to do that anymore.

Now that he had skipped the most demanding step, he just concentrated on absorbing the yang qi to defuse the frost qi. With that, his cultivation was truly boosted at a tremendous pace!

Along with the massive increase of the yin qi, the yang qi

increased at the same time. With the exceptional East-rising Purple Qi, there was bound to be no disharmony of yin and yang. The gelid qi rapidly improved and the power of Yang increased along with it. The power of Yang was never left behind that of the yin at any time.

After Ye Xiao entered the Spaces and took action, it only took one day to free the Nine Spaces from imbalance and breakdown and restore the usual balance. The extra frost qi kept flowing through Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai!

He just felt like his body was a repeating... Hmm, in the modern world, it would be a repeating progress bar.

The first level of the Earth Origin Stage!

The progress bar was slowly filling up, but it was at a visible speed. Gradually... it reached the middle, and then the end...

-BOOM!- He felt like his body had turned into some nebula; he felt weightless and comfortable.

And then another line in his Jing and Mai was suddenly split wide open. The second progress bar which represented the second level of the Earth Origin Realm appeared along with it. And then it slowly filled up... to the middle... the end... - BOOM! -

Level 3!

When it got to level 3, the rate of improvement became slower.

Ye Xiao was fully concentrating on cultivation. He cared about nothing else, but only on operating the martial art to boost his cultivation.

In the House of Ye, the steward stood in the sunlight with his hands on his back. He looked up and watched the young lord on the watchtower. There was a gratified look on his face.

[The young lord may have not achieved success in either wisdom or martial arts, but, at least he knows he should work hard now. That is a wonderful sign.

He is not going to be a civil officer as his father wants him to, but if he works hard enough in martial arts, maybe he will achieve something in the future.

If the general comes to know of this, he will certainly be delighted.]

"Is the meal ready for the young lord? Bring up more restorative food."

"Oh, he has finished the last one? That is good."

"Have you delivered the water up to him yet?"

"Anyone who dares to be lazy will be punished severely!"

...

For people in the Chen-Xing City, this summer was extremely comfortable.

Usually, when the most scorching days in the year came, the whole Chen-Xing City turned into a huge stove; it could likely burn some fat out of the people.

As for this year... ha, ha, it was actually neither hot nor cold. It was perfect!

Nobody knew that the heat was mostly transformed into energy by the East-rising Purple Qi.

This went on continuously for ten days.

Ye Xiao had been concentrating in cultivating.

He kept cultivating day and night without rest.

...

Chapter 66: Incoming Disaster

The little princess was grounded, hence, she was unable to come and meet him. But Zuo Wuji didn't come, and neither did Lan Langlang. That was a bit odd.

Ye Xiao stretched himself.

After cultivating for ten days without taking any breaks, the extra frost qi in the Spaces had been mostly absorbed by Ye Xiao. Indeed, because of this, the dominant Sky Space had become meeker...

Ye Xiao knew that the depletion of the frost qi must be stopped before it's too late; he had already used more than enough.

He decided to let the frost qi in the Sky Space to go unchecked for the time being and wait a couple of days for it to accumulate. It wouldn't be too late to collect it when it once again started to run wild.

He stood up and slowly got down from the watchtower.

The steward came to meet him right away, "My lord, how is it? You should have surmounted the fourth level of the Mortal Origin Stage, right?"

In fact, Ye Xiao had been stuck in the third level of the Mortal Origin Stage for the past several years. The steward asked him in

an encouraging fashion because he didn't want to hurt the young lord's confidence. [Surmount? How is it possible to break through so quickly? People have spent many years and still haven't managed a breakthrough for this single level.]

[Fourth level of the Mortal Origin Stage?]

Ye Xiao's lips quivered oddly and he said, "Hmm. More or less. I am about to reach level 4."

The steward was greatly gratified and smiled, "You have been working so hard these days. In fact, to cultivate, it requires a process of alternating work with rest, and it also needs to proceed step-by-step. So take a good rest tonight."

The steward didn't know that although he was talking about the Mortal Origin Stage, his young lord was talking about... the Earth Origin Stage.

Although they were both talking about level 4, the difference between the two levels was like heaven and earth... If Ye Xiao had told him straightaway that he was about to reach the fourth level of the Earth Origin Stage, maybe the steward would have just passed out right away.

"Were there any unusual movements in the capital?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Hmm. Have some food for now. I will tell you what happened

one-by-one after you eat." The steward said with a smile on his face.

"Hmm. Uncle Song, join me for the meal." Ye Xiao replied with a smile.

"Ok. Ok." Steward Song was delighted.

"These days, the situation has been quite sensitive inside the Capital."

The steward spoke while he was drinking.

Ye Xiao was surprised to notice that the steward drank in a weird way. He held the cup with two fingers and picked it up casually and naturally. No movement was made by his throat, and no sound of drinking was heard, yet one cup of liquor was finished quickly and elegantly. After that, he casually filled his cup once more and drank it in one shot...

His speed of drinking was shockingly fast, but the way he drank was extremely elegant.

The elegance in the way he drank made the Xiao Monarch feel a bit jealous. He had been a man of alcohol, a hardcore drinker in his previous life. He has naturally tasted a lot of good liquors, but speaking of the drinking culture he had, the elegant and lambent way Steward Song drank was something he could never achieve. Even if he tried imitating him, it was rather possible that he would

likely "[draw a tiger into a dog](#)".

"Sensitive? What does that mean?" Ye Xiao felt that this steward of his family was absolutely not just some simple retired soldier. He must definitely have some special background.

Firstly, he was perceptive; secondly, he was elegant. Just with the way he drank, without systematic training and a subtle influence of past generations, he would never be able to show such a natural, noble demeanor...

Thirdly, he was mysterious. He never talked about his past... Fourthly, regarding his cultivation, even Ye Xiao couldn't see through him.

There were many cultivation levels for the cultivators in the world. Generally, when a cultivator wasn't using his martial arts, it would be quite difficult to see his level or strength. Only when he showed his martial arts, would his true strength be revealed.

A few martial arts existed which could be used to conceal a cultivator's cultivation levels.

These kinds of martial arts didn't have the functions of nourishing growth, improving cultivation, curing wounds or injuring the enemies, but it was still quite useful in confusing and disturbing the enemies.

Once a person cultivated such a martial art, he could hide his

energy and conceal his strength to a certain extent. He could prevent the enemies from knowing his true strength, so he could gain an element of surprise during a fight, and sometimes, it could even help him turn the tide of a losing battle and alter the result.

Only some supreme experts, through their experience and perception for danger, could estimate the enemies' cultivation before they made any movements. The Xiao Monarch could surely do that. No matter what level the enemy was and how hard he tried to cover his strength, as long as he was in a lower level than the Xiao Monarch, his strength would be revealed with just a glance.

However, Ye Xiao couldn't estimate the true cultivation strength of the steward.

Although he had the same sight as during his previous life, he couldn't see through the steward at all. The only explanation was that the steward was at a much higher level than Ye Xiao.

After all, Ye Xiao's shortcoming was his poor cultivation strength; it was only at the third level of the Earth Origin Stage.

"Yes. Sensitive." The steward, who was drinking in a rather elegant way, continued gulping drinks one after the other. It was as if he was holding the cup but never putting it down. "The king must be suffering a serious headache. The battle for the crown among the princes must have possibly started during the auction. However, the king is helpless and can do nothing about it."

"Oh. I'd love to hear more." Ye Xiao urged the steward to continue.

He had truly never thought about this before.

He might have experienced a lot, but he knew very little about the game played in the royal court of the mortal world. His knowledge regarding politics was next to nothing. This was an irrefutable fact that he had led a significantly different life compared to the mortals.

"The king has always been supporting the crown prince and was using the second and the third prince as the grinders to sharpen him. He always encourages the two younger princes to fight against the crown prince, but absolutely prevents them from becoming more powerful than the crown prince. Grinders are only grinders after all. If the knife is tested excessively and breaks, it would go against the original intention of the grinding."

"Although the king kept on giving some hope to the other princes, making them think that they may have the chance to sit on the throne, he never really considered them as candidates to take the throne. There was never any doubt, the throne was meant only for the crown prince."

"That is the politics of the kingdom." The steward smiled.

"Politics..." Ye Xiao murmured.

"The king has great talent and bold vision. That is undeniable. But he is unhealthy. That is the weakest point of all his plans. He had won the War of Eight Kings in the past, truly an incredible man. However... although the crown prince is also talented, he lacks experience. It is easy for him to safeguard the heritage, but if he wants to carry forward the king's plan of expanding the territory and obtaining the dominant position in this world, it is completely impossible."

"So in order to train the crown prince, he raises the other two princes to oppose him. He wants to make the crown prince feel threatened, forcing him to work harder to improve. But the king always keeps the competition within the proper limits to 'prevent the grinders from breaking the knife' and also to 'keep the knife from consuming the grinders' too soon... The balance has always been well maintained by the king."

Ye Xiao nodded slowly.

Yes, throughout history, that was what the kings would do.

However, there were not many of them that could control the balance well.

It seemed like the ruling king of the Kingdom of Chen was really a wise king.

"However, a few years ago, there was an accident that interrupted the grand plan of the king. It broke the balance. It was... that the crown prince had met a girl. The girl and the crown

prince fell in love at first sight. The girl is from the Mu Clan, one of the eight noble clans. Although she is not the child of the patriarch, she is still the daughter of the second most important person in the Mu Clan."

"The king always took precautions against the three clans that settled in the Kingdom of Chen, so he was naturally against the marriage. However, he had no legitimate reasons to stop this one. If he blocked it deliberately, it would not only hurt the relationship between the father and son, but it will also create an awkward situation whenever he faced the Mu Clan. After all, the Mu Clan is one of the eight noble clans; it is not something the king could easily deal with..."

"With no other choice, he had to approve the marriage and let the girl be the crown princess. From then on, the power of the crown prince suddenly expanded, and it made the other two princes completely lose power to strike back."

"But the two princes didn't sit still and await death. The throne has always fascinated people. Even though they only had little hope, they were not willing to let it go. The crown prince's marriage had suddenly diminished their powers, but it also guided the noble clans to a way where they could also expand their power... Thus, they sought out the other two noble clans in the Kingdom of Chen, and each of them proposed to one of their daughters... Among the three princes, the balance was restored. However, the balance was no longer firm; it was fragile."

"In the old days, under the control of the ruling king, whenever balance between them became skewed due to one of them

becoming too strong, the ruling king would naturally suppress the stronger party. However, right now, the control of the ruling king on the situation has been lacking. Once the situation becomes imbalanced, it will definitely lead to a huge crisis where all sides might collapse."

"In fact, for a long time, because of the wariness of the ruling king, although the noble clans were rich and world-shaking, they hardly reached the level of authority commanded by the royal power. Yet, at that time, the king's sons actually went to them of their own initiatives... So the noble clans rather enjoyed it. It was exactly what they had dreamed about; they were like a fish which returned to clean waters. Even if they didn't have daughters, they would try to make up some, let alone when there were lots of pretty girls in the noble clans."

"So the crown prince disappointed the king at that time, because the noble clans had all entered into the royal family. Moreover, he only had three sons, and now they were all sons-in-laws to the noble clans..."

"This event had produced great chaos in the recent past... And now, everything seemed peaceful."

"The king has made a great effort to define the powers of his three sons and distribute it. Now, it has become organized enough to make everything back to normal... That means the crown prince became a little bit stronger, while the other two princes became slightly weaker. Only when the two princes work together could they have the chance to match the crown prince; it was a subtle balance. When the king was about to sigh with relief... suddenly,

the auction popped up without any signs."

'draw a tiger into a dog', literally means someone painted a tiger but it turned out a dog. It means someone tried to imitate others but failed.

Chapter 67: The Golden Purple Blood!

The steward sneered and said, "I can fully imagine that our king is very anxious to tear that Feng guy who instigated this auction into bits and pieces..."

"Why? What relates him to to the royal feud?" Ye Xiao asked with confusion.

"Because... there are certain relations between the eight noble clans and the sects. Both of them dislike each other, and since the noble clans have already entered into the core of the royal power, the sects naturally wouldn't feel reconciled... By a lucky coincidence, there were precious items on sale in the auction, so the sects seized the chance and sent their important members to come and settle in the capital in a legitimate way..."

"Otherwise... even though it was the supreme dan, how could it possibly make those men like Xiao Moyan, Meng Wufei and Li Changqing come here? The machinations behind this event were really profound."

Ye Xiao nodded and answered with a "hmm".

Steward Song's analysis was incisive and it taught Ye Xiao a lot. However, what he cared about the most was something else.

His steward was truly not an ordinary man, as he really didn't seem respectful to the king. How could such a man be ordinary!

"If that was all that happened, it was fine... But the Mu Clan, whom the crown prince depends on as if they are the Great Wall to him, actually messed with the unfathomable force, House of the Chaotic Storm, at this important moment... and their people got killed. They suffered a crushing defeat and a major decrease in their power. I believe that the Mu Clan wouldn't dare to take any reckless actions within the near future. They also have to worry about how to apologize to the House of the Chaotic Storm at the same time..."

"Therefore, the crown prince's power was doomed to be reduced badly. The other two princes definitely wouldn't let go of this opportunity, so they took advantage of the situation... The sects entered and settled in the capital. The royal court had just turned peaceful, and then it once again returned into a chaotic situation... The king's worry is really no surprise!"

"I see..." Ye Xiao nodded with indifference, but in his mind, he couldn't help feeling dumbfounded.

[Shit! I casually took out some garbage dan beads, and it actually influenced the affairs of the kingdom like that?

That... That is a bit too inconceivable...]

"That is the current situation in the capital, an extremely delicate and horrible balance." When Steward Song said this, he had already drunk about fifteen or sixteen cups, but his face was still not too red nor too pale, as it still looked rather normal. He was a

really good drinker.

"Now, the situation is like this. But because of the king's intentional interference, both the court officials and the military officers, especially the first class officials and the main officials in the military, are all holding a watch-and-see attitude. However, since the king's health is getting worse, the watch-and-see attitude will gradually change. Once the king's health deteriorates too much, heh, heh..."

Steward Song sneered and said, "Well, these are just the inner factors... The Kingdom of Chen... Heh, heh. It is bound to be unsafe."

Ye Xiao asked, "Other than the inner factors, are there really other factors?"

"Of course."

The Steward drank another cup of liquor, "Now, the other two kingdoms are ready to do something big. They recently made frequent military strength reassignments and conducted many military rehearsals... Heh, heh, there is something you don't know. To conduct one military rehearsal, it will need a huge amount of money. If they are not truly ready to start a war, they must be very stupid to do that so often. A war is basically a money game."

"In fact, there are lots of signs proving my hypothesis. Basically, the price of all the goods in the market are rising. The increase isn't big, in fact, it's rising rather slowly. However, they are still

rising. This upward price trend started ten days ago. Food, salt, meat, metal, steel, wood and plants... Everything is becoming more expensive."

The steward's eyes thoughtfully lit up, "About ten days ago, we went to purchase food. It was [8 wen](#) for 500 grams of rice. Nine days ago, it was [8 wen and 5 li](#). Six days ago, it reached 9 wen. Today, the price has reached 11 wen... Within ten days, it rose by 3 wen! It is only rice yet the price has already risen by more than 30 percent of the base price."

"At first, I thought it was just a single case, but then I went out and looked around. I discovered that it was not only rice. All the other items in the market are also rising in price. Among them, steel was the most insane. Generally, for 1 kilogram of steel it only costs 1 wen, but now it is 3 wen per 500 grams... Moreover, if you want to buy bulks of steel, you can't get that much... It seems like restrictions have been put in place..."

"All these items are necessary for human survival. To bring this in the big picture... Unless somebody is suddenly stockpiling goods, the price would never rise like this... All the kingdoms have been in peace for the past several years. The citizens have been living affluently. Natural and manmade disasters have seldom happened. Yet now, the stockpile has suddenly happened. Why? It is obviously nothing else but..."

The steward drank another one and sighed, "War is coming..."

"Erh." Ye Xiao didn't say a word.

"Another important reason is that... the House of the Chaotic Storm showed up again!" The steward tittered, "In three thousand years, the House of the Chaotic Storm has shown up nine times... Every time it showed up, it led to a change. A change in the situation of the whole land!"

"During the change, the whole land will be unified, and then the House of the Chaotic Storm will disappear... Yet no more than a hundred years later, the situation of unification will break down again. At this time, rivaling warlords will battle over the land which will lead to a situation of fragmentation. And then after some battles, it will turn into several kingdoms... They will be too fearful to mess with each other, so they will be in peace. That is just like the current situation..."

"After that balanced situation appears, in no more than a 100 years, the House of the Chaotic Storm will show up again. After that... everything will start to rise in price... and then... war will break out. Until, eventually, one of the kingdoms will rule all the land..."

"It is the ninth time the House of the Chaotic Storm has shown up." Steward Song finally showed signs of getting drunk on his face, but his eyes were getting clearer, "The ninth time within the last three thousand years."

"So that's how it is." Ye Xiao was enlightened.

"And the extremely mysterious person, Master Bai, who is nearly

someone from a myth, has shown up nine times. Every time, it was Master Bai!" The steward finally cursed, "Other than a legend, I'd rather say he is an immortal monster!"

Ye Xiao was stunned.

"So that Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens have also lived for thousands years. Are they not monsters too?"

"They are also monsters! They should all be monsters!" The steward nodded heavily.

Ye Xiao felt shocked after hearing that.

The steward didn't know, but Ye Xiao knew that those men in black who came to the house of Ye the other night were actually from the House of the Chaotic Storm!

Was he going to fight against some monsters this time?

If he was the previous Xiao Monarch, they weren't worth even a second of his time. But now, the roles were reversed. For the House of the Chaotic Storm, Ye Xiao should be equal to an ant!

He wasn't even worthy to be compared with an ant.

"So if the war comes, it must involve the whole world... As my dad is the Northern General... isn't he going to be the first to be

affected?" Ye Xiao asked.

When he spoke out "my dad", he didn't feel conflicted.

A few days earlier, the steward said something to him, "When you were born, you had inadequate natural endowment. You were also badly injured because of an accident, and your Jing and Mai were blocked. Your father spent everything to save your life and tried to make you healthy like normal people, but he eventually failed. At the end, the king said that he had a medical material that could save you, but he had a request. He wanted your father to become his sworn brother and guard the northern territory for twenty years!"

At that time, Ye Xiao was nothing but a toddler.

That was to say, after spending all his properties, his father had sold the best twenty years of his youth for his son!

For such a gesture, even though the one who made it wasn't his real father, Ye Xiao still felt touched. This was the same kind of feeling that a real son would've felt for his father!

Speaking of that, Ye Xiao had been an orphan in his previous life. He had been longing for this kind of affection, this parental love, for a long time.

This time, he was lucky to have a second life and gain the love he longed for, so he naturally cherished it even more.

"That is not quite so." The pride showed up in the steward's eyes, "I believe that in the Land of Han-Yang, there is absolutely no one that could threaten my brother's life! Even if everyone in this world dies, you father will live well unharmed!"

Ye Xiao was shocked when he heard that.

"There is absolutely no one that could threaten my brother's life!"

"My brother!"

He finally knew what had caused his concern, [This Steward Song, who has been working as a servant in my house, is actually my father's sworn brother!]

However, a sworn brother like Steward Song and a sworn brother like the king were incomparable, as they represented two completely different things to his father.

Steward Song must be drunk, so he leaked out something.

Ye Xiao didn't know why, but he suddenly felt like the family he was staying at was filled with mysteries.

Besides, why did the steward trust his father so much? Even if he was a top-class superior cultivator in the Sky Origin Stage, dying in a battle of a million-men armies wouldn't be a strange thing, right?

Where did such confidence come from?

Could his "adopted" father be much stronger than that? If so, he must be over the cultivation limit of this realm, right? That simply couldn't be right!

The steward was drunk. He laughed with self-mockery, "Ahee... I am drunk. I am actually drunk. I haven't been drunk in a long time... You father, my brother strictly forbids me from drinking, but I am so happy today... So I really want to drink some. Xiao boy, don't tell your father that I drank. Don't even think about telling him I am drunk. Do you understand!"

Ye Xiao was stunned when he heard him.

[What the hell. You really can't reason with a drunk man. He was acting as a servant at the beginning, but now he is admonishing me with the tone of an elder. And he even called me 'Xiao boy', what the hell is that...]

Steward Song's face suddenly turned unusually red, and his breath became heavier. After a few slight coughs, he suddenly coughed heavily!

After a long time, he lowered his head and turned it around. He spat out something on a handkerchief.

Apparently, he didn't want Ye Xiao to see this.

However, although Ye Xiao was not at a high cultivation level, his eyes were as sharp as they used to be in his previous life. He had already seen some of it.

His pupils suddenly shrank.

Golden purple!

The blood that the steward spat out was actually golden purple blood!

wen: A unit in the ancient Chinese money system. 1 wen equals 10 li.

li: 1 li equals 0.1 wen.

Chapter 68: The Golden Mai Palm!

In fact, the steward hadn't spat out some regular spit; he had actually spat out some... golden purple blood!

"The Golden Mai Palm!"

In Ye Xiao's mind, the name of this technique emerged; he was astonished.

The Golden Mai Palm. Ye Xiao had seen it in his previous life for hundreds of times!

Because in his previous life, the Purple Sun Mount, one of the three factions who had hunted him down, was famous for its Golden Mai Palm!

In the Qing-Yun Realm, they were the only group who could use it; there was no others!

It was the specialty of the Purple Sun Mount.

The Golden Mai Palm had a vigorous and firm palm strength; it was grandly powerful. It could break stones into pieces, but that was just normal. The real horror of this technique was the viciousness hidden inside it.

When one was struck by the Golden Mai Palm, the power would

sneak into his Jing and Mai like burning fire. It would produce some golden material inside the Jing and Mai. This golden material was like a living thing. It was extremely difficult to dispel. It would infect the energy of the body to strengthen itself, while it would also continue to turn the blood into golden blood. If it didn't get dispelled soon, then in the future, it would lead to severe complications; the victim was almost doomed to die.

How could a person live on when all of his organs turned gold?

Of course he would instantly die!

Steward Song, who was now in front of Ye Xiao, was actually a victim of the Golden Mai Palm, and he had actually endured a feeble existence till now. There were only two explanations for that: first, the one who had attacked him hadn't cultivated into a higher level of the Golden Mai Palm; the internal injury he had left had been expanding gradually, and now it was overstepping Steward Song's limit bit by bit.

Second, there was some efficacious medicine continuing his life; it was slowing down the organs from becoming golden.

However, after being hit by the Golden Mai Palm, if he couldn't acquire the special antidote, his cultivation would drop slowly because of the infection. Even a great superior cultivator would become an ordinary person who had little strength bit by bit. Once his veins could no longer bear the effect of the Golden Mai Palm, he would die anyway.

Yet Steward Song, who was in front of Ye Xiao, had obviously almost reached his limit.

Alcohol was the major taboo for whoever was hit by the Golden Mai Palm!

Because the golden material that had infected the body would run strangely! Once it ran too strangely, the victim would never have the chance to survive!

Yet Steward Song had drunk so much liquor today.

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up as he said, "I felt tired suddenly... It must be my lack of good rests these days. Uncle Song, how about we call it a day now?"

Steward Song nodded but said nothing. What Ye Xiao said was exactly something he needed. To drink more today, he was afraid that he would truly lose control. He was about to spit out blood for the second time soon.

Ye Xiao left without any hesitation; he turned around and walked away.

...

It was midnight.

Steward Song's body was curled-up while lying on his bed. He was covering his mouth as he coughed. In his eyes, there was slight hint of sorrow.

[The young lord is sixteen now. That means I have been suffering this injury for sixteen years, right?

Finally, I can't suppress it anymore!

In sixteen years, my cultivation have been dropping till. Now, it is getting faster. Last month, I was still in the sixth level of the Earth Origin Stage, yet now, I have fallen to the first level of the Earth Origin Stage.

After drinking so much tonight... maybe tomorrow, it will drop to the Mortal Origin Stage. Or maybe... I don't have a tomorrow anymore...]

He smiled bitterly and murmured, "This is my life... Rising up so high and then falling down rapidly. Heh, heh..."

He coughed and finally spat out some purple golden blood again. He felt his entire body was faint, and he could clearly sense that his spritual qi was scattering bit by bit...

"I better sleep now... I don't have many days like this anymore." The steward was lying in bed, and as he closed his eyes, he murmured, "Brother... if that day comes, could you come back and watch me go..."

While thinking about that, a sound suddenly echoed. - Shoot! - Somebody entered the room through the window.

The steward stood up on the floor right away. Although he was suffering from both injury and tiredness, he didn't lose his wariness. Before he could sound a warning and alert the guards, he felt someone pressing his shoulder. - BANG! - He passed out.

Steward Song only had one thought right before he passed out, [This night stalker moves neatly and weirdly, but his cultivation is no higher than level 4 of the Earth Origin Realm. In the noontide of my prosperity, I could blow him to death with just a single breath. Yet now I am in his hand and can do nothing but give myself in...]

...

Ye Xiao stood by the bed looking at the fainted steward and sighed gently.

He reached his hand on the steward's wrist and operated his martial art to check the steward's pulse.

"As expected, he was hit by the Golden Mai Palm, and it was the Golden Mai Palm of middle level. Whoever can create such injury, even in the Purple Sun Mount, he must at least be one of the major disciples..."

"As a conservative estimation, it has been ten years after he was hit by the Golden Mai Palm..."

Ye Xiao couldn't help frowning slightly.

"If my cultivation reaches the Sky Origin Stage at the moment, I can surely cure him. But now... I lack the power to do so even though I really want to." Ye Xiao had dealt with the Golden Mai Palm for many times in his previous life, so he certainly knew how to cure it.

He knew every way to cure it; even without the special antidote, there were still ample of ways to deal with it.

However, this place is not the Qing-Yun Realm; there weren't any of those required medicines here.

Generally, if his cultivation was high enough, he could cure it anyway, but it was not. He was nearly helpless.

At present, Steward Song's cultivation and body conditions had all dropped to their lowest. After no more than half a month, he would die. There was not much time left; that was the biggest problem right now!

"Even though I will do it with my utmost, it will only slightly improve his situation. Luckily, I have reached level 3 of the Earth Origin Stage after cultivating for 10 days, otherwise, I really could do nothing but helplessly watch him..."

Ye Xiao frowned. He took out a Pei-Yuan Dan Bead and put it into the steward's mouth. He made sure that the dan bead had been pushed down through his throat. After that, he put his hand on the back of the steward and operated the gelid power to draw out the scorching power of the Golden Mai Palm.

Bit by bit, it was being absorbed into his palm.

The Purple Sun Mount was holding the sway over the world with the Golden Mai Palm. It was surely because this technique was shockingly powerful and extremely vicious, but at the same time, it was also because nobody was able to defuse the Golden Mai Palm. Countless sects and countless cultivation masters were trying to resolve the Golden Mai Palm, but they all failed eventually.

However, Ye Xiao had fought against the Purple Sun Mount for many times, so he had coincidentally figured out the secret of the Golden Mai Palm. In fact, when the Purple Sun Mount had tried their best hunting Ye Xiao, it was partly because Ye Xiao had figured out their secret. If he revealed the secret to the public, the Purple Sun Mount's power and reputation would absolutely decrease.

Whoever was hit by the Golden Mai Palm, those golden material would appear inside his body. Meanwhile, his organs would become golden bit by bit. People all thought that this technique should be attuned with gold attribute. They thought that the cultivator could absorb some special metallic materials into the palm and attack with it. Thus, they focused on reducing the golden

material and slowing the organ from becoming golden, but they weren't aware that it was only a camouflage.

The Golden Mai Palm was no gold attribute technique at all; it was fire attribute. The golden material, which appeared after the attack, was merely the outcome of the Golden Mai Palm's power burning the Jing and Mai. Its power would linger around for a long time, transforming the victim's blood, vigor, and cultivation into its own motive power. If one could not dispel the power of the Golden Mai Palm after being struck, the Golden Mai Palm would continually strengthen itself.

As for some superior cultivators who cultivated the Golden Mai Palm, they could instantly make the opponent's organs become golden with a single strike. It was simply just speeding the process up by countless times. So when people were fixated on eradicating the golden materials and slowing down the process of becoming golden, they failed to realized that these actions would only cure its symptoms; in fact, this was far from the proper treatment.

In fact, it was quite a coincidence when Ye Xiao discovered how to deal with the Golden Mai Palm in his previous life. In that day when he came across a man of the Purple Sun Mount, he was hit by the Golden Mai Palm. After being hit, the injury expanded rather fast, so he tried his best operating the Pure Yang Martial Art to resist it. Coincidentally, he discovered that his Pure Yang Martial Art actually could assimilate the power of the Golden Mai Palm.

He was enlightened; he noticed that the Golden Mai Palm was a fire attribute technique. When one thing was learned, a hundred similar things would also be uncovered. As long as the major

direction was confirmed, it was naturally an easy job to cure it. Since then, Ye Xiao had seized many solutions to resist the Golden Mai Palm.

He was weak at the moment and couldn't cure it efficiently, but he now had a more specific solution than those he had learned in his previous life. The two extremities of ice and fire were the most effective treatment to the Golden Mai Palm. The one with the opposite attribute absorbed, while the one with the same attribute digested. That made a perfect pair!

He tested this solution with great caution; he didn't dare to be reckless. He just absorbed a little bit of the power of the Golden Mai Palm, but surprisingly, after the hot power was absorbed and ran around his Jing and Mai, it actually turned into his scorching power - one of his two extreme powers.

Ye Xiao was thrilled.

He was surprised that the assimilation went so smoothly; it was even smoother than when he was cultivating the Pure Yang Martial Art. It practically skipped the process of the assimilation. It felt like his scorching power was the ocean, and the hot power from the Golden Mai Palm was only a little stream. It was merely the stream flowing into the ocean; it really wasn't worth mentioning!

[It turns out dispelling the power of the Golden Mai Palm... can bring me such a benefit. That is a sweet surprise.]

He dared not to neglect it, so he hurried operating the martial art, absorbing the hot power.

He didn't stop until the moon indicated it was late. He murmured, "The hot power of the Golden Mai Palm inside the Jing and Mai has been absorbed clean... But the power that has already gotten into the organs and dantian is impossible to dispel. Not with my current condition..."

He gritted his teeth, took out one of the only two Bone Ablutionary Dan Beads, and put it into the steward's mouth.

And then he began to operate the martial art again!

When it was dawn, Ye Xiao quietly left.

The result of this rescue was better than expected. Although he didn't cure the disease radically, he had already suppressed the elementary power of the Golden Mai Palm into the deepest place of the steward's dantian! The hot power of the Golden Mai Palm that was flowing around the steward's body had all been absorbed by Ye Xiao. There only remained the deeply hidden elementary power which was impossible to dispel.

That meant from then on, there would be no more problem with the steward's body; the injury could never deteriorate.

...

Chapter 69: War in the South; Disturbance in the Capital

The most important thing was that from now on, Steward Song could recover his cultivation on his own, and he could also use his own cultivation to resist the hot power of the Golden Mai Palm.

Through a conservative estimation, the effects of the Golden Mai Palm wouldn't show up within the next three years.

“After three years...” Ye Xiao looked at his palm where a golden purple mark was fading away. He sneered, “... By then, I will only need the slightest effort to cure the effect of the Golden Mai Palm!”

He had cured the loyal Steward Song and didn't expose himself. In fact, he had even improved his cultivation.

That was something like “a good man deserved some good luck”, right?!

Ye Xiao felt relaxed and sweetly fell asleep, of course, in his own bedroom.

...

The next morning!

The steward slowly woke up.

“Hmm. It has been a long time since I slept so well! Eh... I am alive? How come I didn’t die?” The steward felt extremely weird. He hurriedly checked himself, but couldn’t find any sign of a wound.

Then he quickly turned over and tried to sit up. However, when he was turning over, he suddenly stopped. This was an extremely awkward position!

His eyes showed an expression of astonishment.

Because... he felt that the sickening hot power, which had been running through his Jing and Mai and had tortured him for the last 16 years, had completely vanished!

- PAH! - The steward immediately heavily slapped himself!

[This must be a dream. It is always easy to wake up from a good dream. Whether I am dead or not, it is not a good thing to remain in a dream forever. Come on, I need to wake up!]

That slap was truly solid and had left a firm mark on his face. He could even count a couple of stars in his vision, as he had nearly hit his teeth out of his mouth.

“It hurts me to death... Am I actually not dreaming?” The steward touched his cheek and felt the buzz in his ear that was caused by the slap. He instantly regretted his previous action,

“Why did I slap so hard... Hmm... That power...”

He tried operating the elemental qi in his dantian. - Boom!- He felt the spiritual power in his dantian suddenly rose and rushed out like a furious billow!

At the moment, the bones of his body were suddenly crackling!

His Jing and Mai had been left uncultivated for the past 16 years, yet they had suddenly regained their vigor. They expanded tidily to allow the long lost spiritual power to rush into them. The brisk qi kept rushing out as all of his hair suddenly stood straight up!

- Pooh! -

He opened his mouth, and this time, he spat out a true phlegm.

He reached his hands and looked at them. His hands were now full of energy...

“Miracle! What a miracle!” His hands were shaking while his body was quivering.

Suddenly, two streams of tears rolled down his cheeks, “I thought... I thought there was no hope left for me in this lifetime. I thought that all I could do was to stay here in my big brother’s house and act as a steward... Yet suddenly, I have fully recovered... The bloody power of the Golden Mai Palm has completely vanished!”

“I can’t believe that I, Song Jue, can have such luck today!”

“Although my cultivation today was completely different from 16 years ago, and I can only use 10 percent of it... I can still exert the level 9 of the Earth Origin Stage... In the Land of Han-Yang, this is definitely enough for me. Besides, while cultivating more, my original cultivation will come back to me bit by bit.”

“Finally, I, Song Jue, will have the day to enact my revenge!”

His eyes were filled with tears.

After a long time, he finally calmed down, “But... what is really going on? Who was that guy last night?”

Last night, Song Jue wasn’t able to see the guy’s face. He had also failed to see the guy’s outline before he was knocked unconscious.

So he had felt full of despair and shame.

But as for now, he only felt grateful, endlessly grateful.

“It must be the guy last night who treated my injury caused by the Golden Mai Palm...” Song Jue was grateful, “This guy is my lifesaver... But why did he do that? Why did he save me? How did he know I was hit by the Golden Mai Palm? And how could he dispel the power of the Golden Mai Palm which has been known as

impossible to dispel? Even though I only had a short moment to feel his strength, I am sure he was only in the third or fourth level of the Earth Origin Stage. How was he capable to deal with it...”

There were so many questions emerging inside Song Jue’s mind.

They became abstruse knots in his heart.

However, the happiness of surviving from the clutches of death had immediately overtaken everything else.

“As long as I am still alive, there will be the day I repay this immense favor.”

“Since the mysterious benefactor of mine showed up here, he shouldn’t just disappear like this. He must be here for something... I just need to patiently wait. He will show up again. If there is anything he wants me to do, then I will make sure to do it.”

“However, if he asks me to do something against my big brother, I will kill myself right away, returning my life to him.” Song Jue thought so and instantly felt relieved.

“Humph! Now that I have recovered a part of my cultivation, while I am guarding the House of Ye, I would like to know what kind of morons would dare to mess with us!”

He humphed through his nose as he was full of pride!

Ever since they had gotten up this morning, the guards of the House of Ye had seen their Master Steward smiling. He usually looked rather sullen, but currently, he was in an exceptionally good mood.

They really didn't know what kind of joyous event had happened to their Master Steward.

He tapped on the shoulder of everyone who passed by and chatted with them, he was even full of smiles.

It made these old soldiers, who were used to fight between millions of troops and had survived after hundreds of battles, to feel extremely flattered.

Some of them even murmured in their minds, [That killing god... has he suddenly lost his mind? He must have woken up without a mind! Why is he so weird... Is he haunted by ghosts? I think we need to splash some [black dog blood](#) on him... What the hell. His smile gave me goosebumps, it also chilled my backbone. That is exactly what they call as terrifying.”

After Ye Xiao got up, he roughly washed his face and rushed up to the watchtower to enjoy the power of the East-rising Purple Qi.

On a day, the best time for cultivating the East-rising Purple Qi was the early morning when the sun had just started rising.

At that moment, the pure yang purple qi around the world would be at its thickest and purest!

Certainly, Ye Xiao wouldn't let that good chance go.

When he was preparing to go, the steward had already been waiting for him at the door. He was smiling... while his face was glowing with a healthy color.

Of course, Ye Xiao knew why he was so happy and so aglow. He also knew that if he was held up by the steward, he would lose the entire morning...

"Erh... I, I, I... I am ur that those wow hahaha *'))_@('^..." Ye Xiao talked balderdash and rushed by the steward like the wind. He ran towards the watchtower before the steward was able to utter a single word.

"What does that mean?" The steward rubbed his head. He was puzzled by Ye Xiao's actions.

...

When Ye Xiao got down from the watchtower, the steward rushed forward, "My lord, something is wrong. Something has happened in the south."

"The south?" Ye Xiao was a bit shocked. He thought that the steward was about to tell him about the recovery of his cultivation,

however, something about the south had suddenly popped up. His father was the Northern General, so he didn't understand why the south would matter to the House of Ye.

“The war has begun in the south. The report arrived at the capital this morning. The battle started five days ago...” The steward frowned, “This time, the Southern Barbarians and the Kingdom of Jin-Yang are cooperating... I am afraid that General Lan is in danger.”

“General Lan? Lan Langlang's father?” Ye Xiao frowned.

[I see. It is about the Lord Lan's father. I suppose that it does matter to me somehow.]

“Yes, the battle suddenly burst out... General Lan was unprepared. He is nearly surrounded from three directions. He is now in a terrible situation.” The steward frowned, “It all depends on the king's decision now...”

“What about the north?” Ye Xiao asked.

“The great general is there. It is as stable as a mountain!” The steward raised his head proudly.

“Ahem...”

Ye Xiao sighed.

[How on earth did this sightless confidence develop?]

“Even though something weird has happened in the south, there is nothing we can do to help, right...” Ye Xiao spoke strangely, “Could I be recruited to the battlefield? That couldn’t be possible, right?”

The steward was left speechless, and at the same time, he was slightly amused.

[I believe the king would rather send ten thousand rats to battle than you, the foppish young lord!]

“It is not that.” The steward twitched his mouth a bit and said, “The current situation is, besides the main force of the royal court, there is only one group that can be deployed... But if these men leave for battle, our situation will become very dangerous, so I think I need to warn you about it.”

“Oh? Men from where? Are they really so close to us?” Ye Xiao asked.

“They belong to Prince Hua-Yang!” The steward spoke in a deep voice, “This battle concerns the life and death of this kingdom. Now that General Lan can’t save the situation on his own. There is only one man who can save it. That is the No. 1 in the military of the Kingdom of Chen - the Military God of Chen, Prince Hua-Yang!”

“General Ye has been guarding the north throughout the years. All of his family and his soldiers are all in the capital, including us. It is the same with General Lan. We are all under the watch of Prince Hua-Yang... If he really leaves for battle, then in the next period of time, when someone breaks the balance of the royal power, families of the military forces will become the disadvantaged groups...”

Ye Xiao was shocked. Prince Hua-Yang, father of Su Ye-Yue, prospective father-in-law of Ye Xiao. It was said that he was a big fellow. Ye Xiao didn't know that all the families of the military were living under his favor!

If so, this Prince Hua-Yang, the Military God of Chen, was really an honest man. Ye Xiao's heart became filled with respect for this man.

“So, during these days, you better don't go out in case you fall in trouble once again.” The steward had talked for such a long time before he finally arrived at this point.

“So it is like this. I see.” Ye Xiao felt relieved and boasted clapping his chest, “Uncle Song, don't worry! I have been greatly awakened these days. I will definitely stay safe and sound here at home. I would never get into any kind of trouble!”

Song Jue's mouth twitched again.

Hearing this, he suddenly felt [pain in his balls](#).

[That little prick really dares to broast. What ‘greatly awakened’. What ‘stay fine’... Last time, you swore you wouldn’t get into any trouble, yet you have killed the brother-in-law of the crown prince...

Now you gave me another promise like you did last time. And you even added something like ‘greatly awakened’. Why don’t you go and fool yourself with that...

If I were to trust you on that... then I must have spent all my years living like a stupid dog...]

.....

In China it is said that the black dog blood can dispel all evils.
pain in the balls(蛋疼): means that someone feels bad.

Chapter 70: Assassination on the Street

"I couldn't discipline you before. I wanted to, but I was unable." The steward threatened, "But from now on, if you dare to run wild again, I will spank your ass to pieces. You tell me whether I dare to or not!"

That was spoken in a fierce tone.

That was no longer the tone of a steward talking to his master; it was the tone of an uncle talking to his nephew.

Apparently, when Song Jue was weak, he felt that he was incapable of protecting Ye Xiao and couldn't be someone he could depend on. He felt that he didn't deserve the title of "uncle", so he just let Ye Xiao do whatever he wanted.

But right now, Steward Song's cultivation had returned. He felt that he had become freaking awesome!

[If anyone dares to mess with my nephew, I will kill him!]

The enormous self-confidence he lost in the recent years had returned.

"I wanted to, but I was unable" perfectly described the sentiments he felt deep within his heart.

Now that he wanted to and was completely capable of fulfilling his duties, naturally, he would make up for what he had failed to do in the past, including protecting Ye Xiao, be the one he could rely on, and of course, disciplining him!

Ye Xiao laughed and said, "Uncle Song. Please relax. Am I the kind of person who keeps on making trouble?"

The steward rolled his eyes.

[How come this sounds so familiar? Damn it. He said the same words again!

If you are not the kind who keeps on making trouble... then who on earth is?

You are certainly the ancestor of that sort!

You are a demon who keeps on making trouble!]

...

Ye Xiao was holding on to a massive amount of money at the moment. He was totally a rich guy. He couldn't suppress the urge to spend money anymore, so he rushed out anyway. This time, he specifically went to the place where metallic materials were being sold...

Since the price of metal was currently on the rise, he would have to pay a high price if he wanted to buy anything. But he also understood something else: usually, precisely when everything was rising in value that rare items show up!

The reason why the businessmen hoarded goods was to gain maximum profits during such times!

Thus, this time when Ye Xiao went out, he brought all his savings with him.

He was shopping crazily across the entire street!

But apparently, the results of his shopping spree wasn't satisfactory. Although he had spent almost 200 thousand taels of silver, the amount of items in the Gold Space only increased by a small amount. They weighed less than 2.5 kilograms.

This result made Ye Xiao depressed. Those so called "Soul of Irons", "Hundred-tempered Steel", "Stone from The Heaven"... they had powerful names, each scarier than last, but the essence absorbed from them was almost negligible.

Even the lot of them together could only release a tiny amount of metallic qi...

What a massive waste of resources!

After the shopping, the Xiao Monarch's face was filled with

impatience as he walked aimlessly around the marketplace. If it wasn't for the sun that was brightly shining down on him, warming his body and slightly increasing the power of the East-Rising Purple Qi, he would have most likely flipped out by now.

[I had come out with great hope.

But after spending thousands, I only got such a small gain?

Is it because I have received too much these past few days that I have spent all my luck?!

While thinking of nonsense and mixing with the crowd, he noticed that the crowd was quickly becoming denser. It seemed like there were lots of people rushing in.

He frowned and looked towards the street corner.

[How come so many people are crowding over there?]

At the street corner, a carriage had arrived, bearing a sign which read "Divine Arms Mill"!

It was not a small carriage at all, but it wasn't big enough to cause the street to become congested either. However, there were lots of people surrounding the carriage with eager looks and burning eyes.

Those people who were surrounding the carriage were all cultivators. Some of them were citizens of the martial world, some of them were government officers, and some of them were well-dressed - they must be the men of the noble clans...

Divine Arms Mill!

The No. 1 weapon producer in the Land of Han-Yang!

According to the tales, among the top-ten legendary swords in the Land of Han-Yang, six were produced by the Divine Arms Mill!

These famous weapons could cut through iron as if it was mud!

They could easily chop through gold and jade!

Since the Divine Arms Mill had arrived at the capital, it was no surprise that it had aroused a commotion!

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up and he thought, [It is fine that I haven't found any decent metallic material. Since I don't have a proper weapon at the moment, if I can buy a good sword to become my temporary weapon, then that would be good.]

So he followed the crowd walking towards the Divine Arms Mill.

In Ye Xiao's eyes, even if he could get a top-quality weapon in the Land of Han-Yang, it wouldn't be worthy of being held in his

hands. He would only use it temporarily. When an opportunity would arise, he would definitely replace it.

While he walked, he suddenly felt a killing intent fiercely smashing against his body. A serious danger was rapidly approaching him from all directions!

[Assassins?!]

Ye Xiao was astonished.

[Under the light of the day, on a nearly impenetrable street that is densely crowded, I am actually encountering an assassination!] Ye Xiao collected his thoughts quickly, [Coming out here was a completely random idea. How long have these assassins been stalking me?]

He had no doubt that this was a long-term assassination plan!

Four waves of cold wind approached from his front, back, left and right!

They were like poisonous snakes hiding in the grass, charging like lightning through the crowd.

This was a perfect killing trap.

Ye Xiao confirmed the targets with only a single glance. There

were four men; all dressed in grey ordinary cultivator suits. They were inconspicuous. In fact... when the Divine Arms Mill arrived, Ye Xiao happened to be here shopping...

[It must have nothing to do with the Divine Arms Mill, because they definitely had no idea that I would be here. The only possibility is that someone has been planning on dealing with me for some time!

Who might it be?]

The danger was quickly closing in on him. Finally, four cold beams of light were revealed under their clothes, before simultaneously shooting towards him.

They were aiming at the his chest, the back, the left subcostal and the right subcostal...

Four men, in the cover of the noisy crowd, attacked him fiercely at the same time!

Four swords, all filled with killing intent!

Such clever tactics; such a ruthless assault! In this world, if it was used against an ordinary cultivator of the Earth Origin Stage, even if he was at level 6, it would have definitely succeeded.

The eyes of the four assassins were filled with cruelty and the satisfaction of success. In their eyes, Ye Xiao was already a dead

man!

It was impossible for him to escape this attack.

A sneer showed up on the corner of Ye Xiao's mouth. He lowered his head and rapidly stepped forward. And then he leaned towards his side. The four swords stabbed into his body at the same time. - SWISH!-

The front, the back, the left and the right. The strange thing was that... the four swords all went through the gap between his skin and the clothes. They made eight holes in his clothes!

Yet his body was totally unharmed!

How skillful!

It was as if his body was being held up by the four swords, but the deadly sharp blades were unable to make a single cut on his skin!

Before the four men were able to notice that, Ye Xiao had already reached out his hand and gripped the wrist of the man in front of him. And then as he squeezed, the gelid power suddenly controlled the entire body of the man; the man couldn't even open his mouth.

The very next moment, three thin ice knives flew out without a trace.

The three men who were on the left, the right and the back of Ye Xiao felt a pleasant coolness before they suddenly stopped their rushing bodies. Their eyes were filled with disbelief.

Ever so slowly, their bodies started to collapse onto the ground.

Ye Xiao always knew how this fight would end. He didn't even look back. He just shook his body and the four swords silently returned. They flew back into the clothes of the four guys, exactly where they had previously hidden their weapons.

He didn't just stop there; he held up the man in front of him. The four holes on his clothes, which was made from fine silk, were totally unnoticeable.

He casually held up the guy in front of him and blew on top of his head. And then, the man's hair became grey...

It almost seemed like he had turned into someone else as both of them seemed to be whispering with lowered heads. They almost resembled two close friends who were happily conversing with each other, before unhurriedly departing from the crowd...

The way they departed seemed leisurely and elegant.

Behind them, people were shouting, "Don't push! Don't push, all of you! The Divine Arms Mill is right there. They are not going to run away... Just bring enough money. Pushing and squeezing won't help anyway if you don't have the money..."

The three dead bodies hadn't actually fallen on the floor yet; they were still in the process of falling.

Finally...

-POOF!-

One of the bodies fell to the ground.

"Don't push already! Someone fell down..." People shouted.

"Another one fell... Damn it! I told you not to push... Don't step on people..."

"With such a weak body strength, he actually squeezed in here to buy divine weapons. For what?"

"Exactly! Exactly..."

When people were complaining disdainfully, one of them noticed that none of the three men actually were attempting to get back up, they didn't even struggle! So he reached his hand out to check their pulse, but he failed to find one as the bodies had already turned cold. He suddenly quivered and nearly passed out from fear. He cried with a voice that sounded inhuman, "Arh, arh, arh... dead... There are three men that have been pushed to death..."

"You are spouting fxxking nonsense. I have seen situations much worse than today, and people didn't die being pushed."

"Eh... Arh, arh... They are dead for real..."

"What the hell! How come these three fellas stopped breathing? Are they really dead..."

After knowing there were dead men amongst them, - Shoot! - the crowd scattered. Suddenly, an empty circle formed within the crowd. Three men curled up on the floor. There were no wounds on their bodies, yet they didn't breathe.

It somehow looked like they were dead because of being pushed too heavily.

When that scene was revealed, people felt frightened. - Shraff!- In an instant, people dispersed like the receding tide. [Shxt! It is acceptable that I failed to buy some weapon, but hell no, don't get me in a lawsuit. We are in the capital right now...]

"None of my business..."

"I didn't push at all..."

"Oh shoot, somebody died for real."

"What the hell. Were they made from bean dregs? Really? Died

from being pushed?"

"Scared the shit out of me. Better hurry off."

"I still want a divine weapon..."

"You want shxt! The officers are coming right away. If you get caught, even if you don't die, three layers of your skin will be ripped off! Hurry up!"

"Hurry. Don't get me involve this shxt hole..."

"Gosh..."

Within seconds, all the people on the street had seemingly vanished. The entire street had suddenly become desolate... All except for the three bodies who remained crooked in their original positions...

No signs of wounds; no stain of blood.

...

Chapter 71: The Flame In The Heart

The two shops near the dead bodies were truly unlucky. The shopkeepers' faces turned green when they saw what had just happened. But no matter what, they had no chance of escaping this scenario.

This was really a case of "[he who stays in the house will be hit by the misfortune from the sky](#)". They were simply running their businesses as usual, but to their surprise, people just died in front of their doorsteps.

However, people of the Divine Arms Mill were far more pissed off than they were.

They had brought some divine weapons to the capital and caused quite a sensation, attracting a lot of followers as they had expected!

They believed that this time, they could sell them for an exorbitant price! They could sense the excitement of the crowd...

There was no doubt that they had made a good decision to show up at that moment.

However, just as they were becoming complacent and elated...

Three men in the crown of shoppers had suddenly dropped dead on the ground!

That was seriously some bad luck!

Their faces immediately turned green!

[That is fxxking so... so... so... so... What the hell...]

Watching the crowd scatter and leave the place, all of the expert cultivators of the Divine Arms Mill were stunned.

They couldn't help but come up with a common thought - [Will the death of these guys... get us involved?]

...

Under the cover of the chaos, Ye Xiao was dragged a man as he leisurely went into a small alley. He climbed over two walls and casually kicked a hole in it. After he passed through the wall, he kicked it once more, returning it to how it was before.

He finally found a covert where he placed the man on the ground.

The man hadn't made any sound or movement, but he was focused on observing everything that Ye Xiao had done; from easily killing the other three assassins to dragging him away as if nothing had happened, and then bringing him to a covert...

The boldness, precision, wariness, cruelty and strength that Ye

Xiao had shown... was really shocking.

Thus, when Ye Xiao placed him on the ground, the guy's face was already pale and filled with fear.

When he finally dropped to the floor, he was finally freed from being frozen. Just as he started to recover, he quickly opened his mouth... and then fiercely snapped it shut. Apparently, he was trying to commit suicide by biting his tongue off.

Analyzing Ye Xiao's actions, he decided that it would be a blessing if he could just kill himself after being captured! It would be better to die quickly than suffer.

Ye Xiao reached out an arm and casually broke the guy's lower jaw. He said, "You want to die? You know it can't be this easy, right?"

And then he blocked the guy's Jing and Mai. He held the guy's lower jaw up to his mouth and then touched the guy's cheek with his finger. A stream of gelid power had instantly frozen the guy's facial muscles.

"Now, you should only be able to speak in whispers. You certainly cannot shout. You are free to try if you don't believe me." Ye Xiao spoke gently, "And, to kill yourself by biting your tongue requires certain strength, but unfortunately, you hardly have the strength to do so. You can only blink at most. Things like cutting off your own Jing and Mai, exploding your dantian... Oh you don't have those abilities now, am I right? Even if you do, it is impossible

to execute those moves in front of me!"

"Well, I talked a lot with you. I just want to tell you that even though you so desperately want to die right now, you just can't." Ye Xiao smiled gently, "See how kindly I treat you. This is just so meticulous."

The guy couldn't prevent his body from quivering.

His face was filled with extreme fear.

[Is this demon really that foppish black sheep of the Ye Clan?

Who the... Who the fxxk collected that bullshxt information?]

The guy nearly cried out, [Since such a terrible monster could be called a foppish black sheep... are you telling me that all the foppish lads in the world are monsters too?]

Ye Xiao wore a smile on his face, but he was actually rather furious.

The four men had actually tried to kill him on the street without even caring that they were in public. They were so brazen and unscrupulous.

They didn't care about hurting innocent people...

The anger inside Ye Xiao had reached its pinnacle.

Dealing with men who disregarded innocent lives, the Xiao Monarch never showed mercy!

"Now you are absolutely not going to die, but you cannot live well either, because I won't let garbage like you live well." Ye Xiao spoke frankly, "Well, there are many methods in the world that could force a man to tell something he doesn't want to. Do you know what those methods are?"

The man lied on the floor as he stared at Ye Xiao with an absolutely terrified expression.

"I guess you don't know any more than I do." Ye Xiao sighed, "There are so many methods to make people beg for death... Today, you met me. Now you can enjoy these methods from the bottom of your heart. You are lucky, because you are going to experience something most of the human beings wouldn't be able to experience."

The man's eyes were begging for mercy, and he only had a sliver of hope, [Oh God! Please! He must be exaggerating!]

Ye Xiao sighed, "Don't even think for a moment that I am boasting. Such methods, I really know a lot. And... I know a lot more than those executioners do. So, you are really lucky, because in the history of this world, there has never been a man who has experienced all the 108 brutal torture methods!"

He smiled, "Of course you are unlucky at the same time, because these tortures hurt really, really bad. It can't be explained just by speaking. Let's go ahead and make you taste each and every one of them. Now we begin with the first, the Flame in the Heart."

And then he reached out his hand, very slowly.

He didn't speak any other words at all.

Everything about this assassination including who was behind it, who planned it, and who wanted to kill him...

He asked none of those questions.

He just started with the torture.

He acted like these details didn't interest him in the least, and the only thing that he was interested in was torturing!

Under the fearful look of the man, a flame suddenly appeared in Ye Xiao's hand. - Poof! - It was burning in Ye Xiao's hand.

Ye Xiao explained patiently, "Look, this is fire. However, this fire is no ordinary fire... Because it can't burn anything... if you don't believe me, just look."

Ye Xiao moved the flame to his own clothes, and then to his hair. There was no trace of burning.

"Of course, this fire is not completely useless. It's usage lies in the fact... that it can enter a man's mouth and move to his belly bit by bit... and then it will burn the man's heart... Hmm. No, I was wrong. It is not burning. It is roasting. While your heart still beats... it will keep on roasting it. But it won't kill you. I can only say that it is a strange feeling... Right, why don't you try it."

"Be proud as the first man who can experience such a feeling. How admirable." Ye Xiao praised.

The man's eyes were already dull. His pupils were nearly dilated. He was shaking because of fear. A terrible stench was spreading out from the lower part of his body.

"Don't fart. That is not civilized." Ye Xiao reprimanded, "Didn't your daddy teach you that?" He then hit him with a finger which had actually blocked his acupoint of excretion. And then he pulled up the man's head and pushed the flame into his mouth.

"New, new, new, n..." The man kept shaking his head. He struggled with faint efforts. He had tried his best, but realized that he could only draw out a tiny amount of strength. The words of begging, "no, no, no, no" had actually become "new, new, new, n..." due to excessive shivering...

The flame had been delivered into his mouth, and he really didn't feel burned at all. There was only a warm feeling of heat slowly moving toward his belly. He actually felt comfortable.

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "Feel anything? Hm, now it has entered the mouth... It isn't scorching, is it? It is even comfortable, right? It should have reached the throat right about now... Not burning either, right? Now it has passed the throat... Hot? It isn't hot, right? Now it gets to the chest... Not hot either, right? I didn't lie to you, did I? Now it gets to the heart... And then, ahem... What about now?"

He hadn't even finished talking, and then the man felt a rushing stream of heat coming up from underneath his heart!

Suddenly, he felt like his heart was slowly being roasted. That terrible feeling was nothing that could be described by any language. Even though his body was thoroughly restricted, he still widely opened his mouth, wishing to cry out loudly.

Ye Xiao slowly covered his mouth with one hand and waved one finger of the other, "Be good. Don't shout. Don't become excited. Feel it slowly. Take it easy. No need to rush."

The man's head was shaking intensely, but he couldn't get rid of Ye Xiao's hand. He couldn't make any sound. His eyes looked like there was a fire burning inside them.

His entire Jing and Mai were twitching at the same time. Blue veins stood out all over his body and then fell back the next moment...

After releasing a large amount of sweat, his clothes were immediately drench.

It could be seen that the pain he was experiencing was excruciating.

"I... I will talk... Please... Stop..." The man finally broke down. He begged repeatedly, looking at Ye Xiao with pleading eyes.

"What did you say?" Ye Xiao frowned, "Don't you realize that I don't really want to know anything from you... Whether you talk or not, it doesn't matter to me at all. You know that, right? Otherwise, I would have asked you, but I didn't. Don't you feel it strange?"

The man looked at him, pleading. His eyes had turned red because of anxiousness.

Ye Xiao sighed, "Fine. Fine. You looked so pathetic... All right then, I will let you say something. But I need to clarify something first... I won't spare your life. You must think about that clearly. In fact, you can keep your mouth shut, and I would like to enjoy seeing you being tortured."

The man sincerely nodded. His forehead was drenched as he spoke, "I will tell you everything. All I ask you is to let me die quickly..."

Quickly peaking so, he realized that his body had nearly dried out because of the flame. After saying just one sentence, his throat had already bled.

Ye Xiao waved his hand and the flame instantly went back to his hand. It was pulsating slightly. Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "Who sent you here?"

"It was the crown princess! The crown princess..." Sweat trickled down his forehead as his face cramped up, creating a ferocious expression. He shouted loudly since he couldn't wait to tell the truth, but his voice was hoarse and was barely audible.

...

'He who stayed in the house was hit by the misfortune from the sky'- It is not a Chinese saying. It means misfortune happens to someone who doesn't expect it.

Chapter 72: The Divine Arms Mill!

Ye Xiao felt a surge of motivation fill his heart.

“The crown princess? Who are you? Are you from the Mu Clan?”
Ye Xiao asked.

“No... we are the guards of the east royal palace. The four of us...” The man spoke with great difficulty. He felt the pain intensify, so he groaned, “Please... spare me... a quick death...”

Ye Xiao’s eyes showed fierceness and spoke blandly, “The crown princess... The guards of the east royal palace...”

...

Ye Xiao questioned him three more times to make sure that he was not being lied to.

He walked out of the covert.

On the floor of the area he vacated, the guard silently lay. The corners of his mouth showed a smile which implied “final relief”.

There seemed to be a sense of gratitude...

It seemed that dying was a blessing to him.

It looked like nothing had happened. Not even a single trace of them could be found. However, a vigorous man just disappeared forever...

“The Crown Prince’s Palace. The crown princess.” Ye Xiao was walking casually with a beaming face, but these words were lingering inside his mind.

He suddenly came up with a bold idea: [Why not sneak into the Crown Prince’s Palace and kill the lousy couple?]

...

When he walked back to the street, he looked leisurely. He was pleased, as if he was enjoying the spring breeze. He acted like... he had been pacing around and had never left at all...

Even someone who had been trying to keep watch on him would have been fooled, [The young lord has been hanging around on this street buying stuff and has never left... Now he is still here...

But how did three of us die?

And most importantly, one is missing?

Is he alive or dead? Where is he?]

Soon, people from the government arrived. After some sort of investigation process, they took the three dead bodies and left. The other people who were involved were taken with them for interrogation. Among them, there were of course the shopkeepers around the crime scene.

After what happened, people on the street had already gotten away cleanly, except for people like these shopkeepers who had been forced to stay. Although they hadn't even approached the bodies, they could not get away from it. Since people had died in front of their doorsteps, they were surely involved!

These men had their cheeks turned sour. The unexpected disaster was inexplicable for them; it was simply a sudden misfortune.

There were twelve people in the group of the Divine Arms Mill, and six of them were taken to assist the investigation.

Because the Divine Arms Mill had great influence and wished to have some of their men to remain in order to guard the divine weapons, only six of them were taken. If it held slightly lesser influence, all the twelve of them would have been seized, and even those weapons would have been confiscated. Well, as for how they would be confiscated, the opinions might differ...

Ye Xiao was still hanging around casually. Walking and walking, and after a while, he walked into the house of the Divine Arms Mill.

After the homicide case, people on the street disappeared immediately. In the Divine Arms Mill that used to be busier than the market, there was only one guest at the moment, the Lord Ye!

The shopkeeper of the Divine Arms Mill was just lamenting about this misfortune. He had sent men to collect information from the government offices and tried to use some connections for this event to bribe people in power, but then he suddenly saw a guest come in, so he was stunned for a second. His professionalism made him instantly ask, “The... the young lord. What do you need?”

He had been through the shock of the government people, so he was somehow like a trembling bird at the moment. But unexpectedly, he saw a guest enter the house, so he was more or less surprised.

Ye Xiao waved his hand casually, “You are asking nonsense. Could I come to a weapon shop for a pen and paper? Any good blade? Good sword? Good weapon? Good iron? Take them all out.” When speaking, he patted himself on the chest, “You are lucky today. I am full of money!”

The shopkeeper who was stroking his beard was stunned.

All those who had ever sought weapons in the Divine Arms Mill had always acted humbly. Even though the traces were fair, all the customers would say the word “please” as if they were begging. Among those who were seeking divine weapons, this guy who spoke louder because of his wealth was truly rarely seen for the shopkeeper!

[Don't you know that you may be overcharged by saying that? And despite of that, you might even fail to get the items that suits your desire?!]

“May I ask what exactly do you want? Is it a sword or a knife for self-defense, or is it a pike or a halberd that can be used in the big battles? Or maybe it is a small and delicate... weapon that could be hidden with you all the time?”

The shopkeeper saw him as a fool, so he had to guide Ye Xiao.

The other people were still in shock, so he had to do it himself this time.

“The big weapons are not my type, so I shall not take any. Give me two knives and two sword. I want the best. The ones that can chop iron like it was mud. And... those small ones like throwing knife and needle... give me some. Those that can also chop iron like mud.” Ye Xiao waved his hand.

The shopkeeper couldn't help twitching his mouth. In his mind, he had a desire of kicking this guy out.

[Are you capable of purchasing or not?

Even though you are a moron, you are not supposed to let yourself be easily overcharged.

‘Chop irons like mud’, do you even know any sayings other than this? Do you think it could be used to describe the tiny throwing knife and needle? If those expendable weapons are not custom-made, do you think we would use special materials to make them?]

Suppressing the anger in his heart, he brought up two middle-class swords.

[He must be a foppish useless lord... It would be a waste to give him any real precious swords.]

“What the hell are these?” Ye Xiao picked up one sword. He held the nose of the sword with two fingers of one hand and the blade of the sword with two fingers of the other hand, and then he casually folded it.

The sword became bent. When the blade was bent, it started to make cracking sounds. Ye Xiao immediately loosened his grip and said, “This sword sucks! The other one must be of the same quality. The elasticity and the ductility are both below average. I just bent it slightly, and it turned out like that. What garbage!”

The shopkeeper was stunned.

[The swords I just took out are some middle-class swords indeed, but ordinary people can never do something like what he did. Bend the sword using only four fingers? He’s actually a superior master?]

Thinking about that, the shopkeeper became flustered and started sweating. He then brought up some top-class weapons in a hurry.

Ye Xiao looked at one and shook his head, and then another and shook his head again. One after another, he kept rejecting the sword with disappointment on his face.

“More?”

“No.”

“The name of the Divine Arms Mill shocks the capital. However, as I see today, you are not deserving of such a great reputation. Yet you claim to be the Divine Arms Mill?” Ye Xiao frowned and looked at him askew with disdain, “Such scrap metal... they are only a little bit better than the kitchen knife of my house... They really dishonor the word ‘divine’!”

The shopkeeper was a bit pissed when hearing that, “Sir! All the weapons in my shop are made by the true Divine Arms Mill. Even though you are aiming very high and cannot appreciate them, my weapons have never disappointed anyone except you.”

The shopkeeper’s words were neither humble nor pushy. He didn’t offend Ye Xiao, but also didn’t depreciate himself. He was truly open-minded!

Ye Xiao curled his lips and picked up one sword casually, “Proper

goods for distinguished

guests. There are some words I didn't want to say. Let's talk about this sword. There is the pattern of clouds engraved on it and spiritual lights hidden inside. It is made from well-tempered steel. The blade itself gives off a scary aura. It shines in the light. To speak of the appearance of a weapon, it looks as if it is the king of weapons. I guess that this must be the favorite work of your shop, right?"

The shopkeeper raised his head and answered proudly, "Yes. The sword is named 'The Sword of King'!"

"Pah!" Ye Xiao made the sound of spitting and said, "This sword holds too much focus on the appearance. Yet, its essence is flawed. It has been tempered hundreds of times, so it is very sharp indeed, but it has lost its essence and connotation as a sword. Against someone with an ordinary weapon, it would be fine to use this as it would be able to chop through iron as if it was mud. However, if facing off against some real cultivators... the weapons of the cultivators, especially those well-known cultivators, could they be ordinary weapons? Within less than three times of crashing, this sword of yours will be rolled up on the edge. This is its first failure. Seeking sharpness recklessly has lead to its thin blade."

"Second, seeking the pinnacle of lightness makes it too light. It nearly has no weight. Lightness is good for a sword, but even '[four ounces yields 1000 catties](#)' requires four ounces at least. This sword obviously fails. When it is pushed to a certain extent, it will break. The sword is too fragile. That is its second failure."

“Third, after too much tempering, there has been many impurities mixed into the metal. It looks perfect on the outside, but in fact, the impurities contained inside are impossible to be removed. How could such a sword be called a divine weapon!”

Ye Xiao sneered, “A sword with impurities, with the impurities completely mixed into the material of the sword, will never respond to the owner’s mind. No matter how much blood it will be fed, it will still be nothing!”

“This sword is nothing but a ‘pretty’ ordinary metal, yet you actually call it a divine weapon...” Ye Xiao smiled blandly, “It really is unqualified! Every cultivator, especially a superior cultivator, when he wants to buy a weapon, prepares to carry it for his entire life. It will become his vital partner... because they will grow bonds with their weapons...”

“That’s why there is a saying ‘to live when the sword rises; to die when the sword falls’.” Ye Xiao spoke, “That is... when a sword grows a bond with the soul of the man who holds it, if the sword could not bear the strike, neither could the man; he would die! So, it is not a simple oath, it is a fact!”

Ye Xiao smiled coldly with his hands on his back, “I have talked that much. I just want to tell you that if this sword is your best work... Then I can be sure that cultivators at the Sky Origin Stage carry no weapons of yours!”

“Because at that very level, they no longer seek for the sharpness of the weapon, they seek for the bond between the weapons and their souls.”

Ye Xiao sighed disappointedly, “It turns out the well-known Divine Arms Mill is just of this level... It seems I have come to a wrong place today.”

After speaking, he shook his head and turned, preparing to leave.

“Hold on a second, sir!”

...

‘four ounces yields 1000 catties’ (四两拨千斤), means a huge return for a very small investment; a big payoff for a small effort.

Chapter 73: Divine Weapon with Demonic Edge!

The shopkeeper continuously nodded as he listened to Ye Xiao speak about the sword. His face looked indifferent at the beginning, but after a while, it became sincerely moved. When he saw Ye Xiao was preparing to leave, he immediately asked him to stay, “Please stay, sir. You have spoken like a true swordsman. We have proper goods for distinguished guests. Only distinguished people can see the most precious items. To be honest, these weapons here that we put in our showcase are only for ostentation. We just use them to impress some outsiders. As for the real divine weapons... how could we just show them here in front of the public? You are a distinguished man, sir. Since you are seeking weapons with sincerity, may I lead you to our secret storage?”

Ye Xiao’s eyes lit up as he said, “I said the Divine Arms Mill is better heard than seen. It turns out that there are some secrets within it. Ok. That’s fine.”

In his mind he said, [I knew that you guys are not dishonest.

You would never show me the real deal if you didn’t get scolded.]

They both walked to the back of the shop.

A big fellow in cyan robes opened a hidden door for them, and then another big fellow in white robes opened another hidden door. After passing through, the door to the secret storage was revealed.

The shopkeeper unlocked the door himself and walked in with Ye Xiao. The doors were closed immediately. Several superior cultivators came and stood outside the doors.

It is obvious that the security here was extremely rigorous.

After entering the secret storage, what came in sight was a spacious room. Weapons were hung or leaned on three walls.

There were only three weapons!

On the wall in front was a sword, on the wall on the left was a knife, and on the right was a spear! There was a small chest on the floor by the right wall, and on the other side, there were some unimpressive metal.

The sword and the knife were sheathed, while the spear handle was placed on the floor and its blade leaned on the wall. It resembled a king looking down upon the world.

“Well, at least weapons here are fine enough to enter my sight.” Ye Xiao nodded with satisfaction.

After checking carefully, he shook his head again.

The spear was fine. A spear was always used in the formal battle. It moved drastically. Yet normally, the superior cultivators barely

used spears.

Among all the weapons that could create a spiritual connection, the most common were swords and knives; other kinds of weapons were extremely rare.

The spear in front of them lacked spiritualization, but it was still a piece of divine weapon; a perfect weapon for a soldier to cleave enemies and capture the flags.

However, although the sword and the knife were a lot better in both quality and value than the so called “the sword of king”, the spiritual part which Ye Xiao valued the most was still missing.

Or might be broken.

“It seems the divine weapons you Divine Arms Mill make... are only worth mentioning in the Land of Han-Yang...” Ye Xiao didn’t continue to make excessive demands.

Because with the condition of the Land of Han-Yang, the sword, knife and spear were already in the peak range among the divine weapons!

It wouldn’t be appropriate to judge by the standard of the Qing-Yun Realm.

“Are these all? Anything else?” Ye Xiao asked with disappointment, “It would be fine even if it is just some tiny ones.

Throwing knives? Sleeve dagger? Throwing needles? Or maybe...”

The shopkeeper had realized that the guy in front of him was quite professional in smithing although he was young. Yet he actually saw no value in the weapons of his shop...

Even the most precious item of the shop... was too cheap to get in his sight.

The shopkeeper felt disgraced.

So he spoke, “Items of my humble shop are beneath the professional sight. If the weapons here could not suit your demand, I shall only apologize that there are no better weapons here really... The smaller ones. We do have some... There are a set of throwing needles and twelve throwing knives kept in the storage... But those are the last pieces of our departed great master, Shen Lianzi, which remain unfinished... There is still a final step to finish. And that’s why these unfinished pieces are still kept in our shop. Nobody ever wanted them, so they are more like souvenirs now...”

Ye Xiao asked indifferently, “The last pieces of a departed smith? That is interesting. Maybe you could show me.”

“Hmm?” The shopkeeper didn’t hesitate and brought up a small leather bag. After it was opened, Ye Xiao’s eyes lit up immediately.

Inside the bag, there were 108 shining needles. Every piece of it

was extremely thin. They were delicate in shape, giving off a sense of extreme coldness that could make people tremble. Yet the needles were somehow defective; they didn't have edges. Needles without edges, how would they injure enemies and defend the user. With such a defect, the needles were useless.

“Twelve needles together are no thicker than my forefinger. Impressive.” Ye Xiao measured them with eyes and picked one of them in hand. He felt a sense of refreshing coolness and a killing intent hidden inside it. He was motivated, [The needle is filled with spirit. It's something extraordinary.]

He murmured, “Yet the needle has no point... Why?”

“These 108 needles and 12 knives are all made from a piece of Deep Sea Frigid Metal by the great Shen Lianzi. They contain no other materials. However, the proper material required to make the edges was yet to be found. They are simply hard to merge, so they have been kept this way.” The shopkeeper was a bit embarrassed.

“I see.” Ye Xiao put down the needle.

He picked up a throwing knife. The knife was rather delicate. Each of them was only as long as a finger with a beautiful curve. The edge was sharp and filled with terror, shining with a sinister glow.

The knives were also defective in the same way - they had no edges!

Deep Sea Frigid Metal!

Ye Xiao thought of the Spiritual Essence of Gold in his Spaces that he bought earlier. He had spent 1 million taels of silver for it. He was quiet for a moment before he spoke, “These are fine. I will take them. Give me the price.”

“You... you will take them?” The shopkeeper was surprised.

There had been many people saying they were good items after they had seen them, but because they had no edges, they were only ornaments in their eyes. They couldn't be properly used, so nobody really wanted them. People always left some kind words like “this is truly a masterpiece set made by a great smith”... and then they turned away...

For so many years, the shopkeeper had seen a lot of people doing so, but he never expected that the young man in front of him would actually want to buy them.

“I do! State a price!” Ye Xiao nodded affirmatively.

“Well...” The shopkeeper smiled bitterly, “Forgive me, sir. They are not something that can be exchanged with money. Before Shen Lianzi passed away, he said that these were Divine Weapons with Demonic Edge; one who was not a monarch should not use them. They are weapons of the monarch. Once they meet the right person, they will be revealed and start killing in the world. He said that once the right person appeared, we shall charge him nothing

for them; otherwise, they shouldn't be sold for even ten thousand golds. We only hope that... The right one will return us a favor in the future whenever the Divine Arms Mill makes a mistake because of offending someone or if we fall into trouble."

When speaking, the shopkeeper was somehow indifferent.

[Such defective items are actually called... the weapon of the monarch?

How ridiculous!

It was apparently an excuse for the fact that they were impossible to sell because of the flaw.

Fine. Since it was the words of a deceased person and luckily the man in front of me has a crazily high standard that disdains everything, I will just present him.

They are not gonna be sold out within a thousand years anyway.

Making friends with a valuable man shouldn't be a mistake!]

However, after hearing what the shopkeeper had said, Ye Xiao was rather motivated.

He stared at the needles and knives for a long time.

[Divine Weapon with Demonic Edge!

Weapon of the monarch!

What does that mean?]

It reminded him of his title in the previous life: the Xiao Monarch!

[The monarch!

Does it mean I, the monarch? Or a monarch of the mortal world?]

He took a closer look at those dedicated items that were sending out endless senses of hostility. He had a feeling, [These are not some defective items!

Nor some unfinished pieces that were casually made!

That departed smith, Shen Lianzi... He must have spent all his energy on these 120 pieces of weapons!

And that had led him to death when he finally finished these fantastic pieces!

These are the true most precious items of the Divine Arms Mill!

The true divine weapons!

Yet he had left such a strange message. Present?

Did this Shen Lianzi see through the destiny? And he wanted to use these items to seek an opportunity to leave the Divine Arms Mill a chance of survival?]

He collected his thoughts for a long time and then said blandly, “Since master Shen Lianzi had left such words, and I like this set of weapons a lot, then... if someday the Divine Arms Mill offends me... I will spare you for good!”

The shopkeeper smiled bitterly.

[The guy talks with such smugness... He actually [climbs up along the pillar I made](#)... Spare us? Who do you think you are? Such a...

I am speechless!]

However, it was the last word of a deceased master, and it was restated by himself, so there was no way to deny it even if he wanted to. So at the moment, his face looked like he had just swallowed shxt.

Ye Xiao smiled and put the needles and knives into his clothes.

108 needles and 12 knives, all together, were packaged only with a

small bag.

“That spear. I will take it too.” Ye Xiao pointed at the spear.

The spear was for another intent. He once heard Su Yeyue said that her father, the Prince Hua-Yang, was the best at using the spear. The amount of weapons in his house could nearly fill up an entire weapon shop, and most of them were spears.

As he previously heard, he knew that the Prince Hua-Yang must have no proper weapon!

Because... one weapon was enough if it was a proper one. A man doesn't need to keep that many weapons.

This time, the battle was in the south. The Prince Hua-Yang would soon join the battle. Therefore, when Ye Xiao saw the spear, he had a plan. He prepared to give it to the Prince Hua-Yang as a gift for nothing but all these years' secret protection...

To give him a spear was something worth doing.

...

To climb the pillar that is made by others, (顺着竿子往上爬), means to seize the very chance for self-praise.

Chapter 74: Your Death Will Lead To My Miserable Life

Besides... the spear was for his future father-in-law.

This act perfectly described: “[fertile soil never went to the fields of strangers](#)”.

Ye Xiao felt happy about it.

“Well... If you really like it...” The shopkeeper thought for a while and said, “750 thousand taels of silver. What do you think?”

The shopkeeper was obviously raising the price.

Ye Xiao knew it as well. The spear might not be ordinary, but for the weapons in the market, the prices of the best ones were no higher than 50 thousand.

Although that spear was far better than those weapons, the price should not be above 500 thousand!

The difference of ten times had reached the limit!

It should be stated that spending 500 thousand for just a spear... would be simply squandering money. A weapon with its spirit broken wasn't worthy of that.

In Ye Xiao's estimation, the spear was only worth about 250 thousand. That was already an exaggerated price.

The shopkeeper knew that Ye Xiao had sharp eyes, yet he still stated a price like that. He had felt uncomfortable because Ye Xiao would have the needles and knives for free, so he intended to earn some money from the spear!

He looked at Ye Xiao with a smile. Apparently, he was waiting for Ye Xiao to bargain.

[The price must have scared the guy. He will either be angry or talk a lot to bargain. If he really wants it, it will surely take me a long time to finish the deal. However, he spent nothing and took two weapons from me...

Even though the needles and knives are defective and nobody ever wants them, they are still the last creations of the great master. He wouldn't dare to bargain drastically for the spear, would he?

No matter what price you make, I will gain some profits at least. That will fix my loss.]

"A fair price." Contrary to the shopkeeper's expectation, Ye Xiao agreed without hesitation, "750 thousand, right? That's it then. I will take it!"

The shopkeeper was shocked and skeptical, because he couldn't truly believe what he had just heard.

He would have never thought that there was a fool like this guy in the world. Not even in his dreams.

A spear, which was slightly better than average quality, was priced for 750 thousand taels of silver! The guy didn't even bargain, he just agreed without any hesitation!

However, he didn't know that from the moment he spoke out the price of 750 thousand, he had already lost the opportunity for the Divine Arms Mill to truly rise in the Land of Han-Yang!

Ye Xiao always discriminated between love and hate. He paid debts with gratitude to friends, and with savagery to his enemies.

The reason why he hesitated when they were talking about the needles and knives was because he was thinking about whether or not to accept them. And, he finally chose to accept the needles and knives. That meant that he owed a favor to Shen Lianzi and also agreed to his request.

He had decided to keep an eye on the Divine Arms Mill. If they behaved themselves, he wouldn't mind helping them truly rise or taking them under his protection once he became strong enough.

However, he wouldn't mind it if he was to return the favor with money. That would reduce a lot of extra efforts on his side.

A favor was the debt that was the most difficult to pay!

If it was possible to return a favor with money, it was the best bargain!

For Ye Xiao, money was the cheapest thing after all.

To end the connection with 750 thousand taels of silver, that was really the best bargain!

He discriminated between love and hate indeed, yet he was not a stubborn man.

Even so, if the Divine Arms Mill had troubles in the future, Ye Xiao would offer his help.

However, it would only be similar to that of the departed master's last words... only a "favor"!

Then he could comfort his heart by having paid the debt.

He took out some notes and counted 750 thousand taels of silver worth of money. He gave the notes to the shopkeeper with pleasure and relief, and then he reached his hand to pick up the spear. He said, "I hope we can see each other again." Then he turned and left.

The shopkeeper held the stack of notes and watched Ye Xiao's back. He didn't feel happy about earning a lot. Instead, he felt like he had done something terribly wrong...

However, that feeling just flashed away. After that, what he could feel was only the great pleasure of gaining so much money!

[Yah, hah, hah. Wealth!

I gained over 650 thousand by selling only a single spear... With that material and quality, counting in all the extra cost, the spear costed me no more than 100 thousand...]

Ye Xiao walked out the shop with the spear in hand. He casually swung the spear and split it into three parts. One part was the spearhead, while the others were only metal sticks.

There were two sets of circular joints to reconnect the three parts. The spear could easily be rejoined with a sound of "ka". It was tightly joined and was able to bear all kind of strikes. As long as the strikes were below the strike-resistance threshold of the spear, the joints could handle them well...

There were some light patterns on the spear emitting a sense of coolness. Ye Xiao knew that there must be some Wind Copper mixed into the spear during the tempering. It allowed the spear to absorb the sweat in the hands during the fight.

This design prevented the spear from slipping off from the user's

hands and causing mistakes. Besides, it made the spear extremely comfortable to hold. That was really an original and convenient idea.

Two small words were engraved on the sphere.

“Hundred Fights!”

It weighed 78 kilograms!

Looking back to the entrance of the Divine Arms Mill, Ye Xiao showed a indescribable smile on the corner of his mouth. He then left with big strides, holding the Hundred Fights Spear.

...

Ye Xiao didn't go home immediately. He called a carriage and went to the Palace of Hua-Yang with the spear.

He packed the three parts of the spear with a big cloth bag, and with the bag in hand, he spoke his name in front of the Palace of Hua-Yang.

Besides delivering the spear, he naturally had another purpose here.

...

Prince Hua-Yang was having a meeting with his men discussing the war affair in order to make a military strategy.

Although the royal decree hadn't been made yet, Prince Hua-Yang knew that his presence in that battle was unavoidable this time.

At the moment, it was already the last part of the meeting. Prince Hua-Yang said, "... HA, HA. All these years, our passion for fights has never fallen. Since so, when the decree arrives, you and I, my friends, let's fight side by side in the battlefield once again!"

Everybody stood up with respect, "We will follow the great Prince Hua-Yang to sweep the battlefield!"

Prince Hua-Yang laughed loudly with a great heroic spirit.

At the moment, someone reported, "The son of the General Ye Nantian, Ye Xiao, asks for audience."

"The son-in-law comes to see his father-in-law. We shall not disturb you of enjoying your harmonious family relationships." The guys scattered while laughing and joking.

In the battle or the war camp, Prince Hua-Yang had strict enforcement of orders and prohibitions. But personally, he never went about with his head high in the air to his men. They were like brothers to him, and they always talked freely. Usually, they were not scared of him. When there was a chance to make a joke on him,

they would certainly do it.

Prince Hua-Yang laughed, “You bastards never let go of the chance... All right. Off you all. Let me be clear. When the day comes, if any of you is left behind... then you know what will happen!”

The guys all laughed and left right away.

Prince Hua-Yang then changed his expression and said, “What reason does the guy come here for? Take him to the reception room.”

And then he walked to the reception room himself with vigorous strides.

In fact, Prince Hua-Yang was not so happy about his daughter’s marriage.

He only had one child, yet she was going to marry such a worthless jerk...

If he gave no concern about the fact that Ye Nantian had saved his life... If he hadn’t suggested this engagement in a whim that day, he wouldn’t have been driven mad by the little foppish fool of the House of Ye in the recent years...

Prince Hua-Yang was known as the No.1 general in the Kingdom of Chen, the War God of the Kingdom. No one was able to

challenge his position.

That was acknowledged by all the people in the kingdom!

However, only Prince Hua-Yang knew the truth in his own heart. To command an army in a battle, to devise military strategies, to fight in the boundless battlefield... In any aspect, he was inferior to Ye Nantian...

But Ye Nantian had always remained obscure. It was even a bit scary how he had maintained such a low profile. He never initiatively revealed anything about himself...

“A great man like Ye Nantian, how can he have a son like Ye Xiao. That is really ‘a hero father has a stupid son’... Damn it!” Prince Hua-Yang held his forehead because of headache and murmured.

He had decided the marriage because he had thought that “[a tiger father would not beget a dog son](#)”. Yet he had never thought that the man who was both brave and resourceful would actually have such a worthless son...

Now it was too late for regret.

...

“What are you here for?” Prince Hua-Yang was indifferent. His squared-face showed no emotions.

Prince Hua-Yang looked down upon Ye Xiao from the bottom of his heart, but a general should stay calm and collected all the time. He should never show his anger from the heart, and he should be indifferent to everything.

This was Ye Xiao's first time to see Prince Hua-Yang, his future father-in-law.

Princess Hua-Yang, wife of Prince Hua-Yang was also sitting in the room, looking up and down at her future son-in-law.

She saw that Ye Xiao behaved well. He didn't look like the foppish lad as the rumor described. And she found that he had a pretty face and acted elegantly like a young spark. She already had a favorable impression of him.

"Nothing important actually." Ye Xiao smiled and said, "I heard that because of the battle in the south, the capital is in disturbance... I am afraid that the good days are about to end."

Prince Hua-Yang looked at his future son-in-law and spoke blandly, "There is war in the south. The court and the public are in turbulence... I am afraid this has nothing to do with you."

His words were rather straight, even dismissive. He was obviously satirizing that Ye Xiao was a stupid black sheep who knew nothing about hardships of the people and was only seeking fun and fooling around in his own life.

“How does it have nothing to do with me? It definitely has something to do with me. A great serious thing.” Ye Xiao spoke seriously, “As long as you leave for battle, my good days in the capital will end...”

Prince Hua-Yang couldn't help but scornfully laugh, “It turns out you know about this point. You are slightly better than those who are worse than dog shxts.”

“I also know that if anything unlucky happens to you, my days will be far worse.” Ye Xiao continued speaking “seriously”.

...

‘fertile soil ... of aliens’ (肥水不流外人田) means one should not leave the benefits to the strangers.

‘a tiger father would not beget a dog son’ (虎父无犬子) means there will be no laggard among the children of a brave or talented men.

Chapter 75: An Outstanding Character

"What a prick!" Prince Hua-Yang's eyes were wide open, he was furious, "You little... little shxt! What did you say!"

Princess Hua-Yang also humphed in her mind and thought, [This little bastard truly doesn't know how to talk. Such a waste of his natural-born pretty appearance.] The favorable impression which was just established had instantly crumbled.

Ye Xiao laughed and carelessly said, "So today when I was hanging around... and saw something. It is pretty good. See, I brought it to you immediately."

Saying that, he dropped the bag on the floor.

"What is that?" Prince Hua-Yang frowned.

"A spear." Ye Xiao opened the bag and picked up the parts of the spear. With two sounds of "kah", the extremely distinguished Hundred Fight Spear showed up in front of them!

The spear was in a spiral shape and was made from fine steel. The spearhead was 50 centimeters long!

With just a single glance, it aroused a feeling of dread in people's hearts.

"Hundred Fight Spear!" Prince Hua-Yang's eyes lit up as he jumped out of his seat.

On the side, Princess Hua-Yang made an exclamation when she saw it.

The mother-in-law of Ye Xiao was no ordinary woman. She used to cultivate martial arts, and her cultivation level was not low at all. When she saw the world-killing vigor and the overbearing sharpness and proudness of the spear, she knew that it was not some ordinary weapon!

The past few days, she was just worrying that her husband should get some powerful weapons for the upcoming battle. Then, this guy just brought them this precious spear as if he knew her thoughts like a worm in her body!

A sense of satisfaction appeared in her eyes when she looked at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao didn't know that his actions had won a good impression from his mother-in-law...

Prince Hua-Yang kept his eyes on the spear and paced around it. Apparently, he liked it very much.

He had gone to see this spear many times before.

However, it needed at least 250 thousand taels of silver just to

buy the spear from the Divine Arms Mill.

That was worth as much as the cost of maintaining an army of 500 hundred men for three months. Prince Hua-Yang was extremely fond of the spear and had dreamed about getting it many times. [If only I could hold this spear and stand in the battlefield...]

However, he was too thrifty to buy it.

But surprisingly, the spear was now in front of him!

"How did you get this treasure?" Su Dinghuo, the Prince Hua-Yang, didn't even try to disguise his love for the spear in his eyes.

"I bought it, of course." Ye Xiao smiled, "Maybe you don't need it... But I will just leave it to you. It is better staying in your hands than mildewing somewhere else."

Prince Hua-Yang rubbed his mustache and laughed. But suddenly, doubts arose in his mind, causing him to stop. He doubtfully asked, "How did you get that much money? That day when I tried to get this spear, I stopped because it was too expensive. Your family is not richer than mine. Ye Nantian is poor. How did you buy it? You didn't swindle it, did you? According to your reputation, you very likely have done so. I heard that you swindled the blood ginseng out of the House of Wang. You must have done the same trick this time..."

Ye Xiao didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

[It is true that good news never go beyond the gate, while bad news spread far and wide. Is my reputation really that bad?]

"Relax. I got this spear legitimately, and I spent more than others would!" He solemnly said, "As for why I could afford it, I recently acquired an unexpected wealth... Please just relax and take it."

Prince Hua-Yang humphed and spoke, "With your reputation, I can't trust you..."

Princess Hua-Yang annoyingly said, "Why are you so stubborn... The kid cares about you and brought you this precious spear with kindness. You are actually showing an attitude like that. You really shouldn't."

While speaking, she turned to Ye Xiao and said, "Xiao-Xiao, where did you rob this spear? Ahem. I mean swindle... Erh. I mean... Where did you buy it?"

Ye Xiao was speechless and upset. What a damn grievance!

[I brought a gift... yet I am actually disdained like this! That... that is truly my first time in my two lives...

I, the honorable Xiao Monarch, would actually have such a day!

And I can't burst my anger to them. Instead, I have to cater to them...

That is so annoying!]

"A few days ago, I saved a man." Ye Xiao blurted out a lie, "The man was being chased and ran into me... A man with a kind heart like me would of course help him. The man gave me two jade bottles before he left."

"I didn't care much about them at the beginning. Until lately, I discovered that in each bottle, there was a supreme dan bead..." Ye Xiao said.

"Huh?"

Princess Hua-Yang exclaimed. She looked surprised and happy.

"What? Really?" Prince Hua-Yang was a collected man, but he couldn't help exclaiming. He stood up, "Were they really the supreme dan beads?"

As the No.1 general in the Kingdom of Chen, how could he not know of the supreme dan beads that had stirred up the chaos in the whole capital these past few days? He would have never expected that this guy had actually saved the owner of the supreme dan beads.

[It is true that Feng Zhiling has been missing since he left the

salesroom... He was being hunted and was saved by the lucky Ye Xiao...

Does this kid have a kind heart? It must be a coincidence that he saved the owner of the supreme dan beads and benefitted as a return!]

"Then where are the supreme dan beads?" Prince Hua-Yang asked.

Ye Xiao took out a jade bottle and smiled, "Right here. I knew that you are going to join the battle soon, so I brought you the supreme dan bead as a gift..."

Princess didn't wait for Prince Hua-Yang to speak and quickly snatched the bottle.

She acted so quickly that Prince Hua-Yang didn't have the time to react.

That was no kidding. With such a dan, her husband was like carrying an extra life with him!

That was so precious!

"Xiao, you are so..." Princess Hua-Yang nearly choked with sobs, "So full of filial piety! It was a truly worthwhile thing to let our daughter marry you... Oh..."

Women were capricious. Princess Hua-Yang just had a few good feelings to Ye Xiao, but now she liked him to the fullest. She had already started to call him "Xiao" now. Apparently, she had already treated him as her present son-in-law. A gift from her son-in-law was obviously something she should and would love to accept!

Prince Hua-Yang was speechless.

[Arh. Woman... Several days ago, you just cried in front of me, blaming me that letting our daughter marry that guy was ruining our daughter's life. Look at you now. Just for a dan bead, you immediately 'sold' our daughter to him...

"What a loss of principle! You just can't restrain yourself."

Prince Hua-Yang helplessly sighed and said, "And the other dan bead?"

He was thinking, [The battle is full of traps. If any of my loyal brothers suffers a fatal wound, another supreme dan bead can save another life. Although it is a bit presumptuous to ask for it, I could only care less about that right now!

I have already betrothed my daughter to you. What could be wrong to ask you for two dan beads!]

Thinking about that, he spoke boldly, "How many do you have? Take them out! Give me all!"

[I should be allowed to ask for anything from my son-in-law!]

Princess Hua-Yang showed the whites of her eyes. [You old man criticized me just now... It turns out you have lost your principle yourself! I was just accepting it from others, yet you are asking for it. That's a huge difference. I despise you very much!]

"I don't have it..." Ye Xiao threw up his hands, "I sold the other one and bought the spear for you. Where do you think did I get the money from..."

"You!" Prince Hua-Yang was furious, "You black sheep! You, you, you... you are exasperating... A dan bead that could bring the dead back to life, you exchanged it for a stupid bloody spear!"

Princess Hua-Yang was unhappy all the sudden, "What are you talking about, you old man? The kid just saved one for you. He could have kept it to himself, and you wouldn't know of it, would you? You old man. You really don't know how to appreciate what is good for you! How could you say it's just a stupid spear. You have longed for it for a long time. I always knew that!"

Prince Hua-Yang was a bit guilty and said, "What a shame... a supreme dan bead could save a life..." He still felt aching about it.

He usually didn't appreciate a supreme dan bead a lot, but since the war was approaching, he saw it as something extremely valuable.

Ye Xiao did have more, a lot more. However, he wouldn't dare to reveal them at the moment even if he would die for not doing so...

As a man like Prince Hua-Yang, it was normal that he had one supreme dan bead. But if he had many... it would draw suspicions or greedy eyes. He was afraid that everyone in the Palace of Hua-Yang would be in danger because of it...

If so, that was not a gift, instead it was a curse!

Ye Xiao said, "You are not seeing things in the right way... With this spear, you will be invincible in the battle, killing enemies, capturing flags... That will save a lot more lives than what a dan bead could do."

Princess Hua-Yang's eyes lit up as she said, "That's right. That is reasonable. As long as you stay alive, you can save many many men!"

She was a clever woman, so she naturally understood the meaning of Ye Xiao's words: [The supreme dan bead... You must not give it to others...

That means giving a life.]

Prince Hua-Yang sighed and frowned for a long time.

After a while, he spoke gently, "They are all my brothers... It is acceptable not to save them when I am not able to... However, now that I could, if I were to keep this dan bead for myself... how could I face myself again?"

The princess and Ye Xiao were both silent.

Loving his soldiers like they were his own sons and sharing happiness and woe with them; standing side by side in the chaotic storms of the world.

That was Prince Hua-Yang, Su Dingguo.

He meticulously treated his soldiers as he treated his own kin. The princess and Ye Xiao both believed that in the battle, if one of his men and himself were both badly injured... the one who would take the supreme dan bead would never be Prince Hua-Yang!

Even if he had 100 supreme dan beads with him, he would take none for himself.

If he wasn't like that, maybe he wouldn't have been the Prince Hua-Yang whose majesty was felt throughout the whole kingdom for decades.

Ye Xiao felt admiration in his heart.

An outstanding character, Prince Hua-Yang was definitely one!

...

Prince Hua-Yang was delighted. He asked Ye Xiao to stay for dinner and let Su Ye-Yue, who was grounded, to join them. The four of them sat together around the table, two old and young couples. It really looked like a harmonious family enjoying happiness together. The house was filled with laughter and cheerful voices.

...

Chapter 76: Your Father Is a Peerless Figure!

...

It was the first time for the four of them to have a dinner together since the two kids were engaged.

“If your father is here, it would be perfect...” Prince Hua-Yang drank a couple of liquor and then sighed with emotion.

Princess Hua-Yang nodded in agreement.

It seemed like Prince Hua-Yang had changed his attitude towards Ye Xiao. At least right now, he didn't loathe him like he did before.

What Ye Xiao did had made some difference. He brought the spear to Prince Hua-Yang before he left for battle.

That was not something an ordinary kid would do.

“Our families have been close for many years, but we have never enjoyed a proper meal together. Your father has been guarding the north all the time. He seldom comes back to the capital. I have been staying in the capital all the time, and I could not leave for even a day. And whenever your father returns, it means I have to leave for somewhere else...”

Su Dingguo smiled gently, “Because when your father returns, it means the north is in peace. Since the most dangerous area is in peace, it means matters in the other areas need to be handled as the primary tasks for the kingdom... There won’t be anyone who could complete such tasks well except me.”

“Hmm... I might seem arrogant to say that I am the only one who can do that. In fact, your father surely can, but he is too lazy. He would never waste a single minute of his vacation.” He looked at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao didn’t speak. He kept acting decently, silently eating and drinking.

Su Yeyue looked at her father, and then looked at Ye Xiao. She smiled with pleasure from the bottom of her heart. She lowered her head to focus on eating. She seemed to be thinking about something, and her cheeks suddenly turned red...

Ye Xiao raised the cup and proposed a toast to Prince Hua-Yang, and then he said, “I wonder how you and my father became friends?”

Su Dingguo’s eyes were clouded with nostalgia as he stared blankly for a second. He then gently answered, “Your father... is truly a peerless figure...”

“Peerless figure?” Ye Xiao was surprised.

The word “peerless” was not a word that people casually used.

For Ye Xiao, there were only a few that he thought were peerless in both the Land of Han-Yang and the Qing-Yun Realm.

However...

[Even though he is only a peerless man in the Land of Han-Yang...] He drank and thought, [... he is still peerless after all.]

“I am a prince in the kingdom. I have seen many great men. I know something about great people. However... I still have no idea where your father came from even after all these years. It is like he just suddenly appeared out of nowhere... And he even looks down upon the world.”

Prince Hua-Yang’s voice was filled with yearning for the past.

After he spoke those words, he glanced at Ye Xiao and then turned a bit angry, “You goddamn fool have never known what your father has done for you. You have no idea how much he has sacrificed for you! You ungrateful stupid bastard! Stupid little shxt! You garbage!”

Ye Xiao was speechless.

[What the hell is the matter with him?

We were just happy drinking, eating and talking, and praising my father, yet he suddenly started to shout at me... I just gave you a spear worth 750 thousand...

You old fool actually cursed me!

Are you drunk or have you taken any wrong pills?]

“You... speak discreetly. Why are you cursing?” Princess Hua-Yang was also unsatisfied with what her husband had just said. She frowned and said, “In front of the kids, keep your decency, would you? You are a prince...”

“Decency my ass! Prince my cxck! Without his father, I would have died a long time ago! What kind of dead man need decency!”

Prince Hua-Yang hit the table and pointed at Ye Xiao, “You little shxt. You seem a little better now, yet when thinking about what a prick you were before, I only want to split you into pieces! And feed your pxnis to the dogs!”

Princess Hua-Yang and Su Yeyue both blushed and lowered their heads.

[What did the old fool say. He actually wanted to feed the dogs his own son-in-law's pxnis... What a fool!]

Ye Xiao was stunned. He was at a loss.

[Why... why is he so emotional?

The former owner of my body was not a good kid. That is true. But no matter how bad he was, he was just a teenager. How bad could he possibly be? Is it necessary to curse him like that?]

As Prince Hua-Yang talked like that, Ye Xiao was like a scourge that was hated by both man and god!

Prince Hua-Yang stopped and sighed.

“In those years...” It looked like he was once again experiencing the battles from those days.

“That year, I led the army against the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. In an attempt to rescue the besieged 30 thousand brothers of mine, I raided the enemy’s troops. That time, the Kingdom of Lan-Feng had discovered my raid. They set up a trap and were waiting for me to fall in it. What I did was to actually lead my men to their deaths...”

“When I thought we were all going to die there, a man in white wearing a mask suddenly appeared. He came from the sky with only a sword. He landed in the middle of the 300 thousand soldiers of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng and led me to slash a path out of it.”

“With the help of this marvelous cultivator, I actually survived. The most important thing was that, if he didn’t show up that time,

that would be a big failure of mine. The invincible Military God? It would have been a joke already!”

“That day, the sun bled into the sky. Hundreds of thousands of soldiers were fighting in the final battle of the war.” He raised his head and stared at the sky through the window. He spoke gently, “The blood had dyed the ground. Every soldier of either side had went mad because of killing. At that time, an impatient and vigorous voice echoed, ‘Who is Su Dingguo?’”

“The voice came from far away, but everyone in the battle heard it. It was a battle of hundreds of thousands people! Even a thunder was insignificant at that moment... However, that voice had made all the soldiers stop fighting at the same time!”

“I was among my men. I thought that there was a superior cultivator in the enemy’s troops, and he wanted to kill me in order to capture my flag. Even though I knew I would never have a chance to defeat such a superior cultivator, I couldn’t lower my head in front of all my men. So I answered loudly, ‘I am Su Dingguo! Speak your name! I never kill a man with no name!’”

When he spoke of these events, Prince Hua-Yang felt like he was seeing the gruesome scenes of that battle once again. His voice became terrified, and his face horribly distorted.

Su Yeyue was overtaken by worry, so she held her father’s hand.

Prince Hua-Yang took a deep breath and calmed down. He laughed and said, “Damn it... ‘Never kill a man with no name’ my

ass. With a single battle, I had killed more than one thousand men without knowing any of their names. What I said was just to boost my courage. The man was too strong for me. His strength was in a level that I had never known about. A general shouldn't fear death during the battle, however, dealing with a powerful enemy like that, I felt terrified..."

Ye Xiao was surprised that his father-in-law was so cute that he actually told them his innermost thoughts and feelings... as well as his disgraceful experience!

"... That voice then spoke, 'You are Su Dingguo? Good. Let me give you a gift.' And then I saw a sword light rushing over from the peak of a mountain. At that moment, because of the shining sword light, the sun seemed to lose its glow... The sword light was getting bigger and bigger, longer and longer, harder and harder... Finally, it reached the... crowd!"

Prince Hua-Yang was fascinated. Recalling the sword light in that battle, he was filled with enjoyment.

Princess Hua-Yang must have thought about something naughty as a blush appeared on her face. She looked at Prince Hua-Yang with embarrassment and then lowered her head immediately. She was murmuring, "Shameless old bastard!"

Ye Xiao was holding the cup and touching his lower jaw with a look of "I am listening and thinking".

In his heart, he felt very curious, [Longer and longer? Bigger and

bigger? Harder and harder...

Was he really talking about the sword light?]

He couldn't help looking down on his crotch...

And then he coughed and said, "Admirable! Admirable!" He raised the cup and drank.

Prince Hua-Yang was lost in the memory of the old days. He was shaking his head slowly and murmuring. He didn't know he had described the sword light in an inappropriate way.

Obviously, that battle was the greatest honor of Prince Hua-Yang!

"That sword move slaughtered those men like crushing dry weeds and smashing rotten wood!" Prince Hua-Yang sighed, "People always said that the army slaughters its adversaries as easy as crushing dry weeds and smashing rotten wood... After that, I witnessed what crushing dry weeds and smashing rotten wood truly means! That was the real glow of a peerless expert!"

"After that light slashed down, thousands of men had already fallen while he calmly stood there. I discovered that the man's clothes were still clean and white!"

Crushing dry weeds and smashing rotten wood (摧枯拉朽) means destroy things easily with irresistible force.

Chapter 77: Questions About His Parents

Prince Hua-Yang continued speaking passionately. His face had turned red because he was excited enough to feel his blood boil.

"... Across the blade of his sword, blood flowed, dripping down to the ground. His eyes resembled two sharp swords which stared at me as he asked, 'Su Dingguo, I can bring a complete turnabout in this battle, but in return, you need to give me a thing. What do you think?' And then I answered, 'As long as you can turn the table, I can even give you my head!' The man in white nodded and said, 'Very well. Follow me!'"

"The whole conversation had no superfluous words. And then he turned around and fought his way towards the densest part of the enemy troops' formation. We fought hard, rushing here and there, covering the entire battlefield. He used incredible martial arts to change the flow of the battle, and then, all my men got together under his lead and broke out of the encirclement!"

"From beginning to end, the man in black was concentrating on fighting and rushing. When his sword swung, all the people in front of him fell down. He kept swinging his sword till we got out. He never stopped, his sword never stopped."

"The man in white was your father, Ye Nantian!"

Su Dingguo looked at Ye Xiao, "Do you know why your father saved me?"

Ye Xiao was stunned and he said, "Was it... for me?"

"That's right! You are not completely stupid after all!" Prince Hua-Yang humphed and said, "After we got out of the besiegement, before I had time to say thank you to your father, he said, 'Now that I have done what I promised to do, you should honor your end of the bargain. I need your Seven Hearts Nine Seeds Dreamy Lotus!'. He was completely exhausted. In fact, your father had received many wounds during the fight. More than fifty cuts were gushing out blood, but he didn't care about them at all. He simply stated his request."

Ye Xiao was astonished.

[The Seven Hearts Nine Seeds Dreamy Lotus!

He wanted that!]

At that moment, the Xiao Monarch finally realized what had been wrong with his body.

The Seven Hearts Nine Seeds Lotus was used for curing some natural-born diseases.

Actually, when the dead Ye Xiao was still a fetus, he had been suffering from poisoning and Jing and Mai damage. Although he was successfully born, his body was weak, and he was in a critical condition throughout his infancy.

This Lotus was the perfect cure for that.

It was not extremely precious, but it was extremely rare!

The reason why it was called "Dreamy Lotus" was that it was only seen in dreams.

Prince Hua-Yang laughed and said, "I found it by coincidence when I was in a battle on a snowy mountain. I encountered an avalanche and was buried underneath the snow. After I dug myself out, I found the Seven Hearts Nine Seeds Dreamy Lotus. Although I had been cherishing the Dreamy Lotus, after that fight, I had no hesitation and I said, 'You can have it!'"

"After that, we returned to the capital. When we arrived, the first thing I did was to send the lotus to your father." Su Dingguo smiled warmly, "And the friendship between your father and I was built at that moment."

Ye Xiao felt that a lot of events had started to make sense.

He thought, [My 'father' actually did such a great thing in the past... Killing in and out a battle alone with one sword only to get the cure for his sick son. He deserves to be called 'peerless figure' indeed...]

When Ye Xiao imagined the scene of Ye Nantian fighting and rushing inside an encirclement made by hundreds of thousands of men with only a single sword in his hand, although he showed a

calm exterior, he felt his blood boil.

"What your father did for you was really..." The Prince Hua-Yang looked at Ye Xiao like he was exasperated about his disappointing lifestyle, "He had been extremely worried about you! He had almost given up his whole life for you... yet you are... Arh!"

He took a deep breath. Obviously, he had lost all interest in talking anymore.

Prince Hua-Yang thought of the day when Ye Nantian fought alone on the battle and then looked at Ye Xiao. He felt sad for Ye Nantian.

Ye Xiao took a deep breath too. He lowered his head.

Even though the one Prince Hua-Yang was criticizing was not him, he still felt what "Ye Xiao" should feel.

[In my previous life... if I could have such a father, a father who would sacrifice everything for his son... How happy would I be?] He thought.

When collecting his thoughts, he was suddenly motivated, [Father sacrificed everything, but... what about mother? Prince Hua-Yang didn't mention my mother all along!]

So he asked, "Well... What about my mother?"

When speaking of "mother", he felt a strange excitement in his heart, even though he had been living as a man for two lives. The feeling was warm, but it also contained a bit of loneliness...

[My mother...]

How warm. He felt a strong yearning for her.

He had never met his parents in his previous life... He had never known who had given birth to him. Until he died, he didn't know who his parents were.

Did he have a mother now?

He must have!

He should!

Prince Hua-Yang wore a sad expression and shook his head slowly. He quietly said, "I have no idea. I never met your mother... Your father never mentioned her."

Ye Xiao was surprised.

In fact, he had thought that his mother might be dead for a long time. However, after hearing what Prince Hua-Yang said, he figured that there must be some hidden reasons for her

disappearance.

[Nobody has ever mentioned my mother in front of me. My father never did... if she died, why didn't anybody talk to me about her?

There is something strange about it!]

He didn't speak anymore, but he bore it in mind.

After a short silence, Su Dingguo continued speaking... The lotus hadn't made any big difference. After that, Ye Nantian went to see the king of the Kingdom of Chen under Su Dingguo's recommendation. The king gave him the best medicine of the kingdom, but as a return, Ye Nantian had to become a sworn brother to the king and guard the northern border for twenty years. The medicine attained was really extraordinary, and it successfully restored Ye Xiao's condition to a normal, healthy condition...

Ye Xiao had already heard this story from the steward, yet, after hearing it once more, he still felt excited and thrilled.

A father could actually do such a thing for his son...

However, after the excitement subsided, Ye Xiao came out with a question. The Dreamy Lotus was divine among medicines. As per his knowledge, it could easily cure every poison and diseases in the Land of Han-Yang.

However, after Ye Xiao took it, although it was somewhat effective, it still didn't work well. He still needed the medicine of the Kingdom of Chen to be fully cured. That meant that he had suffered from an extraordinary condition, and the cause of the damage was something not from this realm!

His father, single handedly, was able to kill hundreds of thousands men in the battle...

[In another word, my father, mother, and even the steward, are very possibly not residents of the Land of Han-Yang. They must be from a higher realm...

But how did they get down?]

While collecting his thoughts, he kept finding new information about his family. Finally, he focused on the words of Prince Hua-Yang...

After that battle, there was a new prince with a name different from the royal family in the kingdom - Prince Hua-Yang. Su Dingguo had made great contributions, so it was reasonable that he was awarded the royal title. However, people didn't know that there was another prince in the kingdom...

"To be a sworn brother of the king, he naturally became a prince. But your father stoutly refused the title. The king had no other choice but to announce that the title should be reserved for your clan in the royal family book. No one ever divulged information

about this."

He laughed, "So, in people's eyes, there is only one prince with a different surname in the kingdom. Hah, hah, in fact, there are two. And we got the title at the same time."

They all smiled.

At the end of the conversation, Su Dingguo finished another cup of liquor and tapped Ye Xiao on the shoulder. He spoke softly, "Xiao-Xiao, you better... not let your father down..."

He said with a comforting tone, "These days, I have seen you change a lot indeed. You finally stopped fooling around like you did before... Heh, heh..."

At the end of the dinner, Prince Hua-Yang was seriously drunk and immediately went to sleep.

His wife naturally went to take care of him. There were only two of them left at the table, Su Yeyue and Ye Xiao.

Actually, Ye Xiao wanted to return home right now.

He had done what he came to to. He felt that he didn't need to stay any longer. For him, the most important thing at the moment was to deal with his newly acquired Divine Weapon with Demonic Edge.

"I, urhh... I better be off." Ye Xiao giggled and touched his head. Being criticized for a whole night, he felt that he had actually come to ask for torturing this time...

"What did you say? You are leaving?" At the beginning, Su Yeyue blushed and kept her head low like a bashful lady, but when she heard Ye Xiao, she started acting overwhelmingly, "What does that mean? You were so happy being criticized by my father. Now you are alone with me, and you actually want to leave! Humph! Move if your dare!"

Ye Xiao groaned, "Please my dear lady..."

"A 'dear lady' couldn't help you!" Her tongue was vicious. She rested her arms on her waist. Apparently, she was reaching for the whip that was given to her by Ye Nantian. Oh, the fabulous husband-disciplining tool.

Ye Xiao gave up immediately, "Fine. Okay. I never wanted to leave. I just want to find out if you would ask me to stay or not."

"Humph!" She didn't believe him, apparently.

But she was satisfied that Ye Xiao would stay. She jumped breezily with her hands on the back and said, "Let's go to the back yard. People always say a smart man and a pretty girl staying under the moon beside the flowers show each other their ... sort of love stuff... I don't know..."

Ye Xiao held his forehead and groaned. He sighed deep within his heart.

[The girl must be seriously poisoned by those romantic stories in the books and seeking those plots in reality. That is not good...]

[A smart man and a pretty girl showing each other their 'sort of love'... Gosh... When they have money, they are a smart man and a pretty girl. Without it, there will never be that 'sort of love'...] Ye Xiao smiled bitterly and thought, [There is only 'adultery'...]

...

Chapter 78: Ye Xiao, Midnight Snack?

Ye Xiao had no other choice but to let Su Yeyue drag him to the backyard.

“Xiao-Xiao, to be honest, your name is really weird. Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao. Hahahaha...” Su Yeyue opened her mouth, showing her clean white teeth. She laughed, “No matter how I resist, it sounds like ‘[midnight snack](#)’ to me. Try saying it several times and you will agree with me.”

“Midnight snack?” Ye Xiao felt embarrassed.

He himself had chosen this name in his previous life. It meant that even a [fallen leaf](#) with no roots could laugh at the entire firmament. “Ye” meant that he was an orphan who had no family. And also he had been carrying a jade pendant with the word “Ye” on it since he was a child. As for the “Xiao”, it was rather easy to understand.

[People lived, people laughed](#). People should live with joy.

[How did it become a midnight snack?]

In Ye Xiao’s whole previous life, no one had ever dared to call the Xiao Monarch “midnight snack”.

He looked at Su Yeyue and thought, [She must be a foodie deep in her heart...]

Thinking about how he got his name, he touched his chest and felt sad, [Now that my jade pendant was taken... by that woman in the Qing-Yun Realm. I wonder where she would keep it? And where she is now?

How is she doing?]

“That’s right. Midnight snack.” Su Yeyue was thrilled. Jumping and walking with her hands on the back, she said complacently, “Finally, I know how you got your name.”

Ye Xiao was embarrassed, “You do? Really?”

“Of course. It is obvious, isn’t it...” Su Yeyue laughed and said, “It is said that some day in the past when Uncle Ye was drinking with my father, they were both drunk and they talked about the derivation of your name. Uncle Ye laughed loudly and said... ‘Well the name actually means midnight snack.’”

Ye Xiao’s face was twisted, and he spoke with his eyes wide opened, “It really means midnight snack?”

“Yes. My dad was surprised at that moment, so he asked ‘why’...” Su Yeyue spoke cheerfully, “And then Uncle Ye said that... when he had just married your mother, they were so deep in love with each other. That night... That night... Ahem...”

She might not be a sensible girl, but she stopped talking when

speaking of that. Her extraordinarily beautiful face was blushing like the butt of a baboon, but it made her look even more gorgeous.

“That night what?” Ye Xiao didn’t want to stop. He wanted to know everything.

“Ahem... Anyway... It was...” Su Yeyue kept rolling her eyes and tried to find out the proper words to say. She blushed and spoke haltingly, “It was said that Uncle Ye wanted to have some midnight snack... So aunty went to cook some for him. Before she finished cooking, Uncle Ye was too hungry. He couldn’t hold it and... so he ‘ate’ aunty instead... Ahem... And then after some time, you were born. So Uncle Ye just gave you the name... Ye Xiao. Just as the name implies, you were born because of the midnight snack. So, ahem, hmm, you are midnight snack...”

She spoke with many pauses, and her eyes were dodging Ye Xiao’s eyes.

Apparently, it would make the girl embarrassed if she had to explain this any more.

But Ye Xiao had a different feeling.

He nearly passed out. Deep in his heart, he really wanted to pass out.

[What the hell is that? How is this logical? What is the point?]

Even though he was always calm and used to be the world-shocking Xiao Monarch, at the moment, he truly felt dizzy. [My name... actually... comes... from that...

Wanted to have some midnight snack... Went to cook... Couldn't hold it... Had another kind of... 'midnight snack'? And got pregnant? And gave birth to a son... who was named 'midnight snack'?

Er... No... Ye Xiao?

That is the whole process?

Oh my bloody heaven god...

Let me die.]

Suddenly, Ye Xiao felt a pain in his heart that nearly drove him to death.

[I would have never expected that the explanation of my name would be such... My god...]

“No. It doesn't make sense.” Ye Xiao returned to his senses and looked at her, “You are younger than me. How did you know that? Even your father hasn't met my mother. How could you know such a personal thing about my parents? It doesn't make any sense... Is it... did you just make it up?”

Ye Xiao looked at her, expecting her to change her story, [God bless me. Tell me that you are making it up...]

“You are a liar, not me!” Su Yeyue pouted, “My dad was drunk and telling jokes and stuff with your father. Your father himself told my dad about it. It wouldn’t be a lie, would it? Humph. They thought nobody was around, but in fact, I was there listening secretly. It is true.”

Ye Xiao felt hopeless. He wanted to hang himself on a tree several times...

With sad eyes, he looked at Su Yeyue who was blabbering on and on because of the interesting topic she had just picked up. He felt like the world had become darker...

[It turns out my name is midnight snack...

Damn it.

I must be the only one who had such a weird origin for his name...]

“Hey. Why are you so down? What’s wrong?” After walking for quite a distance, Su Yeyue finally felt less embarrassed about the topic, yet she found Ye Xiao hadn’t caught up with her, so she turned around and asked.

“I am thinking...” Ye Xiao sighed with sadness and said, “When I have a wife, would she ask for midnight snacks all the time...”

“Pah...” Su Yeyue blushed and reached out her hand to pinch him, “Do you really think you are that tasty... Come on. Let me teach you how to stop being a shameless guy. I will show you my Sword Art of Feng-Hua...”

She had concentrated on cultivating these days and had shown shocking improvement. With the Sword Art of Feng-Hua and the Spiritual Method of Feng-Hua, her rate of improvement had become much faster than anyone else in the history of the Qing-Yun Realm.

So her confidence had shot up to the peak.

Ye Xiao fought clumsily. In contrast, Su Yeyue swung her sword like a stream of waterfall in a painting. She fought with natural and smooth moves, she was able to move however she wished. After beating Ye Xiao up for a while, she finally felt satisfied. She waved her hand and spoke like the king sparing a convict, “Off you go.”

Ye Xiao hurried off.

It was too hard for him to continue acting...

The girl’s improvement had been above his expectation, but...

No matter how good the Sword Art of Feng-Hua was, it was modified by Ye Xiao himself. Considering Su Yeyue's current capability, it would be as easy as flicking a finger for him to win the fight.

But Ye Xiao knew well what result such action would bring to him. He would have been at least kept in there to practice with her for a ages...

So he chose to be beaten and then leave the place for good.

Su Yeyue humphed and looked at the retreating back of Ye Xiao. She murmured with a complex emotion in her eyes, "He didn't want to stay, so he let me win... Humph. He must have something important to do. I won't disturb him then." She was unhappy. After a while, she was completely lost in thoughts, [He really is different now. In the past, when he was beaten up by me, he would only beg for me to stop with a full mouth of sweet words. Now he is so calm, and he even left like a light breeze... Was I not beating him heavily enough?"]

She was holding her sword and thinking. She waved her fist and murmured, "I am not strong enough. I have to continue cultivating. Next time, I will beat him harder."

On the other hand, Ye Xiao hurried home without stopping.

The first thing he saw after arriving was the steward who wore a strange look.

It was as if he was looking at a monster or his forefather.

It was a look filled with helplessness and disappointment.

“Uncle Song, what’s wrong?” Ye Xiao was confused.

[I just got home and you are looking at me like that? Do you know that I am not so comfortable with that?]

“My dearest forefather.” Song Jue sighed heavily, “You promised that you wouldn’t get into any trouble, did you not?”

“I didn’t get in any trouble. I did not...” Ye Xiao scratched his head innocently and showed confusion.

“You dare say you didn’t! Then explain, what do you expect trouble to be...” The steward sighed with sadness being shown in his eyes.

[My big brother, how come you only have one child?

People pay money for troubles they make.

Your son pays with lives for the troubles he makes. I wonder how many lives it would take.

All those troublemakers I have seen in my life altogether cannot

compare to your son.]

“A mail has come to us from the Crown Prince’s Palace. The crown prince wants to meet with you.” The steward sighed, “And... I heard that you went to the west market and then three men died...”

The steward showed the whites of his eyes, “After some sort of clarification, it was revealed that those men were from the Crown Prince’s Palace, my dear young lord. If you have nothing to do with that... it must be some ghost who had shown up under the sun.”

Ye Xiao threw his hands up and said, “[Uncle Song. To catch a thief, you need proof; to accuse someone of adultery, you catch them both.](#) To accuse me of murder, I don’t mind if there is no proof, but it should at least be reasonable, right? Why would I be involved? How strange, people from the Mu Clan died and I am under suspicion; people from the Crown Prince’s Palace died and I am under suspicion; am I to be under suspicion when anyone dies? Who on earth is messing with me now? So unbelievable. Is there any justice in the world?”

The steward showed the whites of his eyes and was speechless. He suppressed the eagerness in his heart to push Ye Xiao down and spank him on the ass.

[Wherever you are, people die there.

And people are all your enemies. Who would believe it even if you say you have nothing to do with them?

What proof do you want? What reason? Everyone can see through it.]

When thinking of that, the steward suddenly had doubts filling his mind. He raised his head and stared at his young master — his nephew.

[It doesn't make sense...

Why... Why are all of them from our enemies?

And none of our men even got hurt?

Of course it is good that our men stay fine. It surely is. But... But... It doesn't make sense.

Why? How?]

In Chinese, 'Ye Xiao (叶笑)' sounds almost the same as midnight snack (夜宵).

Ye (叶) : means leaf in Chinese.

Xiao (笑) : means smile or laugh in Chinese.

To catch a thief, you need proof; to accuse someone of adultery, you catch them both(捉贼捉赃, 捉奸捉双): means to confirm ones crime, proof is required and one can't accuse people by using words alone.

Chapter 79: A Boat Capsizes in a Calm Sea

[The death of Mu Chengbai is an unsettled case.

Who could have killed him?

After that, the three assassins, who were the guards of the Crown Prince's Palace, died in the west street market. Yet Ye Xiao is perfectly fine after returning from the market, unharmed and rather happy.

Then... who killed them?

Since they were assassins, they must have been assigned to do the same task. According to the information received from the market, all three of them must have been killed in an instant.

Who were they aiming at? Who was their target?

That is pretty obvious actually... it would be Ye Xiao.

Then, who killed them?

Mu Chengbai had an average cultivation level, so he was easy to kill. But this time, it was three guards from the Crown Prince's Palace. They were not some ordinary cultivators, but even they got killed in an instant. They were killed at the same moment together. No matter who did that, he must have accomplished an

extremely high cultivation level.

So...]

The steward looked at Ye Xiao. The confusion in his eyes now turned into questioning.

[Ye Xiao. Does he have such capability?]

“Xiao-Xiao...” Song Jue used Ye Xiao’s nickname. That meant he was talking to him as his uncle, “Have you been... going through anything special?”

“Special? What special?” Ye Xiao was stunned, “No. I have not.”

“But your have improved a lot in cultivation.” Song Jue frowned and looked at Ye Xiao, “You can’t deny that, can you?”

Ye Xiao rubbed his nose and nodded.

He couldn’t lie about that. It was obvious, especially for a sharp person like Song Jue.

If he made an ambiguous statement or a lie right now, he would only embarrass himself.

“You have improved; I am happy to see so. Come on, show me

what you've got." Song Jue waved his hand and dragged Ye Xiao to the backyard. While walking, he gave the guards an order, "Guards! Seal the backyard. Nobody gets in."

"Yes." Two of the 36 blood guards answered loudly, and then moved away.

Suddenly, the whole house had turned into a highly secure arena. Let alone a living man, even flies couldn't access it easily.

In the backyard...

"Come on." Song Jue stood with his hands on the back with an "I am a superior cultivator" attitude. He casually said, "Kid, use your full strength, attack."

Ye Xiao's mouth twisted a little.

[What? Full strength? Uncle Song, do you want me to send you to the gods today?

I have taken a huge effort to save your life that day. Do you think you can just give it away so easily, really? Even if you don't want to live, I won't agree.]

"Don't hesitate. Don't use restraint." Song Jue thought that Ye Xiao was hesitating, so he encouraged him, "Just use your full strength."

Yet he didn't know what Ye Xiao exactly was thinking. [Should I still conceal my true strength? Actually, Uncle Song is not a stranger. He has been loyal all along. And he is a sworn brother to my father. He is absolutely on my side...]

Collecting his thoughts, he decided to reveal his true power a little bit, so as to let his men feel relieved and stop worrying.

Of course he couldn't reveal it all... If he was to truly use his full power... even if Song Jue was a supreme master of the Sky Origin Stage, Ye Xiao could easily send him to hell.

So he nodded and said, "Since so, I will only have to accept it then. But please, Uncle Song, be careful..."

Song Jue laughed as if he had just heard the most hilarious joke. He was amused as he smiled, "Don't worry kid. Even though you're capable enough to actually hurt me, you're still over 20 years away from being my opponent."

Ye Xiao nodded and spoke with admiration, "It turns out that Uncle Song is such a strong superior cultivator. You never show your strength in day-to-day activities. It is true that the greatest genius often lies concealed."

Song Jue nodded with satisfaction. He almost smiled his teeth off. He said, "Come on."

“Okay.”

Ye Xiao answered, and then struck immediately without hesitation.

His body twisted, turning into a whirlwind. - Whoosh! - Only a dim shadow was left.

- SHOOT! -

He was faster than lightning. In an instant, he had already arrived in front of Song Jue.

Seeing the surprising turn of events occurring right in front of his face, Song Jue was terrified and shouted out, “What the fxxk...”

He definitely hadn’t expected - not even in his dreams - that his nephew could actually move so fast and his attack would actually be so sharp. He had actually broken the balance of time and space, making an incredible noise by distorting the nearby space.

Song Jue felt that this wasn’t ordinary attack, so he quickly operated his spiritual qi in order to defend against it.

The most terrible mistake a superior cultivator could make was to underestimate the opponent. And that was what Song Jue had done just now. At this moment, he had fallen into an unexpected situation.

In fact, he shouldn't be blamed for this. He had been weakened a lot because he had been suffering from the Golden Mai Palm. Now he was only at the ninth level of the Earth Origin Strength. However, with his true strength, even a cultivator of the Sky Origin Stage would never be able to defeat him.

And he had been through endless fights, so he was rather experienced in fighting. With all these advantages, it was reasonable for him to be confident while facing an inexperienced Ye Xiao.

At the beginning, he was only thinking about testing Ye Xiao's capability; he never truly wanted to fight against him.

After all, in his mind, the disparity between their capabilities was so massive that he didn't think there was need for him to be cautious.

However, reality had brutally betrayed his expectations.

A test had turned into true combat.

Facing Ye Xiao's sharp attacks, he was forced to fight with utmost concentration. He fought well, but he had made a mistake already forcing him to defend in desperation. Although he had a higher level in cultivation, he couldn't save the situation that was caused by his own casualness.

He had operated his spiritual qi in order to resist Ye Xiao's attack. But when the attack came, its strength was way beyond his imagination.

His chest suddenly suffered from a variety of strikes. He shouted out once again, "OH FXXK!"

- Pah Pah Pah Pah Pah! -

At that moment, Ye Xiao had struck Song Jue's chest like a metal hammer several hundred times.

And the winner of the combat was quickly decided.

- Shoot! -

Ye Xiao turned over and stood on the ground. He waved his sleeves and stayed still.

- Puff! -

On the other side, Song Jue flew out awkwardly for several meters. - Boom! - And then he stopped once he hit the wall. He stared at his nephew, shocked. His body was plastered on the wall, spread eagle. He finally slid down to the ground like a snake. - Puff. - He collapsed on the floor.

With his mouth hanging open, he was looking at Ye Xiao with

astonishment as he murmured, “What... What... What was that? You, you, you... I... I... I...”

After stuttering for a bit, he coughed. He stood up from the ground, tottering and staring at Ye Xiao as if he was looking at a monster.

He could swear that he had never imagined that Ye Xiao could be so strong.

[What was that?

I was showing how a cultivator stands, and then he attacked, and I fell down like he was crushing dry weeds and smashing rotten wood.

I didn't even have time to react.]

Now he only had one thought, [Shxt... That was so embarrassing... People say ‘[a boat capsizes in a calm sea](#)’, yet it was not a boat which capsized; it was a bloody huge ship...]

Ye Xiao laughed and pulled him up. He said, “This martial art, I just learned it recently. It is called Thunder Thousand Palm. How are you Uncle Song? Are you hurt? Is it sharp, my new martial art?”

Song Jue blushed and murmured, “I was just not fully prepared just now. I was kind of unprepared... If I am well prepared, that

would never happen. I was careless... Ahem... Of course, I kind of let loose you... I fell down myself on purpose...”

“Sure. Of course.” Ye Xiao said, “Who are you? You are Uncle Song! You must have done that on purpose to make me feel confident. We all know that. No need to speak too much of it. We know that.”

Song Jue coughed. He hadn’t blushed for decades, yet now he felt his cheeks burning. He said, “However, as young as you are, you have such capability. That’s not a normal thing. You are fine. You are good...”

He was wondering, [Thunder Thousand Palm? How come it sounds familiar to me? I seem to have heard of it before...]

He started going through his memories, trying to recollect where he had heard of the Thunder Thousand Palm before. He looked at Ye Xiao, “Well then... Mu Chengbai and the three assassins today, were they killed by you?”

Ye Xiao smiled. He didn’t answer the question directly, but said, “Uncle Song, let me walk you back to the house.”

He didn’t answer the question, but Song Jue understood. He was shocked and then felt gratified. He gave a thumbs up, “Good man. You definitely are the son of Ye Nantian. You have got guts.”

And then he waved his hand, “No need to walk with me. I am not

that weak. With your low capability, even though you did make me fall over by chance, you could never hurt me.”

Ye Xiao nodded, “Of course not. That’s obvious.”

Song Jue held his head high and walked in front of Ye Xiao like nothing had happened. He said, “By the way, when did you start training that martial art...”

“Not long ago. I was hanging around outside and saved an old man by chance...” By now, Ye Xiao had become a specialist in making these kind of lies. He had made one in front of Prince Hua-Yang; now he was making another one. “But that old man was so ill. After he taught me a bit of this, he passed away. And then I tried it and felt that it was perfect for me. So I kept cultivating...”

“That is more than not bad. Even I couldn’t...” Song Jue stopped hurriedly. He coughed and said like an old sage, “I was nearly defeated by that. It must be something extraordinary... It was your fortune. From now on, you should work harder on it. After working hard for a certain amount of time, you will be improved in an obvious way. You are young. You should accept what you are taught. Do you understand?”

...

A boat capsizes in a calm sea (阴沟里翻船) means falling miserably in a very easy task.

Chapter 80: The Truth About the Demonic Edge

Ye Xiao nodded in agreement.

Song Jue took a breath and continued, “I didn’t finish yet. The crown prince had sent an invitation. He wants you to go to the Crown Prince’s Palace for dinner tomorrow night... I think it is for the same topic we are discussing right now...”

Ye Xiao thought and nodded, “I know. Don’t worry, Uncle Song. If the crown prince dares to do anything to me, I will take care of him and his wife for good. I promise that no one will notice...”

“Take care of them for good...” Song Jue gave him a look filled with hopelessness. He couldn’t help but have a coughing fit. He was furious, “You, you... you... Cough, cough, cough, cough, cough, cough...”

“I am joking...” Ye Xiao quickly played off his previous statement as a joke.

But in fact, he was thinking along the lines of, [Shxt! The crown prince and his wife, these dirty bxtches. They always stand against me. Even if I slaughter them, so what?]

Song Jue was speechless. He said, “Go to the dining room. What to say and what to do, you make your own decisions. You have such capability now. That means you are in the Earth Origin Stage

at least... Then I can be less worried. But don't you be reckless! You understand? Gosh... [I am playing the harp to a cow...](#)”

Ye Xiao grinned cheekily and said, “Relax, Uncle Song. I know the what to do.”

“You know shxt...” Song Jue murmured before replying, “Fine then. Nothing else now. I need to check on the blood guards. They are always idle. Getting worse and worse now...” He left hurriedly with big paces.

He didn't want to talk to Ye Xiao anymore. [What kind of human is he? Talking about slaughtering a crown prince and killing a crown princess... Shxt. Even if you really want to do so, couldn't you just keep it under table...

And... I was so embarrassed!]

As he walked, his face turned hotter.

[That was truly embarrassing... Am I still the Vital Blade?

I actually got beaten up by a sixteen years old kid with a single wave of attack...

I, I, I... I really should find a tree and hang myself from it...

It is lucky that the kid is my brother's son, not a stranger.

Otherwise, I have to end my disgraceful life for good...]

He turned around a corner and made sure Ye Xiao wasn't following him. And then he sat on the floor and rubbed his chest, "... Ouch... Bloody hell... That hurt me to death... The little prick was really good. He actually hit on my chest with 178 palm strikes... Every hit was the real deal... I almost spat out blood... That seriously hurt... I thought my bones were about to break..."

When rubbing his chest, a blood guard turned around the corner and saw him like that. The guard was shocked, "Chief! What happened to you? Who beat you up?"

He then rushed forward to help Song Jue.

Song Jue blushed and stood up instantly, "You jerk! You are talking nonsense! What do you mean beating me up? In the whole Chen-Xing City, do you really think there is anyone who can beat me up? I was just... feeling a little bit breathless... So I rubbed my chest for a while... Are you blind..."

The guard was confused and stared at him. He stammered, "But... obviously, you looked like you were beaten up... Look at the dirt on your clothes. Even on your butt..."

Song Jue turned angry because he was exposed by the guard. He jumped up, caught the guard's ear and gave it an almighty twist. He was furious, "You bastard. Do you even know how to talk... You, you, you... You are driving me crazy... Come and let me teach you how to be a smart man... You have been a moron most of your

life, and you are still as stupid as a pig...”

Then he dragged the guard and left.

...

On the other side, Ye Xiao was concentrating on eavesdropping on Song Jue’s conversation with the guard. Now that he had caught the conversation, he couldn’t stop a delightful smile from appearing on his face. He felt relieved and returned to his room.

Then he took out his Divine Weapon with the Demonic Edge!

“Deep Sea Frigid Metal huh...” He was looking at the 108 needles and 12 knives lying in front of him. He was feeling the coldness being emitted from the weapons and a mysterious smile showed up on his face, “If it really is only the Deep Sea Frigid Metal... how could it possibly exhaust a smithing master’s life? Besides, there are no tips on these...”

“The Deep Sea Frigid Metal is a precious metal indeed, but how could it possibly contain such power.”

“Most importantly, weapons made from the Deep Sea Frigid Metal could never deserve the title of ‘Divine Weapon with Demonic Edge’! There must be something hidden within these. If I am right...”

He picked up a needle and held it in his hand. He operated the

scorching hot power of the East-rising Purple Qi!

Suddenly, his hand became incredibly hot. That cold needle was wrapped inside the heat, yet he could still feel a slight coldness emitting from the needle.

That was the specialty of the Deep Sea Frigid Metal.

Yet Ye Xiao didn't let go of the suspicion in his mind.

So he continued increasing the heat using more power.

Gradually, the whole room became hot like hell.

Finally, a crystal-like glow started to show up on the needle. The surface of the needle started to melt and peel off. Its true appearance finally emerged.

Hidden underneath the Deep Sea Frigid Metal exterior was a crystal material, dark-like and inky yet shiny like the stars in the night sky!

When the hidden material showed up, an aura of death that belonged in the depths hell started spreading out slowly. It had an indescribable aura of coldness... That coldness didn't belong to the mortal world!

Ye Xiao stared at that special material with his sharp eyes and

murmured, “I knew it... It is not the Deep Sea Frigid Metal! Something else is hidden within!”

His eyes were sharp as he looked at the needle in his hand, murmuring, “The aura of slaughtering and destruction can only be emitted by one material in the universe!”

“That is Sky Demonic Steel!”

While he was talking, the surface of the needle had melted completely. The dark and shiny needle was completely uncovered.

An aura of destruction was forming around it.

It was like the demons from hell were ready to do something evil. Once they got a chance, they would keep killing until they slaughtered and swallowed the whole world!

“It is the Sky Demonic Steel!” Ye Xiao felt relieved, “Only something like this could possibly make a smithing master spend all his life to temper it!”

“Only, the aura of death around the Sky Demonic Steel causes it to reject all other metals. Because of this, no other metals could be used to make the tips!”

“The Sky Demonic Steel needed to be covered by the Deep Sea Frigid Metal. If it had remained uncovered and people held it long enough, their minds would be affected, turning them into mindless

demons!”

“Only the weapons made from the Sky Demonic Steel are qualified enough to be called... the Divine Weapons with Demonic Edge!”

“Now that I have revealed its true face in my hand, it means... I can slaughter the whole universe with these weapons in my hand!”

Ye Xiao took a deep breath.

He held the Demonic Needle in his hand and entered the Spaces.

The Demonic Needle had entered the Spaces with him too. Ye Xiao looked at the small pile of Spiritual Essence of Gold and walked to it without hesitation.

- Shoot! - The Demonic Needle flew into the Spiritual Essence of Gold automatically, then it started to glow.

“They are not unfinished. They are fully developed. But... they just need the Spiritual Essence of Gold to sharpen them. Only after that can they become the real Demonic Edge. The Sky Demonic Steel is not suitable for making tips of needles and knives...”

At the moment, the shiny glow on the Demonic Needle had disappeared.

Ye Xiao waved his hand and the needle returned to his hand.

Only this time, the needle had a long and narrow tip.

It was shining with an indescribable glow of cold!

The needle was like nature itself with no flaws!

The throwing needle, finished!

“I knew it!” A satisfied look appeared in Ye Xiao’s eyes.

After that, Ye Xiao started to repeat the same process on the other needles. He took a needle and then operated the East-rising Purple Qi to melt the surface. Afterwards, he would enter the Spaces to create the tip...

Because his cultivation of East-rising Purple Qi was at a low level, he could only work on one needle at a time. As for the 12 knives, as they had a larger size than the needles, he was unable to develop them for now!

Even so, he was rather satisfied!

The ultimate weapon that only existed in the legends was now in his grasp. That was already a huge fortune! Even though he could only develop one at a time, it was good enough for him. He only needed to be patient and spend more time on it, and he could

naturally get all the needles and knives finished.

“The point is that it could be done!” Ye Xiao rubbed the sweat on his forehead.

While he was operating one after another, the East-rising Purple Qi was becoming purer and purer, sharper and sharper. And its strength seemed to be increasing...

Not long after, he could also create the sharpened edges of the knives!

He was so concentrated on working on the weapons that he didn't even notice the time flying by.

He also didn't notice that with a large amount of the spiritual qi in his body being consumed, the spiritual qi in the Spaces was rushing into his Jing and Mai like a tidal wave. As for the the purple qi in the universe...

They were continuously replenishing his energy.

During the process, Ye Xiao was extremely focused. That was why he had already reached the rare situation of “harmony between man and nature”.

Both his spiritual and mental power were rapidly increasing...

He was consuming his energy to unveil all the Divine Weapons with Demonic Edges. The massive amount of spiritual qi in the Spaces was continuously replenishing his energy. That became a delicate cycle. The Spaces seemed to be at a disadvantageous situation as it kept offering spiritual qi without any returns...

Ye Xiao was working in full flow. He didn't know that everyone in the House of Ye felt that it was extraordinarily hot that night...

...

Play the harp to a cow (对牛弹琴), means choosing the wrong audience that would never be understanding.

Chapter 81: Ye Xiao's New Look

The reason why the house had turned scorching hot was quite simple. Ye Xiao was continuously operating the scorching hot power of the East-rising Purple Qi. Even though it was only operated in a small range, the small streams of heat kept spreading and increased the temperature in the house.

However, nobody had time to find out the reason, because there was something else going on in the house at the same time.

All the blood guards were training under the compelling eyes of Song Jue. They were all complaining and sweating and they didn't realize that reason they were sweating so badly was because of Ye Xiao...

A voice had been resounding in the house during the entire night, "Look at your stupid faces. You just have moved for a short while and you are sweating all over. Don't you feel ashamed? Are you still the blood guards? Are you still feeling proud to call yourselves the blood guards? From now on, all of you should take the full-strength training for one month. Next time when I check on you, if you are still this weak, pack your stuffs and get the hell off..."

In fact, with Song Jue's capability, he was able to sense the unusual rise in temperature. It was seriously hot. Yet, he just used it as an excuse to give the guys a lesson...

Besides, as he had been humiliated so badly, he simply wanted to vent his anger to them...

Ye Xiao had been busy till the next morning. He stretched himself and took a deep breath. He looked at the 108 needles and the 12 knives in front of him. Each piece of weaponry was dark and shiny...

The result after the night of hard work was not only remarkable, but also surprising. It took Ye Xiao a lot of effort to develop each needle. At the beginning, every time after he finish one needle, he needed to wait and recover a bit of his spiritual qi to continue with the next one.

To melt and temper the Deep Sea Frigid Metal, a continuous flow of energy was required. If he stopped during the development of one needle, it would cause the energy to flow in reverse. The knives were much bigger than needles in scale, so he thought that he couldn't handle them. He was afraid that this one night would not be enough to sharpen them.

Yet after finishing the needles, he became more proficient. He could do the same amount of work by consuming lesser amount of energy. With the enormous amount of spiritual qi from the Spaces being sent to him, he had even developed a knife. So he didn't stop and worked on the knives one after another. Finally, he finished all the needles and knives.

The tips of the needles and knives were completed.

Under the light, they were all shining with a cold glow.

They looked like they were made from an inferno to slaughter and seek blood.

They were filled with the aura of extreme danger.

"The Divine Weapons with Demonic Edges finally showed up, but they are not finished yet..." Ye Xiao rubbed his jaw and murmured, leaving the sweat dripping down his cheeks, "They still need to be disguised anyway... They are so dark that if I use them at day time, it would leave traces for sure. That is eye-catching. Really..."

"To make them truly invisible, I am going to need some Colorless Gold... But I don't have that. Even if I do, I won't be able to develop them into that stage with my present capability."

He sighed, "I guess they can stay how they are for now."

He took off the band that was used to bind his hair, causing his hair to fall down. There was a mirror in front of him.

He looked into the mirror. He had red lips, white teeth, jade-like pretty face, prominent nose, double-fold eyelids, long eyebrows...

[I am so freaking handsome with my look right now. With my long hair hanging down, I can be the number 1 handsome guy in the world.] Ye Xiao thought. And then he bound his hair into a new hairstyle.

It was a coiled knot on the head that was a little bit askew.

Actually, men were all required to bind their hair decently. They wouldn't be allowed to show up with disheveled hair. Yet Ye Xiao had tied his hair in a skewed coiled knot, and a few strands of hair were hanging down to his neck on his left.

That made him look more like a foppish black sheep than he was before. It was a look filled with unruliness and evilness.

"It is much better now." Ye Xiao looked into the mirror and spoke gladly, "That is unique. I shall keep my hair this way... How convenient."

The Xiao Monarch was not only talking about how the way he bound his hair was convenient.

He picked up the needles, and one after the other, he put them into his hair knot pointing at different directions. The needles were dark and his hair was dark too. Not a single piece of the needles could be seen through his hair.

Hidden inside his hair, they were difficult to find. Even the gods wouldn't notice them. The needles were flawlessly camouflaged.

Ye Xiao bent down, stepped aside, got on the floor, lowered his head, turned his head... He made more than a hundred gestures. For some of them, he used his hands, while most of the time, he simply moved his head.

The threads of hair on his head kept fluttering up and down, left and right... There was always some of the threads of hair covering the knot...

"That's acceptable. With that, I can be sure that anytime and anywhere, no matter what I do, nobody will notice when I throw the needles out." He nodded with satisfaction, "But there are not enough spaces for all the needles... There can only be 12 needles. Rooms must be kept for the knives somehow..."

After that, he cautiously put one needle inside the skin of his left wrist tightly, and then he covered it with something which looked like his skin. Suddenly it looked exactly like his skin, fully covering the needle. Most importantly, there was no embossment of the needle.

That skin-like strange material was something Ye Xiao recently bought when he was hanging around the market. It was normally used to make skin masks.

The skin masks that were made from this material made people feel uncomfortable wearing them, and they were easy to be exposed. However, on the wrist, this material worked perfectly well. Nobody would notice it.

And then he did the same thing with his right wrist.

And then the left ankle, right ankle, both sides of the waist, each of these places held a needle.

That made it 18 needles hidden on his body.

He then took out 12 of the remaining 90 needles and put them into a small needle bag. He threw the other 78 needles into the Space of Gold.

The needle bag was mostly used as a distraction. The others hidden on his body were for emergency use if he found himself in an unexpected situation.

The real killing ones were the 78 needles inside the Spaces. He could hold the needles in hand by only operating his mind. That was the most convenient way to make a strike...

Two of the 12 knives were hidden in his hair, while the rest were all kept in the Spaces.

Finally, he finished dealing with all these weapons. He started to move, to do actions, until he made sure the needles and knives were completely well covered no matter how he moved. He opened the door to his room and rushed to the watchtower.

In fifteen minutes, it would be the time when the purple qi in the whole world would rise. It was the best moment for cultivating the East-rising Purple Qi, and Ye Xiao would never let it fleet away.

Song Jue was just walking toward Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao was preparing to greet him, but Song Jue suddenly walked away from him with his head lowered, murmuring, "What else do I still need to do?"

He looked like he was lost in thoughts and walked away...

Ye Xiao nearly burst into laughter.

The steward, his uncle was now rather hilarious to him. When he was only a steward, he criticized everything about Ye Xiao. Now that he was an uncle, he would always run away when ran across Ye Xiao...

Ye Xiao heard a guard speaking, "Oh, chief. Was that our young master in front of you? Yet you didn't even say hello?"

Song Jue hurriedly spoke, "Oh really? Really? Really... Why didn't I notice? Never mind. I can see him every day. I am busy. You guys are busy..." Then his voice went far away.

Finally, Ye Xiao couldn't help bursting into laughter. [My Uncle Steward is truly adorable.]

If Song Jue could hear Ye Xiao at the moment, he would be embarrassed. Of course he could do nothing about it, but he would definitely vent his anger on the poor blood guard, as the guards were all easy targets to bully.

It was the afternoon. Ye Xiao was going to attend the dinner arranged by the Crown Prince.

He didn't consider too much about the meeting. He decided to accept the situation.

The Crown Prince huh?

In the Xiao Monarch's heart, honestly... that meant nothing. He was just a fart.

As he had said earlier, if the Crown Prince dared to do anything to him, he would slaughter both him and his wife.

He had nothing to be concerned about.

Why did he need to worry about something like a fart?

The sky quickly turned dark. Ye Xiao rode on his horse, his clothes fluttering, and his hair dancing in the wind; he looked dashing. He rode to the Crown Prince's Palace.

On the way to the Crown Prince's, he paused to buy a bag of fruits before continuing his journey.

Lan Langlang happened to show up during his ride and came towards him, "Xiao-Xiao, where are you heading?"

Ye Xiao laughed, "The Crown Prince invited me to dinner. I am going to get a couple of drinks. Are you coming? Did he invite you?"

Lan Lang-Lang was sad, "No, he didn't. Why did he invite you but not me..."

Ye Xiao left.

After travelling a long distance, a guy on a horse came over, "Xiao-Xiao, where are you going?"

The guy talked loudly. It was Zuo Wuji.

"The Crown Prince invited me to dinner. I am going to get some drinks." Ye Xiao shouted.

"Ah?" Zuo Wuji suddenly felt admiration, "The Crown Prince invited you to dinner? What for?"

There were a lot of people on the street. They all looked at Ye Xiao with admiring eyes, [The Crown Prince invited him to dinner? No shxt!]

Ye Xiao laughed and spoke enrapturing, "You are asking a silly question. The Crown Prince invited me. Surely, he wants to talk with me about some national affairs. Now it is an eventful time for the kingdom. That is obvious."

Zuo Wuji started singing praises, "Is that so. I am in admiration. Brother Ye is indeed the mainstay of our kingdom."

...

Chapter 82: Small Gift to Represent My Respect

Ye Xiao was delighted and asked with a smile, "By the way, did the Crown Prince invite you?"

Zuo Wuji rolled his eyes at Ye Xiao, but his face showed jealousy, "No, he didn't."

Ye Xiao laughed loudly, "He didn't? He didn't invite Langlang too. It seems that the Crown Prince only invited me. Hahahahaha. The Crown Prince sure has sincerity..."

Zuo Wuji's face turned green, "Yes. Yes. He values you a lot..."

"Ahahahahahah..." Ye Xiao stroked his horse and left in a flash.

So, all along his way, everyone came to know that... the son of the great General Ye, Ye Xiao, was invited to dinner by the Crown Prince to discuss some troublesome national affairs.

"Why would the Crown Prince invite that foppish lord for dinner? He is one of the 'three lords in town'. What kind of national affair could the Crown Prince discuss with him..."

"Huh. You don't know shxt! He is a foppish fool indeed, but his father, General Ye is not..."

"That's true..."

"The Crown Prince invited Ye Xiao for dinner. Would he be doing this for anything else? You know, although Ye Xiao is a foppish fool, he really has a pretty face..."

"Well that... Heh, heh, heh... Better not gossip..."

"Oh. It just came out from my heart. We shouldn't gossip indeed. Hahahaha..."

"Er huh. Er huh."

...

It was in the Crown Prince's Palace.

The Crown Princess was in a white mourning dress. She was sitting on the chair and her eyes were cold. It made her look pretty and delicate.

"Is Ye Xiao coming soon?" In her eyes, there existed an aura of hostility.

[My brother just died.

He might have perished at the hands of Ye Xiao; maybe not...

But it was because of Ye Xiao after all.

My uncle brought people of my clan to take revenge, yet eight of the men died in the House of Ye.

And then all our men in the capital died outside the city wall. All dead...

With such intense and deep-seated hatred, how could I just let it go!]

"Very soon." The Crown Prince frowned and said, "The truth will be revealed tonight... Take it easy."

"I don't care about the truth. He must die!" The Crown Princess wore an expression of madness, she was desperate for blood. Her pretty face was already a little bit twisted. Her hatred for Ye Xiao had seeped deep into her bones.

"Is it really necessary?!" The Crown Prince was displeased and countered, "We don't know what exactly had happened. It might not be Ye Xiao's fault. Even if he wanted to do those things, he doesn't have that capability."

"I don't care. Even if he didn't do it, I want him dead!" The Crown Princess gritted her teeth.

The Crown Prince held his forehead and frowned. He was annoyed, "You are unbelievable!"

"Would my brother die if not because of him? How would dozens of men from our clan come here if not because of him? If they didn't come, they wouldn't have been killed! If not because of him, how could the four guards of mine die?" The Crown Princess shouted, not at all willing to listen to reason.

The Crown Prince sighed and murmured, "You have gone mad..." He turned around and left.

When he was about to go through the door, a guard reported, "Your highness, Ye Xiao is heading to the Crown Prince's Palace. He is proudly telling everyone on the way that the Crown Prince has invited him for dinner to discuss national affairs... So far, people in every place he has passed has become aware of it now. They all believe that Ye Xiao is coming here to have dinner and discuss national affairs..."

"..."

The Crown Prince heard him and staggered. His face turned green, and he cursed in a low voice, "Bastard!"

Behind him, the Crown Princess was opening her mouth. She was also astonished...

[This Ye Xiao is truly surprising, isn't he?

Nothing happened yet, and he had told the world everything.

Now in the whole capital, whoever has ears knows about this news!

I invited you for dinner?!

Yes, fine. Even though I have invited you for dinner, when the hell did I say anything about national affairs? You foppish prick! What national affair could I possibly discuss with you? Are you underestimating my IQ, or are you just a moron?]

The Crown Prince was upset.

"This Ye Xiao is really detestable! Does he think that after he spreads such rumors, we will not do anything to hurt him? Who the hell does he think he is?!" The Crown Princess's face was full of hatred. The killing intent in her voice was undisguised.

"We cannot do anything to him indeed. He is the only son of Ye Nantian. That's enough to be a reason..." The Crown Prince rubbed his head because of a headache.

"So that's the first reason we cannot do anything to him. The second one is... I am afraid there is a very wise man supporting him. We have to make another plan if we are to go against him!"

The Crown Prince smiled bitterly, "The force of the foppish fool is something we cannot underestimate... He just told something to people and it is causing us trouble..."

Speaking of that, he was suddenly enlightened. A thought entered his mind, [Maybe, Ye Xiao is not really a stupid foppish young lord; in fact, he is very smart!]

"The situation is quite clear. People who already know of our attitude towards him certainly know about the purpose of my invitation. Yet for those who barely know the truth, they would certainly hold a question in mind. 'To cozy up to the son of a great general, what does the Crown Prince intend to do?' My two younger brothers must be paying attention to us now."

He smiled, "This Lord Ye made such a move. It is awesome really. On the surface, he is showing off that he is invited by me, but in fact, he was thinking deeper than that. He is getting us into trouble. It can keep him safe. At the same time, he can rather enjoy the dinner this time... That is not some ordinary strategy."

The Crown Princess frowned and spoke lightly, "Enjoy? I will see what a smart guy this Ye Xiao is! I want to see how he can enjoy at our place!"

She spoke while gritting her teeth.

...

After a while, someone reported.

"Your highness. Ye Xiao is at the gate."

The Crown Prince was in high spirits and said, "Open the gate. Show Lord Ye in. I will be greeting him in the middle hall."

The Crown Princess humphed, "I am going too."

Both of them prepared to greet Ye Xiao. It seemed that they were showing great respect to him.

However, they were surely not intending to show respect...

They stood at the entrance to the middle hall, and they saw a guy in white coming over from the gate.

Following the guard, he was swinging along. He looked like he was trying to show an attitude of "I am calm", "I am handsome", "I am indifferent". Yet deep within, he couldn't help feeling proud.

The Crown Prince and Crown Princess heard the guy's voice coming over, "I really never thought that the Crown Prince would invite me for dinner. Hahahaha... That is in fact very reasonable. I am standing high in the city right now... I have read much for all my years. I know clearly about tactics and battles. I know all about all about the ancient philosophers. I have always been hiding my talent. That's all... Hahaha. I thought I lacked scope for my abilities and I should just waste my talent for this life. Yet the

Crown Prince really has a pair of sharp eyes. He can see the best out of the ordinary. He can just find the best man no matter where he is. The real gold will shine anyway. Hahahahaha..."

His voice sounded humble at the beginning, yet he failed to keep it that way. He had sprouted a pair of wings at the end. One didn't need to look at him; only by hearing what he had said, one could easily imagine what he looked like at the moment.

If he didn't have the two balls between his legs, he would have flown up to the air already...

The Crown Prince's face immediately turned blue.

[You? Read much? Know about tactics and battles?

Hiding your talent?

You are... the best?

Real gold will shine among the shxt...

I am the Crown Prince, so I am not allowed to curse. But I am about to lose control now!]

The Crown Princess's face was twisting ever so slowly.

[Such a stupid man could really kill my brother?! Or... my brother could die because of him?

That really is an injustice...]

While Ye Xiao was coming closer, they finally saw the face of Lord Ye.

He had a hair knot on his head. It seemed he had tried to bind it well, yet it was a bit askew somehow... A little bit askewed though; not a lot...

It looked weird anyway.

He didn't bind up all his hair. He left some threads hanging to his left shoulder. The hair came down along his left cheek, dangling, giving off an aura of wickedness.

The weird hair type had already made the Crown Prince and the Crown Princess feel odd.

The weird hair type was truly... unique in the world!

And then they looked at his face... Hmm. He was handsome, with long eyebrows, big and vigorous eyes, sharp nose, pretty face, small and pink lips on his mouth...

He was dressed in white which made him look elegant. Hmm. If

he was not walking in an obvious splayfoot way and swinging his body, he could be much better looking...

"Lord Ye." The Crown Prince raised his hand to show his greeting.

"Ahahaha... The Crown Prince. Your highness. I have heard many praises about you. It is my fortune to finally meet you today." Ye Xiao earnestly greeted with a face full of smiles, "It is said that in dangerous situations, it shows the true hearts of men, while in an unstable period, it reveals the loyalty of men. You can invite me for dinner at this troublesome period. There must be something important you want to discuss with me? Don't worry. I will tell everything I know and give you my true opinions... I will try my best to exclude the difficulty and anxiety, your highness."

He looked rather sincere with a humble voice. He looked like he was in a state of "a man will die for his bosom friend" and "I owe you for being understanding and treating me well" kind of attitude.

He raised his hand and showed the bag of fruit to them, "Your highness. This is a small gift for you for this first honored meeting. It is a bag of fruits. The saying is quite good: when dropping in, one needs a gift for the first meeting... Heh, heh. I have tried the fruit. They are quite fresh and delicious. Please accept my gift..."

...

Chapter 83: To be Shameless to an Incredible Extent!

People in the Crown Prince's Palace became stunned when they saw the cucumbers, grapes and apples in Ye Xiao's hand.

[That...

Do you think you are visiting some normal citizen? You actually brought all these things that are only worth 3 wen as a gift to the great Crown Prince's Palace?

And you actually asked our great Crown Prince... to accept it?

Accept your ass!]

The Crown Prince felt his face become stiff. He wanted to smile, but he couldn't. He forcibly curled his mouth into a painful smile and said, "Please come in, Lord Ye."

"Your highness, you are being conventional by saying that." Ye Xiao laughed brightly. On the other hand, he wasn't being conventional at all. He casually put the fruit basket into a guard's arms and said, "You go. Put them away for the Crown Prince. These are real fine stuff..."

The guard was stunned and stood there doing nothing. He looked at the fruit in his arms and didn't know whether he should take

them or not.

Ye Xiao had already turned around to talk to the Crown Prince. He laughed and spoke, "I am here already. Of course, I will get in... Hahaha. I wonder what kind of fine liquor you have prepared, your highness..."

With that, he entered the door without hesitation and said, "It is well said that all lands belong to the king, and all men should bow to the king... The royal family are the richest people in the world. They have a lot of good liquor, good food and precious animals. I heard that the Crown Prince had invited me to dinner, so I stopped eating since the noon of yesterday... I wanted to save room for today's feast. The gods have truly granted my wish. Hahahaha... I am going to eat till my stomach bursts!"

He slowly paced forward and noticed the presence of the Crown Princess when he got close. He was surprised. He took a deep breath and stared at her pretty face. He praised, "This must be our Crown Princess... Heh, heh. Greetings. Our Crown Prince is truly a lucky man. I have heard that the Crown Princess has been the No. 1 beauty in the capital for a long time. Now as I see her with my own eyes, I have to admit, it is true. She is even more beautiful than described... What a beauty. Heh, heh... heh, heh, heh... You must be enjoying your life with such a beautiful wife, your highness..."

While speaking, he looked up and down on the Crown Princess's face with a randy look. It was like he had lost 150 grams of bones when seeing such a beauty...

After looking at the face, he looked at her boobs. After that, he

looked down a bit, inspecting her all the way to her feet, and then he looked again from her feet to her face...

He acted like he was choosing a whore in a brothel... Yet he didn't say "take off your clothes and let me take a closer look". If he had said so, it would have been perfect!

Of course, he had been a virgin for such a long time, so he wasn't able to say that... It was not easy for him to pretend to be a randy guy.

The Crown Princess frowned and finally couldn't bear it. She spoke with disdain, "Lord Ye, please behave yourself."

The Crown Prince was truly unhappy at the moment.

[Why is this guy so sick?

Don't you know who a Crown Princess is? Do you really think you can treat her like that?!!]

Ye Xiao was indifferent. He laughed loudly and spoke to the Crown Princess, "You invited me here. We should be like a family. Your highness, hey, hey... You are so pretty..." He looked at her neck and thought, [Her neck is so thin. I can just break it with two fingers, can't I? ...]

The guards standing aside were all pissed when they heard him. Their faces started showing anger, and they started releasing an

intimidating aura.

[Bastard! Three of our men died because of him, and one is even missing. Now he has come to the Crown Prince's Palace, yet he actually said those dirty words to our Crown Princess? He is too overweening and unscrupulous!

He is truly bodacious.]

"Lord Ye." A middle-aged man with three long threads of sideburns looked at Ye Xiao sullenly, "This is the Crown Prince's Palace. Please show some respect."

Ye Xiao was still indifferent. He casually turned his head and laughed, "That's fine. That's ok. Please get in, guys. Make yourselves at home." He was telling people to get in, yet he walked into the middle hall before them.

The guards outside the door, the Crown Prince, the Crown Princess and their trusted subordinates were all speechless and felt sullen.

They were all well-informed people, and they had seen shameless men, but they had never seen someone who could be so shameless so openly...

This was shamelessness of an incredible level!

It is true that there is always a better man while there is always a

higher sky; there is always a man who is more capable, and there is always a man who is more shameless!

"A man knows nothing about the height of the sky and the thickness of the land. A shameless and ignorant person." The middle-aged man shook his head. He felt annoyed that he had to stay with Ye Xiao.

People sighed and nodded. They all felt that it was quite a decrement of their personal value to be ordered to interact with such a foppish fool. They wondered what the Crown Prince was thinking...

[Letting all the best of us be with Ye Xiao is simply letting the white snow come in contact with a piece of shxt...

That is so disappointing!]

Only the oldest man among them reacted differently. He frowned tightly and sighed gently. He was collecting thoughts, [I am afraid this Lord Ye is not ignorant. Nor shameless...

He is extremely confident so that he doesn't see any of us in his eyes. He is unbridled and unruly!]

He was the only one who had such thought. And he didn't think that it was a good time to state it.

So he kept it in his mind, [I should act carefully. I need to observe

more... What makes him so arrogant?"]

And then he entered the hall after everyone else.

When everyone was seated, Xe Yiao decided to stir up some trouble.

Ye Xiao looked at the seat that was arranged for him and then stood up. He spoke to a man who sat on one of the host's seats and said, "Could you introduce yourself please?"

"This is the first brain truster of the Crown Prince, the world-shocking Master Guan Zhengwen." A middle-aged man was introduced with a sullen face.

"Er... Pleasure to meet you... And I hope you don't mind please, but who are you?" Ye Xiao changed his target.

"I am Meng Zixiao, just a soldier. I don't think you have heard about me." Men Zixiao spoke blandly.

Men Zixiao was a well-known gifted youth in the Kingdom of Chen. The man had done well in the recruiting tests of the court. He had passed five of the six tests before failing the last one, in which he hadn't pleased the king. So he missed the first place and only got the second. He was rather talented, yet he was grundy. He always sought revenge even for the smallest grievance. The king didn't like him, and so, he wasn't selected to work in the court. However, the Crown Prince had recruited him. He really was a

capable man.

As for the words "I don't think you have heard about me", he was being humble to in order to be recognized and praised. Deep in his heart, he was thinking, [You must have heard of me.]

Yet he had never thought that Ye Xiao would nod and say, "No, I haven't... Calling yourself 'just a soldier' truly shows your good self-awareness. Heh, heh..."

"You!" Meng Zixiao suddenly felt his throat plug up. His eyes were wide opened with fury.

[I am just being modest... I didn't expect such a rude reply, did I?]

"Do you mind if I ask you..." Ye Xiao already ignored Meng Zixiao who was so angry that his face turned purple. He was asking another man already.

With the same way, he had asked all the people at the table. Finally, he said, "That is strange... Today, the Prince invited me for dinner. And basically, I am the only guest here. You all serve here. How come you all sit there? While I am sitting down here? Is that how the Crown Prince treats his guests? That's really out of order!"

He continuously shook his head. He looked very displeased by the way the Crown Prince did things. He gave the impression that he was thinking along the lines of "he is not a wise man and he doesn't deserve my service...".

When he said that, all the people sitting there immediately wanted to beat him to death!

[Treat you politely? Are you kidding?

Out of order?

How so?!!]

In fact, he had his point. [You are all in the same group, and I am the only guest here. I am invited. It is inappropriate to let me sit down here, isn't it?]

Ye Xiao's "reasonable" points had obviously aroused the anger of the people. The Crown Prince's men were all furious, and the Crown Prince himself was pissed.

As a Crown Prince, it was normal for him to invite capable men for dinner. That was actually quite common. He had invited so many people, yet he never arranged the seats in respect to the relations of host and guests.

The men here were serving the Crown Prince. That was true. In fact, every one of them was a well-known man in some places. They were all extraordinary people. Even the great officers in the court had been seated the same way. It had become an unwritten rule. [You ignorant fool! He is actually being choosy about it!]

However, they couldn't speak out their minds. Ye Xiao's argument seemed to be right. Whoever wanted to reason with him would only disgrace himself!

Facing Ye Xiao's speech, people were all furious, yet no one dared to open their mouth. The situation turned into a waiting game.

People didn't talk, yet it didn't mean Ye Xiao would stop talking too.

"That is really short of sincerity. Truly." Ye Xiao shook his head and sighed, "I am a guest of the Crown Prince anyway. I am a remarkable talent. I know all about battles and strategies. I know a lot about geography. I have capabilities to bring peace to the kingdom... Yet I didn't even get a decent treatment? What does that mean!"

People were furiously glaring at him. They were pretty upset.

...

Chapter 84: Interrogation

Those guys in the hall were all well-educated people. They were talkative. They could speak for several hours without a stop. Yet they had lost their voices when it came to speaking against Ye Xiao.

The situation was really hard to handle. It had turned into an awkward and embarrassing situation.

After being quiet for a while, the old man Guan Zhengwen stood up and smiled. He spoke with a deep voice, “I was sitting there to have a word with the Crown Prince. Now that I am finished, I should naturally move aside... Lord Ye, this seat is saved for you. We were all seated early, and there was no other empty seat. I am too old to stand for a long time, so I sat on your seat. You wouldn’t mind, would you? Hahahaha...”

[An older ginger was spicier](#). He had quickly managed to turn the situation around.

Ye Xiao laughed and didn’t go on dragging the issue. He just sat on the seat provided without any hesitation.

He now sat less than three meters from the Crown Prince.

He was surely not making trouble without any purpose. He was simply setting himself up to execute the backup plan smoothly, [If you pricks dare to mess with me, I will kill you both instantly without hesitation!]

In the present situation, he wouldn't care much about who he was dealing with.

That seat was the perfect location for him to take action, so it was naturally something he had to seize! He was sure that to attack from this location. Even if all the supreme cultivators were to act, they would have no chance to save the Crown Prince!

The other guys didn't know that inside the foppish young lord's mind was a shocking and regicidal idea.

As the situation had been set up as such, these guys could only curse him in their minds and silently take their seats again.

After three rounds of drinks and five courses of meals, the Crown Prince coughed to draw attention.

Everyone stopped their chopsticks. They knew that the main topic of the night was about to be addressed. They were all quiet as they prepared to listen to the Crown Prince, hoping to see a good show.

However, the Lord Ye was still devouring his food like a beast. He grabbed the food on the table and ate as he wished. His cheeks were plump, and his chopsticks were moving like they were flying on the table. Wherever they land, the food would be reduced a lot. It was truly like the locusts destroying the fields.

He was now like a hungry ghost who had been starving for thousands of years and suddenly had a chance to eat, so he ate like a beast.

After the Crown Prince coughed, it turned silent in the hall, except for the strident sound of Ye Xiao chewing...

The guys were all staring at him with undisguised anger in their eyes.

Ye Xiao noticed it and acted like he was enlightened. He stopped chewing and spoke inarticulately, “You... Er. Are you finished? Oh I see... Then I am not going to restrain myself then...”

After saying that, he just stood up to get the dish of meat furthest from him and spoke with satisfaction, “This dish is truly tasty, yet it is too far to reach. I was afraid that I wouldn’t have a chance to eat it. Thanks for abdicating...”

The sound of chewing became more strident and annoying...

[Is it correct to use the word ‘abdicating’ like that?]

The guys felt that they were receiving an “ear-opening” lesson!

The Crown Prince was embarrassed. He finally spoke, “Lord Ye, I need to speak.”

Ye Xiao was stunned, but he still put a piece of meat into his mouth. Then he put down his chopsticks slowly and sat with a serious look. He said, “Since the Crown Prince wants to speak, guys you should stop eating. You all lack discipline and are disgracing our Crown Prince, especially in front of a guest, me...”

While speaking, he stretched his neck and swallowed.

The guys wished they could take the plates and throw them at Ye Xiao’s face fiercely!

[Who the hell is eating?!

You are the only one who kept on eating, are you not?

Now you actually talked like that to misrepresent the truth!

The food in the General’s House should be fine, right? How come they are letting you become such a starving beast?]

The Crown Prince frowned slightly and was lost in thought. He naturally showed an angry look.

The guys were all silent. They felt stressed as if a huge storm was crushing them. What they were fearing was the spirit of a man in a higher position. They couldn’t help praising him in their minds, [He is indeed a Crown Prince. Full of the vigor of a ruler.]

Ye Xiao was bored and rolled his eyes. He looked at the fried chicken in front of him. There was a chicken wing and a leg. [I love these kinds of food... The other wing and leg are in my stomach. Well, you couldn't fly with only one wing, so I guess I need to eat them both...

Well, one foot doesn't allow you to walk, so I should eat the other foot too...]

As for the “vigor of a king”, it meant nothing but fart to Ye Xiao!

He had met so many powerful people in his previous life. Some of them could make everything freeze just by frowning and make mountains fall by humphing.

Their so called “vigor of a king”, compared to those people... was less than a fart!

Ye Xiao hadn't seen those people in a respectful way, so how could he possibly show respect to such an insignificant so-called “vigor of a king”?

The Crown Prince's face was dark as he said, “You all know that things didn't go well in the Crown Prince's Palace. It has been unquiet recently... Many things that shouldn't have happened, happened recently...”

When speaking of that, he sighed and stopped talking.

Meng Zixiao, who sat next to him, went along with him and said, “That’s true. The position of the Crown Prince was stable at the beginning. However, after all these recent troubles... our powerful support has been disturbed. And it has resulted in many troubles for us. I have no idea what the guilty person is planning...”

When he started to speak, Guan Zhengwen was about to say something, but he stopped and just stared at Meng Zixiao, caught off-guard.

It should’ve been Guan Zhengwen’s turn to speak and lead the guys to force Ye Xiao into an embarrassing situation by slowly trapping him step-by-step. But why did Meng Zixiao skip his turn and talk in advance?

As he had started to talk, Guan Zhengwen would naturally stop, so he sat down with doubts.

The Crown Prince was also surprised, so he frowned.

Another guy sneered, “The guy who has caused all of these events must be overjoyed.”

Meng Zixiao spoke blandly, “All these things, since they have all happened, they are nothing but facts. There is always a reason for a phenomenon. There is always a cause and effect. There must be a source of all these... Lord Ye, what’s your thought?”

The guys were all talking at the beginning, so they didn’t focus

on Ye Xiao's face.

After Meng Zixiao spoke his words, the sharp eyes of these guys moved to his face.

Ye Xiao was unaware of their stares. He just nodded and said, "That's right. The force of the Crown Prince's Palace has been damaged lately. There must be a plot against us! Your highness, do you know who is messing with you? As long as you give me his name, I won't care about who he is, I will only go grab him and beat him up to death, so as to comfort you! You have treated me with utmost cordiality tonight. Accept my service as a return gift from me!"

The guys were all stunned. They had lost their words.

Some of them had been rather emotional and angry at the beginning, but they now held their emotions.

[What?

After we talked a lot, you are actually telling us you don't know who that is?

What kind of shitty brain does this guy have?!

The Crown Prince frowned, but didn't speak.

“Lord Ye, a wise man doesn’t need to play foolish.” Meng Zixiao looked at Ye Xiao blandly, “That is not interesting. An upright man should never do any dirty deeds. With what you have done, you are disgracing the great General Ye.”

“Disgrace?!” A flash of coldness appeared in Ye Xiao’s half-closed eyes, “What do you mean?”

“General Ye has been a great hero for his whole life. People know that. However, you have to be aware that... a general is just a general after all. A general doesn’t have the power to make a final decision in the Kingdom of Chen.”

What he meant was that the king was the most powerful person!

Meng Zixiao’s eyes were sharp, and his mouth contained a sinister sneer.

What he had said was really offending, but reasonable.

He obviously had put everything on the table to make Ye Xiao unable to escape the topic!

The other guys couldn’t help frowning.

[We should talk about the Crown Prince, not the power of the king. You spoke those words to offend Ye Xiao and General Ye at the same time. It was rather reckless. Meng Zixiao has been a calm and smart man in the past. How come he is acting like that today?]

Meng Zixiao was pushing Ye Xiao at the moment because there was bitterness hidden in his heart..

Meng Zixiao had passed five of the six tests in the past. In the last test, his argument was so evil that the king didn't like it. So he didn't win the first place and failed to be a legend, "The Champion of Six".

Although he was talented, he had a narrow mind and a cold heart. He didn't accept failure peacefully. After the final test, he spoke offending words against the king. He indicated that the king was poorly-educated and as blind as a bat to let a stupid person succeed. It should have been a private talk among him and his friends, but it was reported to the king. The king was naturally furious.

The king would not like to see him, so he made an announcement to expel Meng Zixiao and forbade him from taking the tests again.

Meng Zixiao had no opportunity to work in the court, so he planned to join the army. He wanted to succeed in the military area and then enter the court.

At that time, the northern army was famous in its achievements. So it was his first choice.

When he went to Ye Nantian to ask for a position, Ye Nantian coldly rejected him, "You are just a dirty man with a mouth full of schemes who cannot achieve success in either the court or the

army. You actually want to join my northern iron army. If I take you in, I would be allowing a pest among my brothers...”

And then he never spoke to Meng Zixiao again and expelled him.

These two events had always been two of the biggest disgraces in Meng Zixiao’s heart! Long after that, he was finally introduced to the Crown Prince to be his aide.

He should have been a talented man with an unprecedentedly bright future, yet now, he had become an aide. The difference between these two situations were huge.

He surely didn’t dare to speak anything bad about the king, so he decided to relieve his anger on Ye Nantian.

...

An older ginger was spicier (姜还是老的辣), means an older man is always more adept.

Chapter 85: The Unruly Smiling Lord

Meng Zixiao thought that his life and his career as an official was difficult because Ye Nantan had been placing obstacles in his way to make him suffer.

As of this moment, he thought that it was a good chance to take his revenge because it was the Crown Prince's Palace, and Ye Xiao was here alone and helpless. That's why he took Guan Zhengwen's turn to speak in haste. And naturally, he brought up the past in his heart and seized the chance.

And he had led the conversation to an irrevocable situation.

He seized the chance to deal with Ye Xiao in order to suppress Ye Nantian and let the Crown Prince have an extremely negative judgement on the House of Ye. Therefore, once the Crown Prince became king, he would get all the people of the Ye Clan killed... That would be the same as god realizing his wish...

Being challenged like that, Ye Xiao wouldn't be able to bear it. However, if he ran wild, he would be offending the Crown Prince. If he offended the Crown Prince, he would be disregarding the royal power. That meant that he would be committing treason!

If so, it would be easy to put any criminal label on him!

However, he was wrong about one thing. Ye Xiao wasn't disposing the royal power; in fact... he never saw the Crown Prince in his eyes! Besides, Meng Zixiao didn't know how important Ye

Nantian was for the king.

Ye Xiao naturally didn't know anything about the story, but he clearly felt that Meng Zixiao had hostility against him since he had arrived. Now that he was messed in such a way, it would be an extremely strange thing if he could still bear it.

Ye Xiao laughed and said, “Meng Zixiao, the nobody, right? It was not your role to say if I am playing a fool or not, and not your place to make any judgement about whether or not I am planning something! You don't have the right to say anything about the royal power. And it is absolutely not your right to judge the great general! Who do you think you are? Believe it or not. If you dare to say any words against my family again, I will throw your dead body to the streets of the capital. Hmm. Maybe not tomorrow. Maybe I am going to do it now!”

“I don't know whether the great general is good or not, but I am sure about one thing. A man like you is worth less than a dog or a bird for the great general. [‘A man worse than a beast’](#) is a description that perfectly fits you!”

Ye Xiao smiled and stared at Meng Zixiao peacefully. He spoke blandly, “If someone wants to question me, then he should better send a qualified man to do it. Such a nobody, a garbage! How dare you question me? That is just ridiculous! A huge joke! A little garbage who doesn't know how to respect seniority rules. No wonder the king decided to never recruit that somebody!”

“That is truly [‘dog meat can never get on the table’](#)!” Ye Xiao sneered, “No. It is insulting to dogs to call you a dog! You wouldn't

think that if you are willing to be someone's dog, your master will surely give you bones, would you?"

"And you threatened me... Even the Crown Prince didn't do so. You wouldn't think that you are better than him, would you? As the Crown Prince wants to talk to me, he has invited me for dinner... And you are nothing but a little garbage... What the hell! Just shut your mouth already and wave your tails!"

He shouted and all the people kept quiet. The entire hall was in silence!

Nobody would have thought that this Smiling Lord, one of the "three foppish lords", actually shouted during the feast that was hosted by the Crown Prince. He was like a gangster, shooting without any restriction!

He was shouting at the Crown Prince's man in front of the Crown Prince!

Meng Zixiao's face turned purple as he fiercely stared at Ye Xiao. At this moment, the anger and disgrace in his heart nearly made him want to kill himself!

Ye Xiao's words, on top of being threatening, was also exposing his intent. Moreover, he even added unmerciful sneering by saying that he was a dog that wasn't liked by his master, so he was treated even worse than a dog...

Meng Zixiao was furious inside and he nearly couldn't hold his anger. If he could, he would rip Ye Xiao into pieces so as to calm his anger. However, he only dared to think about it; he absolutely had no guts to do so.

First of all, he was the son of a great general that he couldn't mess with. Secondly, it was the Crown Prince's home and the Crown Prince was holding a feast. Even though he felt extremely angry, he wouldn't dare to take any actions before the Crown Prince gave the order. Thirdly, Ye Xiao wasn't joking when he threatened him.

It wouldn't be a difficult thing for the House of Ye to make Meng Zixiao disappear. Even if somebody would find out, nobody would mess with the House of Ye for a dead man!

Meng Zixiao was not a brother-in-law to the Crown Prince after all.

He was extremely furious, but he could do nothing about it. He could only stare at Ye Xiao fiercely as he spoke, "I will keep your words in mind. There will be a chance in the future for you and for me to meet again. Let's wait and see then."

"Look at him..." Ye Xiao pointed at him with finger and laughed loudly, "What a pxssy. He was scolded like that, yet what he would do was nothing but remembering... What do you remember? Don't wait for the future. Meng Zixiao, let me give you an advice today! I believe you will be thankful for what I will teach you today!"

Meng Zixiao spoke fiercely, “I wonder what good advice you would have for me. I ask for it sincerely. I am listening and will never forget it my whole life.”

Ye Xiao casually picked up a chicken leg in front of him and threw it onto Meng Zixiao’s face. It immediately made his face oily. Ye Xiao spoke, “The advice is... since you chose to be a dog, you must act like a dog! When you are told to eat, you eat; when you are told not to, you can only watch even if the food was thrown to your face.”

He sneered and spoke blandly, “When you are told to bark, you bark twice; if you bark wrong, you will be ripped out and your skin will be my dish that goes with liquor! Understand? Now get the fxxk off!”

Meng Zixiao was trembling. His face was pale, then it turned red, and then it became pale once again. Obviously, he was feeling extremely terrible.

However, nobody would pity him at the moment.

Because he asked for it.

He thought that the son of Ye Nantian was only a foppish fool, so he wanted to humiliate him as a revenge. Yet he would have never thought that surprisingly, such a foppish fool had the capability to deal with him. And it was harsh!

He who wanted to humiliate people got himself humiliated!

It was completely silent!

When they were preparing to question Ye Xiao, he burst in front of everyone in advance.

And it was so violent, so unmerciful, and so barbaric!

The chicken leg dropped on the floor from Meng Zixiao's face. - Pah! - Ye Xiao seemed to feel pity and sighed, "What a good chicken leg. Such a waste throwing it to a dog. Fine. It was cheap anyway..."

Meng Zixiao shouted and rushed out while covering his face.

Silence took over the hall once again.

The Crown Prince kept his face cold all the time before he finally opened his mouth, "Lord Ye Xiao, how sharp your words are; how fierce your methods are. However, what you did happened to be underestimating me, wasn't it?"

Ye Xiao laughed and said, "You are being sensitive, your highness. I was just helping you give your dog a lesson. It was a small favor. No need to mention it. You are very welcome, your highness."

The Crown Prince spoke blandly, “Meng Zixiao is not a dog. He is my counselor! He is like my brother!”

When he said that, many of his men felt warm in their hearts.

[He truly is a Crown Prince. He is so elegant and generous.

With these words, he actually said, we won’t be regretting doing anything for him.]

Ye Xiao laughed, “Not a dog? A brother? Oh I see! No offense. How was I supposed to know that such a garbage prick was actually your brother? Hmmm... It was ‘like a brother’... Well that’s close enough! However... Your highness, when I shouted on him, why didn’t you stop me? If you stopped me earlier, I would have considered your feelings. Even though I could never see that guy in my eyes, I would have shown him mercy! Hmm. You didn’t say anything at all. Can I see it this way? You actually agree with me that he talked in a wrong way, and it pissed you, so you didn’t stop me. Right?”

The Crown Prince seemed angry and was speechless.

“... Moreover, when he ran out, why didn’t you let him stay?” Ye Xiao said blandly, “Brother... Is that how you treat your brother?”

Guan Zhengwen spoke seriously, “Lord Ye!” His voice was harsh!

“Wait if you want to talk. I haven’t finished yet.” Ye Xiao spoke

blandly, “The Crown Prince mentioned ‘brother’, and it made me want to laugh... The two guys who are fighting against you for the throne, are they not your brothers? The biological ones!”

“You fight against each other among your true brothers... Now that you told me Meng Zixiao was your brother! Hey, hey... How is this kind of brother compared to your biological brothers? I really have no idea about it!”

Ye Xiao sneered.

He had prepared to fall out with the Crown Prince, so naturally, he wouldn't care about talking wildly!

What he said had totally destroyed the atmosphere. He talked even more boldly than Meng Zixiao!

It stunned everyone!

[This Ye Xiao is really unscrupulous!]

The Crown Prince's face was really gloomy.

Was the relation between them completely broken?!

Guan Zhengwen trembled.

What Ye Xiao had just said completely ripped off the fictitious mask of the Crown Prince. Without any reservation!

The guys became silent for a while and then burst with accusations, “What a bastard. How dare you talk like that!”

“The Crown Prince is kind and just. How could he possibly be like that!”

“You are slandering the Crown Prince!”

“How dare you, Ye Xiao! You are committing treason!”

Facing the accusations from everyone, Ye Xiao didn't say anything for retort. Guan Zhengwen was quiet too. The Crown Prince was also quiet as he stared at Ye Xiao.

Guan Zhengwen's eyes were scanning, understanding, and then finally confirming.

The Crown Prince's eyes were cautious, careful, and... a bit utterly discomfited.

Ye Xiao's eyes were like a deep pool in the autumn, silent and extremely profound.

...

‘worse than a beast’ (禽兽不如), means being a bad guy who has a

terrible personality.

‘dong meat can never get on the table’ (狗肉上不了正席), means a man is lame and never can be better.

Chapter 86: The Truth Is Meaningless

"Lord Ye, I have underestimated you." The Crown Prince sighed.

Unexpectedly, after Ye Xiao's speech, the Crown Prince didn't get angry. His first reaction was actually to sigh.

"Maybe because there has never been anyone who has thought highly of me. It was reasonable that you would never think highly of me." Ye Xiao spoke calmly.

"It was my fault after all." The Crown Prince was a bit upset when he spoke.

Yes, he was regretting.

Now, he could finally confirm that Ye Xiao... was never the foppish fool described in the rumors.

He had been right. Ye Xiao wasn't stupid at all, instead, he was too smart!

While his actions seemed to be a gangster's willful behavior, in fact, every move was made to approach his goal.

Every move and every word was extremely sharp!

Such an able person who was the son of the second most

influential character in the military area, from the General's House, was now standing opposite the Crown Prince.

Step by step, in the Crown Prince's Palace, he was finally turning hostile towards the Crown Prince himself!

There was no other choice but to collide against each other until the winner and loser were determined.

The Crown Prince just realized that since Ye Xiao had arrived, he had indicated his purpose by showing no respect to anyone and talking like a wild man. His attitude had shown that "I am here to break it down to you"!

Earlier, it had been possible to turn the situation around. It had been more harmonious.

If the Crown Prince could have given up his original plan, he could have mitigated the situation.

Yet he hadn't realized it at all.

Step by step, his men obviously aimed at Ye Xiao, while at the same time, it made Ye Xiao point his sword at the Crown Prince.

At this moment, there was no chance to turn the situation around!

Guan Zhengwen sighed. He could understand the regret in the Crown Prince's heart!

There was an extreme sense of loss.

The Crown Prince had once told him a story of the time he had been drinking with his father, the King. The King was happy that day and said something meaningful, "Nantian guarding the north can ensure me twenty years of peace!"

Who was Nantian?

Ye Nantian!

Who was Ye Nantian? Ye Xiao's father!

When the King said that, Ye Nantian had been guarding the north for eight years and it was at peace the whole time.

At that time, the Crown Prince didn't understand the true meaning behind his father's words.

Yet now he knew.

Before Ye Nantian took the north, the north was constantly at conflict with its neighbour. It endured attacks from the Kingdom of Lan-Feng all the time, and it had become rather difficult to defend the border. The whole kingdom was in an extremely fragile

situation because of the northern affair...

Most of the kingdom's finance resources were used for the war in the north. They were in a terrible situation!

When Ye Nantian took charge of the north, he showed up like a huge mountain that no one could climb over.

From then on, there had been no more suspense to the result of the war in the north!

Those years, the northern affair which had suppressed the King had turned into something he was most proud of!

Ye Nantian could make that happen, but what about Ye Xiao?

The only son of Ye Nantian!

Ye Nantian was knightly, fair and straightforward with formal title and formal flag in his life. Even though he was a typical peerless hero, he could have been framed because of carelessness.

Yet to them, Ye Xiao seemed invulnerable!

Invulnerable. It was a word which only existed in some compliments or lines of a novel, yet the Crown Prince had related it with Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao didn't have a heroic complex like his father.

He could act shamelessly, cheekily, wretchedly or dirtily. He could be tough, and he could...

All in all, he could use anything to create positive situations for himself!

That was the Crown Prince's new assessment of Ye Xiao right now.

Ye Xiao was an extremely dangerous man!

The Crown Prince even had the feeling, [Father said that 'Nantian guarding the north can ensure me twenty years peace'. If I can recruit Ye Xiao, maybe... there will be no trouble in my future!

What a pity. We have already turned against each other.

The most piteous and annoying thing is that...

I realized the true value of Ye Xiao way after we started fighting against each other!

Becoming an enemy of someone like him is never a wise thing to do. Yet such a stupid thing is exactly what I have just done!]

He looked at Ye Xiao. His heart was completely shaken. Finally, he sighed.

Guan Zhengwen also sighed.

He was filled with regret.

[Why couldn't I think about it earlier?

If he really was just a foppish fool, how come he was so vigorous, walking with wild strides in the Crown Prince's Palace?

The son of Ye Nantian. The only son of Ye Nantian. How is it possible for him to be a foppish black sheep!]

"Ye Xiao, I hope that you can give me an explanation." The Crown Prince waved his hand and the others left the table.

A few maids stepped forward and cleaned the table before leaving quickly.

Right now, only Guan Zhengwen remained standing besides the Crown Prince.

Ye Xiao frowned, "Explanation? I wonder what sort of explanation you want me to give you."

The Crown Prince laughed. It was a peaceful laughter and he said, "I need to know whether you are involved in the death of Mu Chengbai or not."

His face showed that he was tired and a bit cheesed. He said softly, "In fact... you know, even if you are really a foppish lord, I may not be willing to give up on you... You are of great value... But sometimes, a man has to do something he should, even though he doesn't wish to."

Guan Zhengwen showed a bitter smile on his face.

"Especially... when there is a woman interfering... The reason that my woman is interfering is something related to her personal interests, so it becomes something I have to deal with..."

The Crown Prince sighed, "At the moment, if I don't take good care of this thing of hers, I will fail in attempting to do many things in the future... Especially when the woman is the one who sleeps with me all the time and has a powerful background that you couldn't afford to mess with."

Ye Xiao said commiseratingly, "I understand what you are saying. I truly do."

"So I want to know the truth." The Crown Prince raised his head and looked at Ye Xiao, "I need an explanation."

Ye Xiao laughed and said sharply, "Truth? Does the truth really

matter? When did you ever need any truth. You didn't know the truth earlier, yet you still took action. Even if you found out a proof of me having no relation with it, could you possibly let me free?"

The Crown Prince stayed silent for a while.

"So, the truth. It is nothing but trash that you guys can casually step on!" Ye Xiao sneered, "Your highness. If I tell you that I killed that guy, would you believe me? It's the same if I tell you that I didn't. Would you believe me?"

"All in all, whether I killed him or not, you won't let me go. Am I right?" Ye Xiao sneered, "So, I don't understand what you are thinking. But I know one thing... I know what you want to do!"

"Oh? I wonder what is it that you assume we want to do?" The Crown Prince's eyes were turning sharper.

"You want a rightful, noble, flawless reason to get me killed, so that you can use the reason to lie to my father! A noble man can be cheated by rightful lies. In your minds, my father must be a noble man like that!"

Ye Xiao went straight to the point, "I am still alive, because... you haven't found that reason yet."

The Crown Prince smiled bitterly.

"As I am standing in the Crown Prince's Palace... I know that you have found the reason now." Ye Xiao's face was distant.

"Yes. You are right. I found it. We got the reason to keep the general out of it." The Crown Prince nodded.

"Hahaha..." Ye Xiao sneered, "I have one question though. Why do you need a reason?"

The Crown Prince frowned, "What do you mean?"

"You took action against me before, many times!! Did you have a reason then? Any proof? No?" Ye Xiao spoke tauntingly, "Yet you still came after me... Yet you need a reason to finally execute me. Isn't it ironic?"

"It's fine. You don't need the reason. If my father wants to avenge me when I died, he will never be stopped by a bloody reason." Ye Xiao sneered and looked straight into the Crown Prince's eyes, "I believe in one thing truly... If my father wants to avenge me... I'm afraid that you, the Crown Prince, will never succeed in stopping him."

As a son of a feudal-time general, he had shown an extremely rebellious and regicidal attitude towards the Crown Prince.

Yet he continued speaking, "You know! What I mean to say is that the reason doesn't really matter, don't you think?"

The Crown Prince frowned and coldness flashed in his eyes.

Of course he knew it.

Ye Nantian came to this kingdom to save his son. After that, taking charge as a general was also for the sake of his son, Ye Xiao!

At that time, the King had sworn brotherhood to two men. Two princes with different family names. Others might not know about that, but the Crown Prince knew it for sure.

Ye Nantian had slaughtered thousands and millions of men to get the medicine from Su Dingguo in order to save his son's life.

If his son died this day...

Ye Nantian would never be restrained by anything. To kill a Crown Prince, it was not about whether he dared or not, it was only about whether he was willing to!

It was very possible for him to get what he wanted!

As long as he really wanted to!

"So, what you are doing is actually useless and meaningless." Ye Xiao stared right into his eyes and spoke, "Your highness, only the thing you did at the beginning was smart."

The Crown Prince frowned, "The thing I did at the beginning? You mean... Letting the Mu Clan to mess with you?"

Ye Xiao didn't say anything but only smiled, yet his eyes were showing a colder expression.

...

Chapter 87: I Don't Want to Fight

Although Ye Xiao remained expressionless, he was still sneering inside.

When he talked about the thing that the Crown Prince had done at the beginning... he was actually talking about the dead “Ye Xiao” getting poisoned.

However, the Crown Prince seemed to be playing innocent or he had truly misunderstood Ye Xiao’s words...

Anyway, Ye Xiao wasn’t prepared to let it go.

Only when he had avenged the dead “Ye Xiao” could he finally satisfy the obsession in his mind.

It wasn’t just something which involved the dead “Ye Xiao”, but also something which he himself would have to take care of.

“Meaningless?” The Crown Prince murmured. He suddenly smiled and spoke blandly, “It shouldn’t be meaningless. So... This time, I invited you to dinner because I wanted to discuss a solution with you to conclude this business between you and me.”

Ye Xiao rolled his eyes and said, “You have invited me to dinner, which means that you must have planned to talk it through. However, there is no need for any discussion at all. I wonder what solution you have in mind now?”

“It is simple. A fight can settle everything once and for all.” The Crown Prince rubbed the sides of his head and showed an expression of helplessness, “Basically, I don’t want to use this vulgar way to deal with this event. But you know, sometimes, the proper way isn’t really enough to settle up some differences. A combat is not an elegant way, but it is the best way when it comes to the present situation.”

Ye Xiao nodded and showed understanding, “That’s true. The situation is obvious now. Unless you become king, considering my father’s great exploits and power, there is no proper way for you to take care of me.”

The Crown Prince’s eyes were filled with coldness.

The great general and his son were equivalent to a fish bone stuck in his throat. It troubled him so much that he had to destroy it.

Ye Xiao said blandly, “In fact... in spite of what you think about the truth, at the beginning, if your brother-in-law hadn’t come and messed with me, he wouldn’t have died. He could have been spending his days luxuriously in the capital right now.”

After that, he stopped talking.

The Crown Prince spoke blandly, “Lord Ye, there’s another way in my mind. It should benefit both your side and mine. Yet we have now blocked all the routes towards that direction. There is

only one way left to take.”

He turned around, looked at Guan Zhengwen and said, “You have to fight against Old Master Guan. After the combat, no matter who wins, it will be the end of all troubles. In fact...”

The Crown Prince looked at Ye Xiao with sincerity and sighed, “Lord Ye, I don’t want to mess with our General Ye... As long as I show my attitude to my woman, I believe... she and her men will not cause any more trouble. The dead are gone, they don’t need to keep on making troubles, right?”

Ye Xiao frowned and his eyes had already locked onto Guan Zhengwen who was standing beside the Crown Prince.

Since the Crown Prince sent off everyone except Guan Zhengwen, he had started to pay attention to him. The old man seemed different. The possibility that he was a hidden superior cultivator was very high.

As long as he was here, the Crown Prince would feel safe and fear nothing.

According to Ye Xiao’s research, this old man, Guan Zhengwen, was well-known in the Kingdom of Chen. On the surface, he was an elegant old man who reads a lot.

Such an old man might be good at talking. His words might be sharp like a knife or a sword, but he seemed useless in combat.

However, to fight against Ye Xiao, the Crown Prince had actually chosen this old man... The Crown Prince naturally wouldn't send his men to death, so this man must be a well-hidden superior cultivator, mustn't he?

Right now, things were not following Ye Xiao's predictions.

Suddenly, Ye Xiao felt the need to employ cautiousness.

Because he... he had failed to notice anything unusual till now.

With his great senses, he had actually failed to feel any sort of threat from this old man. There was only one explanation to that. The only possibility was that this old man's cultivation was way above Ye Xiao's.

And he must be at a higher level than the Earth Origin Stage.

He was at least at... the Sky Origin Stage.

In other words, Ye Xiao was now facing a superior cultivator of the Sky Origin Stage. Besides, a man who could stand so close to the Crown Prince all the time, a man whom the Crown Prince trusted to such an extent, must have some sort of special abilities.

It was very likely that... this man was a superior cultivator at the Grandmaster Levels of the Sky Origin Stage.

A cultivator at the Grandmaster Levels of the Sky Origin Stage would be among the most powerful men in the Land of Han-Yang.

Ye Xiao couldn't help cursing in his mind.

[This is really coming across a ghost after a long way in the dark. How come such an old bastard suddenly showed up?]

Guan Zhengwen looked at Ye Xiao with a smile on his face, his expression tranquil. He spoke gently, "The Crown Prince is a generous man. He wants to settle our differences in a peaceful way by having a combat. I have to participate by having a fight against Lord Ye to lay the troubles to rest. Lord Ye, we should just go through the motions and finish the combat. You don't need to be cautious. I am old indeed, yet I could still fight for two rounds."

He coughed and continued, "I hope that Lord Ye wouldn't say anything about having no capability in martial arts and words like that... Heh, heh. As I have no troubles with my sight, I think your cultivation has reached at least level 9 in the Mortal Origin Stage, right? You are only one step away from getting into the Earth Origin Stage... Regarding your young age, you are really a young man with an outstanding ability. [A tiger wouldn't truly have a dog son ...](#)"

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "You are flattering me."

Ye Xiao had hidden his own cultivation capability intentionally. He had operated the Lunisolar Shadow to cover the martial aura of

his cultivation. He didn't completely erase his martial aura, yet there were only a handful of people who were capable of discovering it. Guan Zhengwen had actually noticed it and found out that he had a good cultivation capability.

Although he didn't find out everything about Ye Xiao and thought that Ye Xiao was only at the ninth level of the Mortal Origin Stage, he was still the man who had the best insight amongst everyone Ye Xiao had met in his present life.

The Crown Prince said that he just wanted to end their differences and didn't want to mess with General Ye. Ye Xiao didn't believe any of his words.

[If you really want to make it so easy, why did you invite me to come over for dinner?

If you stop making troubles for me, how could I mess with you?]

When Guan Zhengwen said, "go through the motions", Ye Xiao was disdainful of it.

[If I believe that, I must be... really stupid if I get myself into the fire.

Go through the motions, huh?]

Ye Xiao was thinking, [Maybe it isn't completely a lie. They wouldn't dare to kill me in the Crown Prince's Palace after all. In

fact, in order to settle everything, I have to get out of here alive and everything will reach a good end.

That means they will make up a false story that they had never laid their hands on me.

Yet they will absolutely not let me go so easily. All of these people are aiming at getting me killed.

But this is an unresolvable contradiction for them...

The key to solve the contradiction is the words ‘go through the motions’.]

“Old Master Guan is right. It is the best situation that we all go through the motions and nobody gets hurt. Since the Crown Prince and Old Master Guan both wish for it, let me go along with your wishes.” Ye Xiao played the role of an understanding person and said, “But you are an aged man. An old man who doesn’t take pride in his ability to fight. How could I overwork you by fighting. Although my cultivation capability of martial arts is weak, by any chance, if you couldn’t hold my attacks, how can I be sure that I won’t get you hurt...”

After Ye Xiao spoke, the Crown Prince and Old Master Guan were both stunned.

[What?

What did he say?

He doesn't want to fight against an old man?

Because he doesn't want to accidentally kill an old man?

What? How could he be so shameless?]

Old Master Guan was truly well educated. After being shocked, he immediately said, "It doesn't matter. The Crown Prince has given his word. To end the troubles in this way, I think it will be fine for me to hang on for a few rounds. Let's just go through the motions... Go through the motions..."

Ye Xiao laughed, "No, no, no. We can't have a combat. You are venerable in age. You surely wouldn't mind losing the combat, but I still need to live in the society. If we really have such a combat and people learned of it, the smart ones may understand that it was decided by the noble Crown Prince, but the others will think that I am bullying an old man... Anyway, it is absolutely wrong to have such a combat."

The Crown Prince and Old Master Guan were astonished once again. [What? He could actually swear that [black is white](#). How shameless could he be.]

Old Master Guan spoke in a deep voice, "Lord Ye, it is you who said that it was decided by the Crown Prince. He has given his words. There is no way to change the decision. If I really couldn't

bear the attacks of yours, so be it. I won't complain about it..."

Ye Xiao spoke with a smile, "Relax. I surely have an alternative for this. It will neither violate the Crown Prince's decision nor make us fight in the combat ourselves. You are so aged; how could I possibly hit you. I am always respectful to the elderly..."

Guan Zhengwen was angry inside, yet he still had a smile on the surface. He said, "I wonder what solution you have that could kill two birds with one stone. I am willing to listen."

Ye Xiao cheerfully spoke, "It is more than killing two birds with one stone. It actually kills three with one stone. It could even be more birds. My solution will make you satisfied for sure. It is really the most perfect solution"

Guan Zhengwen was nearly freaked out because of his shamelessness. He once again spoke in a deep voice, "I am willing to listen."

Ye Xiao said, "My solution will satisfy you. You are well known in the kingdom. To fight in a combat will surely get you hurt. Let's finish the troubles through a verbal combat."

"A verbal combat?"

"A verbal combat goes as follows, I will say one move and explain how I will proceed the move to attack you, and then you will say your move, and explain how you will defend. Or you explain your

attack, and I will explain how I will defend. The result will come out after all...”

Guan Zhengwen and the Crown Prince were both furious.

They were still underestimating how shameless Ye Xiao could be...

A tiger wouldn't have a dog son (虎父无犬子), means a son is as good as his father.

Swear the black is white (黑的说成白的), means persist in saying something to deny the truth.

Chapter 88: The Battle Art of a Thousand Troops

Ye Xiao was serious, "Let's do it this way, and the only thing we need to do is talk. Isn't it much safer than going through the motions?"

"It will never hurt our relations. An old man shouldn't count on his weak strength. I believe you have been feeling weak since long ago. Let's just solve this thing by talking. I don't think there will be anyone saying I am taking advantage of you. After the verbal combat, there will be no more enmity between us. Isn't it a perfect solution..."

Guan Zhengwen and the Crown Prince looked at this wretched guy and were left speechless.

[You actually believe that we only want to go through the motions?

Verbal combat?

How on earth did you come up with such an idea?

And after all, it actually turns out that we are the ones taking advantage of you!]

"Heh, heh... You have a truly interesting mind. It is a practical

way." Guan Zhengwen smiled and said, "However, a verbal combat instead of striking seems to be something only women would do... Besides, I have admired your father's martial arts for years. I have always been wanting to learn something real from his official heir..."

"Do we really have to fight?" Ye Xiao frowned.

"It would be better to..." Guan Zhengwen had a reluctant look on his face. He actually gave Ye Xiao a hint with his eyes and spoke in a lower voice, "Besides, it could also solve the enmity between you and the Mu Clan. The Crown Princess is already here to watch... No matter what, we need to make it happen for the Crown Prince's sake."

Ye Xiao glanced at the corner of the middle hall and found that the Crown Princess was standing nearby, staring at him.

In her eyes, there was nothing but killing intent.

[Why does this chick stare at me with such hatred in her eyes every time...] Ye Xiao thought, [A Crown Princess, huh. Can't she just show some generosity... I have done nothing but kill her brother. I didn't break into her ancestral graves or kill her whole family. No big deal...]

Thinking of that, he curled his lips.

"Since you insist, then I will have a fight against you." Ye Xiao

nodded and smiled, "Take care. Don't wrench your arms or hurt your waist... Hmm. I mean, I am surely not a match to you, so you don't have to be too serious... Heh, heh. Let's go through the motions."

It seemed Guan Zhengwen didn't understand Ye Xiao's "warm suggestion" because he was pretty much focused on his own troubles. He only smiled peacefully and spoke gently, "Thank you for your kindness. We both know what we are doing."

The Crown Prince was calm.

The Crown Princess's eyes were filled with delight.

She thought she was finally going have her revenge and felt excited.

"Please." Guan Zhengwen was still acting like a an old man who could barely walk steadily. He elegantly reached out his hand and walked out of the middle hall with Ye Xiao.

In the yard, many people were waiting as they stood in a circle.

Obviously, the Crown Prince had arranged for many people to watch the fight as eyewitnesses.

Ye Xiao looked around and discovered many acquaintances.

"Why is Xiao Xiao suddenly participating in a fight?" A voice came over from the crowd, "Were you not invited to dinner by the Crown Prince? Are you not here to discuss some national affairs? How come it has turned into a fight? That... You are really capable at creating trouble, are you not?"

It was Zuo Wuji who spoke.

Ye Xiao looked over and found Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji standing together. They were both stretching their necks to look at Ye Xiao. Even in the crowd, Lan Langlang's favus-plagued head remained conspicuous.

Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji were actually part of the crowd too. They must have been invited by the Crown Prince. It was a reasonable thing to do.

If they were not here and Ye Xiao died during the combat, there would be no one who could testify that the Crown Prince was innocent. A stranger's words would be, after all, unbelievable.

In fact, the perfect witnesses were not these two foppish lords. The perfect choice would have been Prince Hua-Yang or Su Yeyue. But the Crown Prince would never dare to invite these two, because if any of them were here, a fight would never happen. They would definitely stop them from fighting. So the Crown Prince had no other choices other than inviting these two foppish lords to come.

Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji were worried for Ye Xiao, so they

came without hesitation.

When they saw Ye Xiao coming out, they knew that it was true that he would be fighting. They were so worried, and they tried their best to give Ye Xiao some support with their eyes.

Ye Xiao nodded and waved his hand to tell them not to worry.

A group of guards from the Crown Prince's Palace came out and stood in a circle. They separated Ye Xiao and the crowd, creating a spacious fighting ring in the yard.

Ye Xiao couldn't help frowning. His instincts were screaming at him, warning him of danger.

It seemed like he had to abandon his title of a foppish lord from now on.

However, he really didn't want to abandon this charade. He was just having fun in being the foppish Lord Ye...

How could he give up on that title so casually?

But when he looked at his opponent, he couldn't help but laugh, "Hahahahaha..."

It turned out he was not the only one who felt displeased about being watched.

Guan Zhengwen was frowning deeply, and he looked like he had eaten a piece of shxt. He was obviously unhappy.

Apparently, he felt the same as Ye Xiao. He realized that his true capability would be exposed to the public.

And it was worse for him than for Ye Xiao.

He had kept a low profile in his whole life and always showed up as an elegant scholar in front of the public. Everyone knew that he was only good at literature and was pretty weak at fighting...

Yet, as of now, he was forced to expose his cultivation capability...

All the hard work he put in disguising himself was going to be wasted. Besides, if Ye Xiao died after the fight, it wouldn't matter if it took days or months, he would still have died fighting.

And Guan Zhengwen would be the guy who had caused his death.

Would Ye Nantian be reasonable if that happened? Even though he would consider not messing with the Crown Prince, he would definitely vent his anger on Guan Zhengwen.

Then how could Guan Zhengwen defend against Ye Nantian who had an army of experienced soldiers?

[The Crown Prince arranged everything... He is using me as a scapegoat, isn't he...]

Thinking of that, Guan Zhengwen felt more uncomfortable.

Yet he could have no regrets regarding the current situation.

With all that had happened already, it was too late for him to step back.

He had no choices left other than fighting.

The story about Ye Nantian singlehandedly fighting an army in the battle was a state secret. It was not known to anyone except a select few. If Guan Zhengwen knew the truth, he would be extremely upset.

However, Ye Xiao's laughter had already made him feel worse. Guan Zhengwen sighed and said, "Oh. A hero is nothing but a product of his time..."

Ye Xiao realized that there was someone feeling worse than him. He had already achieved a sense of victory in his mind, so he felt delighted. He even spoke to himself with disdain, [What the hell. Since when did I become a man who takes pleasure in other's misfortune. I feel a little bit evil...]

Yet it was really hard for him to suppress his enjoyment after seeing someone having it worse than himself. So, although he was going to face a crisis, he looked happy.

Because Ye Xiao appeared to be delighted, the crowd thought that he was confident. They looked down upon Ye Xiao and thought, [A young man winning a battle against a weak old man. Where is the glory in that?

How shameless... You actually feel happy about it?]

Wang Danian and Meng Zixiao were there too. They knew the true cultivation capability of Guan Zhengwen, so they smiled evilly. They happily looked at Ye Xiao, hoping that he would be slaughtered as soon as possible.

Ye Xiao glanced at them. His eyes were full of disdain. He suddenly made a whistle.

It was as if he was calling his dogs.

The next moment, he pointed at Wang Danian and Meng Zixiao and bent the finger.

The meaning was obvious. [You two are just like two dogs.]

"You are a dead..." Their faces suddenly blushed, and they were about to shout. They were obviously going to say something like "you are a dead meat already", but before they could say it out, they

noticed the Crown Prince's eyes coldly looking at them, daring them to speak.

They trembled and stopped making any sound. Yet their eyes remained filled with hatred.

"Please, Lord Ye." Guan Zhengwen looked upset, but it was too late for him to retreat now. After all, he had to do what he had to do.

"Please, Old Master Guan." Ye Xiao stood opposite to him with a calm smile.

The "Old Master Guan" that Ye Xiao used to call him now embarrassed Guan Zhengwen, [We are going to fight against each other now. Why do you keep calling me Old Master? Are you addicted to it?]

In front of everyone's eyes, he casually stood there. Ye Xiao attacked first.

Ye Xiao suddenly rushed forward. He was moving fiercely with the sound of howling wind. His fists were like tigers, and his feet were like dragons. He rushed to Guan Zhengwen with a shocking vigor that could frighten ten thousand men.

He only made one move, yet killing intent had already spread throughout the surroundings.

"Dragon in the Battle! That is a move from the Battle Art of a Thousand Troops."

In the crowd, there were a few smart ones who shouted out in low voices.

It was popular move in the Kingdom of Chen. It was a fistic martial art that was usually used by the soldiers. It was bold and resolute, giving out a horrific aura. It killed decisively in an obvious way.

As the son of a general, it was just fitting that he would use this martial art. He and this fistic martial art, under the present situation, were a perfect pair.

Chapter 89: Melting Bone Palm

The Battle Art of a Thousand Troops was rather powerful when used against groups, but it was a bit inappropriate to use it in a one-on-one fight between cultivators. But Ye Xiao used it anyway.

He didn't hesitate at all. It seemed like he was very adept at using it. So everyone arrived at the same conclusion, [He is proficient at using the Battle Art of a Thousand Troops, but he doesn't know any other martial arts.]

That was a reasonable assumption.

For a man from the general's family, it was reasonable that he would use such a fistic martial art!

"Good move! How vigorous!" Guan Zhengwen kept his hands on the back and turned his emaciated body around. His clothes floated as he casually dodged to a position right beside Ye Xiao. The move seemed slow, but it was actually fast and clear. His pale and thin finger reached out towards Ye Xiao slowly. It was like this finger had broken the limit of time and space. This finger pointed towards Ye Xiao's back.

The dodge and the finger move had already aroused exclamations from the crowd!

In the crowd, there were not only ordinary people like Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji, but also some experienced and smart men. Although it was just the beginning of the fight between Ye Xiao

and Guan Zhengwen, it had already become frantic.

It took only an instant to make everybody's eyes wide opened, and a moment later, [all their eye-balls dropped and bounced on the floor](#). They were all extremely astonished...

[What... The famous Old Master Guan actually knows how to fight? And... he seems to be an absolute master.]

This instant transposition was truly a fantastic move. He casually avoided the danger. Ordinary men wouldn't be able to use it. And that finger move looked ordinary, but it contained a massive amount of power.

The old man was really good at hiding his capability.

Ye Xiao noticed that finger was getting closer, yet he didn't turn around to defend against it. He suddenly jumped up and rolled his body, and then he made a turning kick. A blast of white whirlwind appeared, and he had flown quite a distance forward. - Poof! -

It was another move in the Battle Art of a Thousand Troops. It was 'Warding a Thousand Troops'!

Guan Zhengwen didn't hit Ye Xiao with that finger, yet he didn't change the move either. He leaned his body forward and rushed towards Ye Xiao, chasing him like a ghost. It was as if his slim body was sticking to Ye Xiao.

At that moment, everybody realized that although Lord Ye was able to fight, he would never be a match for the Old Master Guan! He seemed to only know the basic moves of the Battle Arts of a Thousand Troops. Yet Guan Zhengwen had already digested all the martial arts he knew into his fists, palms and fingers. His moves were fluent and free forming...

However, they didn't realize that...

When Guan Zhengwen got close to Ye Xiao with an outrageous speed, his two fleshless hands had casually tapped Ye Xiao eighteen times continuously...

Every tap was silent.

Every tap was quick.

Yet, it was like he had never moved his hands.

Ye Xiao flew forward over three meters. And then he shouted and jumped over again in the air. With the sound of a wild wind, he instantly landed on the floor fiercely.

"Beast Leaping of the Battle Art of a Thousand Troops! Well done!"

In the crowd, Wang Danian applauded. Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang looked at him, shocked. It was understandable for everyone to applaud, except for Wang Danian!

Wang Danian had enmity with Ye Xiao. He was the man on the Crown Prince's side. He had no reason to applaud Ye Xiao!

Yet it was real that Wang Danian applauded!

That was irrational!

That was against human nature!

Guan Zhengwen waved his hands. Ye Xiao was suddenly stopped mid-stride, abruptly halting his rush to Guan Zhengwen before slipping and crashing against the floor. The next moment, Guan Zhengwen was shaking his head smilingly with his hands on his back, "I am old. I truly am. My ability is not equal to my ambition now. I am useless... Lord Ye, you are young and strong. You are vigorous. Why don't we just let the combat end as it is now?"

Everyone knew that Ye Xiao had lost this fight. Guan Zhengwen had shown a decent demeanor.

His casualness had perfectly shown his status as a senior. And he seemed to show mercy to Ye Xiao...

Nobody saw Lord Ye get hurt, right?

Ye Xiao stood up and spoke angrily, "End? What the hell are you talking about! I haven't lost yet! Let's fight again..."

People in the crowd shook their heads. [A foppish lord never changes. He truly has no decency. The old man has shown you mercy. You have already crashed twice... Yet you still don't know how lame you are and you still want a tough fight?

How shameless...]

"You are right. You haven't lost. Let's call it even. I am truly too old for this. Let's say you are concerned and respectful for an old man." Guan Zhengwen laughed.

Ye Xiao humphed and said, "Since you said so, I will show my kindness to an old man. Let's call it even then! You are really taking advantage of me then..."

With this declaration, the crowd burst into catcall.

Ye Xiao dusted his clothes and suddenly spoke, "Old Master Guan, it really was not a good fight today. If there is a chance in the future, I will fight against you once again. I hope you can be in your best condition then. Heh, heh!"

Ye Xiao laughed and said to the Crown Prince, "Your highness, I have enjoyed a good dinner. Now that the problem has been solved, I think it is time for me to get going."

The Crown Prince didn't expect that Ye Xiao would be so understanding. He had been thinking of a way to get him leave, yet

Ye Xiao asked to leave himself. So he smiled and replied, "Take care, Lord Ye. We shall get together sometime to discuss the national affairs."

Ye Xiao laughed, "Sure. When I have the chance, I will come back to enjoy good times with you once again... and your beautiful wife."

The Crown Prince's face twitched a bit. [You never forget to molest my wife...] Yet he still smiled and said, "You are always welcome."

The Crown Princess was a bit angry before her eyes resumed sneering, [Come back again? You are going to die... And you actually tried to take advantage of me... Fine. I shall not be too critical of a man who is about to die.]

Ye Xiao laughed and waved his hand. And then he squeezed out of the crowd with Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang and left. After he left the crowd, a weird smile appeared on his face, but nobody had noticed it...

...

Guan Zhengwen coughed and then walked to the front hall. He was trembling.

The crowd were led by the guards to leave one by one.

The Crown Prince watched Ye Xiao leaving until his silhouette vanished. And then he smiled to everybody and got back to the front hall.

In the front hall, three people remained.

They were the Crown Prince, the Crown Princess and Guan Zhengwen.

"Master Guan, how is it?" The Crown Princess couldn't wait and asked.

The Crown Prince also showed an inquiring expression.

"Your highness... Oh." Guan Zhengwen didn't answer the question. He sighed, "You have entrapped me so deeply..."

The Crown Prince smiled, "Everything is perfect. It is flawless. You don't need to worry. If someday you truly fall into trouble because of what happened today, I will protect you."

Guan Zhengwen paused for a while and then sighed. He looked at the expecting eyes of the Crown Princess and spoke in a deep voice, "The Melting Bone Palm... I have managed to drop eighteen solid hits on Ye Xiao... He will be fine for the next few days. But.. after a month, his bones will slowly crumble, and he will die when all his bones become broken."

Speaking of that, the wrinkles on his face seemed to become

much deeper.

"There won't be any doubts about it, right?" The Crown Princess asked apprehensively.

"This martial art has been my secret for many years... In those years, because it was too vicious, so... I decided to keep it a secret..." Guan Zhengwen sighed and said, "Even I myself have no idea how to cure it. So, Ye Xiao is bound to die this time."

The Crown Princess puckered her face into a smile, "You have worked hard, Master Guan."

Guan Zhengwen nodded and replied, "My pleasure, your highness."

After that, he frowned and sighed deeply. In his eyes, there was a worry that became bigger and bigger...

He had surely finished the task of the Crown Prince, yet the enmity between him and Ye Nantian had been clearly established.

It was fine if Ye Nantian didn't find out the truth. Otherwise, when Ye Nantian came for him, he was afraid that his whole family would have no chance of... survival!

Now he could only hope that Ye Nantian wouldn't find out...

The promise from the Crown Prince, the old man knew that he really shouldn't count on it!

"Your highness, I have one question about Ye Nantian... What is his history?" He asked the Crown Prince in a low voice. The history about Ye Nantian had been a secret in the Kingdom of Chen.

Ye Nantian had been a mysterious man since he showed up in the kingdom. And then he was suddenly famous and became the second most powerful man in the military. All the political and martial groups were interested in him, yet none of them got to know anything about his past.

As the Crown Prince of the kingdom, he must know something, right?

The Crown Prince responded with a "hmm" and then stayed silent for a while. And then he said, "I am not very well informed about it. It is said that Ye Nantian was a hunter in the mountains... He coincidentally came across something strange and ate some precious treasure, so he obtained a marvelous strength..."

He was merely talking shxt.

He knew nothing about Ye Nantian. In fact, even the king didn't know much about Ye Nantian. The Crown Prince only said that to comfort Guan Zhengwen.

Guan Zhengwen felt relieved and said, "That's good. That's

great."

[He is only a hunter who coincidentally obtained some marvelous strength...

There's nothing to fear then.

If something happens to me, I could simply just kill him secretly. A living Ye Nantian is the general of the Kingdom of Chen, the second powerful man in the military, but a dead Ye Nantian is only a dead man!

With the capability of the Grandmaster Levels of the Sky Origin Realm, it won't be hard to kill a general, right?]

...

The author must be trying to say those people were extremely shocked. It has the same meaning as 'jaws dropping to the floor'.

Chapter 90: The Furious Song Jue

Ye Xiao left the Crown Prince's Palace with Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji while talking and laughing. He got home and acted like nothing had ever happened.

Before they parted with each other, Ye Xiao took out a dan bead and gave it to Lan Langlang, "Langlang, take this dan bead. Melt it in warm water and divide the water into three portions. Every morning during sunrise, transfer one portion into a washbowl and use it to wash your head. After three days, your favus will be completely cured."

"Really?!" Lan Langlang opened his crossed-eyes with a face filled with astonishment.

"This is about your personal image which will last your whole life. Do you think I would joke about it?" Ye Xiao frowned.

"Hey, hey, hey... Damn! I am thankful even if it doesn't work... The favus truly hurts my handsome appearance. You are right. It is a big thing in my life..." Lan Langlang snatched the dan bead in a hurried motion, "I'll leave you two to talk further. I need to go home now... Hey, hey. I can't wait to wash my head tomorrow... Hahaha. I will no longer need to bear the favus... just three days..."

He scampered and left.

Zuo Wuji was disdainful, "Even without the favus, he still has an obnoxious look, yet he actually finds himself to be handsome..."

Eww..." He waved his hand and spoke, "If we have nothing more to talk about, I should go home too. I was thinking about having a drink with you, but Lan Langlang's antics disgusted me... Eww... I need to throw up..."

And then he left too.

Ye Xiao watched both of them leave and then his smile vanished. The extreme coldness deep in his eyes was finally let loose. His hands hidden in his sleeves were tightly curled in a fist.

[The Crown Prince laid his murderous hands on me after all!

How vicious!

What a scheme!]

Ye Xiao operated the East-rising Purple Qi in the darkness. Accompanied with the cool air of the night, he returned to the General's House.

The steward was concerned as he looked at him. He spoke in a deep voice, "How was it? Did anything happen?"

Ye Xiao hesitated for a while and said, "Nothing. Let's go inside."

The steward followed Ye Xiao to his room with an anxious look, "How was it? What do you mean nothing?"

Ye Xiao grinned, "Nothing special. The Crown Prince let his man attack me with 18 strikes of the Melting Bone Palm. That's all."

"What? Melting Bone Palm? 18 times?!"

The steward was astonished.

The next moment, a mass of blue mist suddenly surged out from his body. It spread in all directions, as if it was about to explode. - Boom! - The walls shook when this sinister aura completely occupied Ye Xiao's room, resulting in multiple cracks!

The mist destroyed the wall, and it didn't even stop there. It kept on spreading.

It was like an exploding bomb!

The next moment, the steward turned around and rushed out. His face was twitching as he shouted in fury, "MAR-THAR-FXX-KARRRRR! I will wipe out the Crown Prince's Palace tonight!"

"Wait, wait, wait..." Ye Xiao was shocked by the drastic reaction of the steward and hurriedly grabbed him, "Uncle Song... Calm down..."

"CALM DOWN? CALM DOWN MY ASS!" Song Jue kept on shouting while stomping on the floor, "I have had enough in this

fxcking Kingdom of Chen! FXCK THE HEAVEN, FXCK THE HELL! If it wasn't for the stupid promise made by Brother Ye, how could we possibly stay in this shXtty place! FXXK! Now my brother has promised to guard their kingdom for twenty years, yet his only son has actually been struck 18 times of Melting Bone Palm! Fxxk Chen Xuantian and everybody who shares his bloodline..."

Chen Xuantian was the name of the king of the Kingdom of Chen...

Ye Xiao spoke in a hushed tone, "Uncle Song, lower your voice please... Calm down... Don't be emotional..."

"DON'T BE EMOTIONAL?!" Song Jue stomped his feet and his hair stood on end; his eyes were bloodshot, "I agreed to be a steward in this house because I was trying to keep your little shxTTY ass safe. Now you are standing before me after being hit by 18 strikes of Melting Bone Palm! I, I, I... I am even worse than a stupid tortoise! I, I, I... I am going to slaughter every single man in that bastard's house. I am going to hang everyone in his clan! Otherwise, people will think that I am a weak douchebag!"

Ye Xiao twitched his mouth.

[He is way, way, way too emotional!

Hang everyone in one's clan... That certainly sounds like something a king would declare using a royal decree... Now he actually wants to hang everyone in the king's clan... That really is something incredible...]

"Uncle Song, chill out please. Listen to me. Would you listen to me first?!" Ye Xiao forcefully dragged Song Jue and made him sit within the dilapidated room.

In fact, it was far worse than a dilapidated room; it was completely in ruins.

Due to all this commotion, the blood guards had heard them and all of them rushed over. One meek voice was heard from outside the door, "Is everything okay, Chief? Is something happening to the young master?"

Before Song Jue could answer, Ye Xiao hurriedly spoke, "No. It's fine. I am all right. Go to bed, all of you. I need to have a private conversation with Uncle Song. Heh, heh, heh, heh..."

The walls of his room had fallen, yet he said that everything was fine...

The blood guards were hesitant and unwilling to leave.

Ye Xiao dragged Song Jue and walked out the door to pacify them in person, and then they went to Song Jue's room.

They had just left Ye Xiao's room and then, - BOOM -, the whole room collapsed upon itself...

The blast nearly knocked down Ye Xiao. He hastened his steps.

Song Jue looked back, and his face was still expressionless.

It suddenly reminded Ye Xiao of a doggerel, and he nearly started to laugh out loud.

He then murmured, "The first time Uncle Song looks back, his ugly face breaks down a building in his sight; the second time Uncle Song looks back, his ugly face cracks the mountain and makes the river reverse its flow; the third time Uncle Song looks back, his ugly face brings forth darkness that causes even ghosts to become petrified; the fourth time..."

Song Jue said angrily, "Stop. Three times is enough. Those are good lines. When I return to... Hmm. I will use it as my chant... Hmm... Wait, no! It is not a good time for that. I have to send a message to your father right now and tell him to come back quickly. Only when he comes back will there be a chance to cure the wounds inflicted by the Melting Bone Palm. I hope there is still time. There must be!"

Ye Xiao twitched his mouth a little bit. He had found Uncle Song to be cute; now he confirmed that he was indeed very cute.

He realized that his father's capability was really strong. A man who could cure the wound caused by Melting Bone Palm must have a cultivation capability that was at least better than Guan Zhengwen.

When they entered Song Jue's room, Ye Xiao told him the truth at once, "Listen, Uncle Song. My father doesn't need to know. The Melting Bone Palm doesn't work on me. Not at all!"

Song Jue frowned and spoke in a worried tone, "Xiao-Er, it is not something to be joking about. Do you even know what Melting Bone Palm is? It is an extreme nasty martial art... It uses the complete yin power to hurt people. Who ever has been hit by it, unless he knows that he has been hit, he has no way of realizing that he is affected. By the time he gets to know of it, 70 percent of his bones must have already melted away. By then, there is no way for him to get cured. If you don't get the wound cured as soon as possible, I am afraid something really bad is going to happen to you... What people always say about people becoming a heap of minced meat... That is a saying created by the Melting Bone Palm."

"I know. I really do." Ye Xiao spoke calmly, "Uncle Song, to be honest, today, at the Crown Prince's Palace, I thought about killing him or just refuse negotiating with him and running away. They wouldn't dare to hurt me forcibly... But I gave up both thoughts."

"Our strength in the capital is limited. We can't be reckless, really." Ye Xiao paced slowly to the window, "So, even if I can't bear it any more and want to make some trouble, I will need to do it discretely. Since we are facing the royal power, even if we are very proud of our clan, we won't have a good chance to win."

"There are so many men in our house. They could have died because of my reckless actions!" Ye Xiao smiled blandly, "I can't risk all of your lives just for venting my anger."

"So I could only think of something else."

Song Jue was expressionless and silent. His lips were trembling. Obviously, he was still extremely emotional, but he was trying his hardest to calm down.

"So, when I discovered their plan, I knew that they were really scheming something this time, but they were fearful. So they tried to use something 'imperceptible' to take my life. There were only a few ways to do so." Ye Xiao raised six of his fingers, "They are Melting Bone Palm, Soft Cloud Fist, Yin Wind Martial Art, Jade Glow Ice Mist, Shade Finger Point and... Fatality Martial Art."

"In the whole world, there are only these martial arts that can take my life and remain unnoticeable, soundlessly and slow..." Ye Xiao smiled.

Song Jue was astonished and didn't find any words to say.

Because only four of those six martial arts were known to him.

Song Jue believed that in the Land of Han-Yang, even in the world above it, there were only a handful of people that knew more than he did!

Yet Ye Xiao was actually very familiar with them and just listed these six martial arts loud and clear.

"Hmm. Jade Glow Ice Mist and Fatality Martial Art, what are

they?" Song Jue frowned, "You have been staying in the house all the time. Even if you did save an old man and he taught you something, he couldn't have taught you more than just a few moves. How do you know so much about martial arts? You actually know some secret martial arts that even I don't know!"

...

Chapter 91: Who Tricked Who? Curing the Melting Bone Palm!

"Urn..." Ye Xiao realized that he had divulged too much information, "Well... You wouldn't know. In fact, I've read a lot of books. Reading makes a man well-informed. My knowledge..."

Ye Xiao fabricated some baloney and said, "The martial art that I am cultivating can cure the wounds caused by any of these six martial arts, so I decided to absorb the attacks. The strength of our house has almost been completely exposed. That is not a good thing, so I think we should intentionally hide some of our strength. This time, they laid their dirty hands on me... It now gives us a good reason and a good opportunity to return the favor."

Song Jue said, "I understand that. But the most important thing is your safety. Melting Bone Palm, as I know, is not easily dealt with. I am unable to deal with it anyway. We should still get your father to make sure that you are safe."

Ye Xiao stopped talking. He slowly took off his upper garments and revealed the smooth white skin of his chest. He turned around and showed his back to Song Jue. His back was fair and no abnormalities were visible.

And then he started operating the East-rising Purple Qi, causing a stream of hot qi to slowly rise from his body.

Song Jue stared at Ye Xiao while watching out for signs of any wounds and abnormalities.

After the time it took for an incense stick to burn, some faint palm marks showed up on Ye Xiao's back one by one.

These marks were appearing from underneath his skin. One after another, these palm marks materialized on his back, covering it entirely. They were packed extremely tightly, and a few even overlapped...

As Ye Xiao kept on operating the East-rising Purple Qi, the initially faint palm marks became more prominent as they started to turn into a darker shade. At the beginning, these marks were light cyan in colour, but as time passed, they became dark cyan. They looked gruesome.

"There are 18 cyan-coloured palm marks. It really is the vicious Melting Bone Palm." Song Jue took a deep breath as his face filled with coldness.

But not long after, the coldness on his face disappeared.

He was an expert in cultivation. Since Ye Xiao had known that he was secretly hit and could make the hidden wound show up on the surface, that meant he truly had the capability to negate the effects of the Melting Bone Palm.

It was now absolutely certain.

Song Jue had never heard of a man in his early stages of

cultivation that could actually force the hidden wounds caused by the Melting Bone Palm to appear on the surface of his body.

The martial art that Ye Xiao used seemed to be unbelievably magical to Song Jue.

If Song Jue had never been hit by the Golden Mai Palm and he was at his peak condition, it would be an easy job for him to cure the damage caused by the Melting Bone Palm. However, he was suffering from hidden injuries, and that made him fall to the very bottom of the cultivation stages. He was no longer able to cure the wounds caused by the Melting Bone Palm.

Yet, he was sure that even if he was at his peak condition, it wouldn't be as easy for him to deal with the Melting Bone Palm like Ye Xiao was able to.

It would at least take him one month of effort to totally force the hidden marks to show up.

"That was truly vicious!" Staring at the 18 cyan wounds, Song Jue ground his teeth.

Ye Xiao's face was all red at the moment. He was required to operate the martial art in full flow to force the hidden wounds to show up. With his current capability, it had taken his whole strength to do so.

While he kept on operating the martial art, he could feel the

Melting Bone Palm's extraordinary viciousness and cruelty.

With the marvelous East-rising Purple Qi, he had already compelled most of the wounds to arise, yet there was still a part of the wounds which remained deep within his bones.

Luckily, Ye Xiao was quite experienced, and the East-rising Purple Qi was truly fantastic, otherwise, he would have probably missed these hidden wounds. They were almost impossible to be find.

[To resolve these wounds that have seeped into my bones, I need to use the gelid qi to assimilate them slowly when I am alone.] Ye Xiao immediately devised a plan in his mind. He sped up the operation of the East-rising Purple Qi to resolve the surface wounds.

After a short while, ninety-nine cycles of qi circulation had passed.

Song Jue was shocked as he looked at the white mist that kept rising from Ye Xiao's body. It only took a while, yet the dark cyan marks slowly started changing. They had turned light cyan...

- Puff! - Ye Xiao opened his mouth and spat out some cyan-purple blood.

When the mist disappeared, the marks on his back had almost completely faded away.

Ye Xiao gradually stopped operating the martial art. The light marks disappeared at the same time. They returned into the skin.

Although the wounds were still inside him, they were almost harmless now. At least, they wouldn't take his life.

In fact, the damage that was caused by the Melting Bone Palm was similar to that of the Golden Mai Palm. They both created some impacts and forced themselves into people's body. They hid inside the body, and when they finally acted, they would immediately cause death.

To deal with it, a power of the same attribute as the wound was required to assimilate it. However, these two martial arts were of quite different levels regarding to their capability. If the Golden Mai Palm was a rank 1 martial art, then the Melting Bone Palm was, at best, worthy of rank 2. It could even be ranked worse.

Ye Xiao was able to cure the effects of the Golden Mai Palm in Song Jue, yet strangely, he could not cure the wounds on his own self. In fact, to cure Song Jue, he had to send his energy out of his own body. Whereas now, he was self-saving. There was a big difference between these two scenarios.

Regarding the current situation, it should take Ye Xiao only a few days to fully cure the rest of his injuries. But to fully cure the wounds inside Song Jue, it would require Ye Xiao to be much stronger. That showed the difference between the Golden Mai Palm and the Melting Bone Palm.

"Uncle Song, now you can relax, right?" Ye Xiao smiled tiredly.

Ye Xiao was all sweaty. He had nearly used up all his spiritual qi after that.

"Yes." Song Jue was finally relieved. His face turned from dark and angry to happy and cheerful. He said with his eyes half-closed, "Good for you, kid. You made me worry. It turns out you have played a trick on those bastards. Amazing."

Ye Xiao watched Song Jue's face. His expression had changed so fast that Ye Xiao suspected his uncle of being temperamental. He said, "The Crown Prince has been heartless to me, so I shall treat him the same way. There will be a time for me to make the scores even. Our family is spread apart at the moment. The part in the capital is weak, so we can only slow down the rhythm for now."

"That's true." The steward spoke in high spirits, "Now the challenge has become an opportunity. Now that you are 'badly injured', we can fall back from the open into the dark and get out off their sight..."

"Exactly." Ye Xiao clapped.

"When they no longer focused on us, we can make covert actions to take care of those motherfxcking sons of bxtches..." The steward was getting excited while he talked. More and more rude words came out from his mouth.

[Motherfxcking sons of bxtches?]

Ye Xiao thought, [Some motherfxckers... who were sons of bxtches... That is a real tragedy.]

"Dirty tricks eh? Humph." Song Jue's eyes were shining as he viciously spoke, "I have a huge amount of tricks in my arsenal. Maybe I should send some guys to rape the Crown Princess. What do you say? Take some small advantages."

"..." Ye Xiao looked at his uncle and immediately became sweaty.

[To do that to someone is just a small piece of advantage to you?]

Song Jue seemed to realize his rude language was inappropriate. He coughed and said, "I mean urn... I should send some guys to make some trouble in the Crown Prince's Palace to distract their attention."

Ye Xiao spoke gently, "As for now... we should stay still and keep low. We should at least wait for a half month. First, our men need to prepare and we need them to be stronger. Second... we need to wait for the moment when they'll think that the wounds within me are about to take my life..."

"True." Song Jue nodded, "Why did I forget this? First there needs to be a danger, and then it could transform into an opportunity..."

And then he spoke mysteriously, "By the way, I have a good news for you. I nearly forgot it."

Ye Xiao was surprised, "What news?"

"You uncle, that means me, has improved a lot in cultivation..." Song Jue was proud, "Now I am in the first level of the Sky Origin Stage."

"Congratulations, Uncle Song! You have finally become a superior cultivator of the Sky Origin Stage." Ye Xiao was happy.

Song Jue laughed, he was overjoyed.

And then he suddenly stopped.

He spat immediately and thought, [What the hell am I happy for? I was a superior master that had broken through the Sky Origin Stage a long time ago... Now I have just recovered a part of my strength to reach the first level, yet I actually felt enjoyment because of that. That... was so embarrassing...]

He relaxed for the rest of the night. He could finally have a good rest, but Ye Xiao had been busy all night to deal with rest of the wounds. They were much more difficult to cure because they were dispersive. They were hard to aim at and force out. The extremely cold energy that was hidden deep inside his bones were the most difficult ones. Ye Xiao had tried everything; he kept operating the

gelid qi to finally force them out of his body. He was exhausted and sweaty, and right now, he felt that he was made entirely of sweat...

The whole night, he had done nothing but deal with the wounds.

His bedroom was destroyed by a certain uncle of his, so he had to temporarily live in the guest room.

"I was underestimating the damage dealt by the Melting Bone Palm. It's really vicious." Ye Xiao looked at the cold yin qi in his hand. Even his gelid qi couldn't assimilate this cold yin qi. It was surely useless.

It was not only useless, but also so hazardous that wherever it appeared, nothing would survive.

Ye Xiao thought about it and stomped on the floor. A deep pit was instantly created. He threw the dark yin-cold qi inside the pit, and then he used his gelid qi to freeze the floor solid. He didn't want the cold yin qi to get out and create disasters.

Chapter 92: Stormy Night; Tracking; Hunting

After that, Ye Xiao prepared to go to bed.

He had been so busy for several nights. He was really exhausted. He finally had some time to have a good night's rest.

If he was still the previous Xiao Monarch who was always alone and aloof, how could he possibly deal with the Crown Prince so courteously without any sincerity? He wouldn't have been full of worries and let the things further develop. With his temper, he would have likely struck out the needles and killed the Crown Prince and his wife once and for all.

Even if he needed to escape and hide from the royal court's pursuit without definite residence, and even if he was facing enemies from all over the world, he would still do that. There would be no compromise.

However, he was different now and he clearly knew it.

Now he had something to worry about.

His father, his family, the steward, the blood guards, Su Yeyue, Prince Hua-Yang, Lan Langlang, Zuo Wuji...

These were the people he was concerned about, and also the

people that made him restrain himself.

For the sake of these people, Ye Xiao had to be more meticulous in choosing a way to solve the problem in front of him.

He had been unwilling to part with any of these people.

If any of them died because of him...

It would be something he would never be able to bear, and it would definitely be something he would regret for life...

"Is that what they call family affection?" Ye Xiao was lying in bed with his eyes half-closed. There was a stream of warmth that rose and ran slowly in his heart. He felt very comfortable.

These people would sacrifice anything for him, even their lives.

That was what they call an affection.

An affection that he had never experienced before!

Since they were willing to sacrifice for him, then it became his responsibility to protect them.

That was the responsibility of a man.

It was something he, as a man, had to bear!

It was such a dark night. He sighed involuntarily.

He had already accepted his new identity. He had also accepted his family. Most ridiculously... since he was reborn, he had never even truly seen his present father, yet he had completely accepted his present identity and family.

He felt that everything was so ridiculous.

"Maybe it is a farewell to my lonely days in the past..." He murmured to himself, "Maybe I have been too tired of those... lonely days that were full of uncertainty... for a long time..."

"Family affection... It feels fantastic... I have been through so many lonely days in my previous life... I have been through so many joys and sorrows, too many bloody battles and madness... Who has ever given me any kind of family affection?"

Thinking of that, he took a deep sigh and murmured, "Why was I an orphan... in my previous life? I asked myself a million times why my parents abandoned me. Why did they?"

He felt sad and stopped thinking.

He closed his eyes to force himself to sleep.

He fell asleep with an infrequent dream...

In the dream, there was a woman gently looking at him standing in the mist. She kept calling, "... Xiao-Er..."

Ye Xiao was asleep. He didn't know that a drop of tear from his eyes dripped into his pillow.

It was glittering and translucent like a dewdrop.

It stayed on the pillow for a while, and then it seeped into the pillow. Only a tiny wet mark that showed the transitory existence of the teardrop was left, and it also disappeared right away.

If he was awake, he would rather die than let it come out. However, in this dream, he chose to set himself free. He was venting the hidden emotions inside his heart.

That fond face in the mist staring at him with a pair of eyes that were filled with love... Then he felt a soft hand touching his face gently...

His mouth showed a smile of happiness. Such a smile would have never shown up on the Xiao Monarch's face. Such smile had never belonged to Ye Xiao!

It was tranquil... in the dream.

...

In the middle of the night, Ye Xiao was immersed in the sweet dream and didn't want to wake up. However, a clap of thunder suddenly awoke him from his sleep!

- BOOM! -

It sounded like it had splitted the dark sky, and it had awaken many people in the capital!

The next moment, the dark clouds gathered together from different directions...

Some of them were even colorful!

When Ye Xiao saw that, he was astonished. He stood up and discovered that it was raining heavily outside.

He watched the heavy downpour and felt that something was wrong.

However, he had just woken up, and he was still a bit dazed. He couldn't find out what was wrong.

He didn't see the scene when the clap of thunder emerged from the sky with his own eyes.

If he was able to see it... he would have naturally figured out what was going on.

Yet he had been in sleep because he was too tired...

And it was a tight and good sleep.

The roaring thunders continued to struck the land, but only ordinary thunders were left. - Boom. - - Boom... -

The rain was getting heavier.

Ye Xiao watched for a while and didn't find anything suspicious. He was preparing to sleep again to continue the god-given sweet dream. Suddenly, he felt another powerful thunder splitting the sky fiercely!

The next moment, a lightning flashed in the sky.

And then it instantly disappeared.

A normal person or even a superior cultivator in this world would think that it was nothing but a normal thunder.

Yet the hair on the back of Ye Xiao's neck stood up with fear right away.

That was not a lightning! It was the movement of two superior cultivators!

One of them was escaping, while the other was chasing!

They were moving in an extremely high speed!

The spiritual qi that was covering their bodies rubbed the air while they were moving, and that created the flashing lights. Combining the extreme speed and the flashing lights, it looked exactly like a thunder!

In Ye Xiao's estimation, these two were at least in the Grandmaster Levels of Sky Origin Stage. Both of them were absolutely stronger than Guan Zhengwen!

He had thought that with the capability of the Earth Origin Stage, he was able to knock down everyone he encountered. However, just a while ago, he had fought against Guan Zhengwen, and now, he saw these two superior cultivators. Not to mention even Steward Song had returned to the Sky Origin Stage too.

Ye Xiao thought for some time while looking at the direction of those flashing lights. His eyes lit up and then his right hand reached to the bed. A suit of black clothes flew up. - Hewh -

The next moment, he was dressed in black. - Puff. - He flew out through the window, and suddenly, the rain got him all wet.

He didn't care much about the rain. He twitched his body and immediately arrived at the roof. In the next instant, he instantly disappeared.

...

That was not the Lunisolar Shadow he was using; it was the One Laughter in Skyline!

The Lunisolar Shadow kept him concealed while moving in high speed, while One Laughter in Skyline purely increased his speed to the fullest. Because its sole focus was his movement speed, it made his speed instantly reach its peak!

He who was just drinking at the door, suddenly appeared in the skyline with just a laugh!

Someone was just drinking at the door of a tavern in the market, but after a single laugh, he was already at the end of the world!

One Laughter in Skyline.

It was publicly accepted as the fastest martial art in the Qing-Yun Realm!

The only one!

In his previous life, because of this martial art, he had been able

to escape from all those people chasing him for over 30 thousand miles!

Within an instant, he had moved 300 miles already. The rain didn't disrupt him. In fact, it actually boosted him!

He was like a wind blowing to the ends of the sky.

The tiles of the roofs of the houses he passed by were like fish scales under his feet. - Shoot Shoot Shoot. - They flashed away. Soon, he had arrived at the edge of the capital. The city wall was over 20 meters high. Before the guards on the wall noticed anything, Ye Xiao had already disappeared. - Puff. - He instantly arrived outside the wall.

Far away, yet another two lightning flashed in the sky; they were like two silver snakes dancing.

Ye Xiao had sharp eyes. He noticed that there were sword lights flashing in the sky. He was distant from it, so he couldn't see it clearly, but he knew that these flashing lights were indeed sword lights.

Ye Xiao was like a rolling Chinese dragon who rushed forward as he instantly entered the forest. He then operated the Lunisolar Shadow...

The One Laughter in Skyline gave him the fastest speed, but it couldn't conceal his whereabouts. It was the only negative result of

pure speed. As for the Lunisolar Shadow, it covered both speed and concealment. It was slower than One Laughter in Skyline, but it kept him safe while moving.

[Why did these two superior cultivators chose to fight at night, not to mention the heavy downpour?]

As of this moment, he was getting closer and closer!

- Dang! - The weapons of the two superior cultivators struck each other. Looking at them from a distance, Ye Xiao could see some flashing lights blasting to the sky. It was quite a marvelous sight.

In the heavy downpour, the status of the battle constantly reached his senses. From what he heard, some trees had obviously fallen down...

Ye Xiao frowned and watched. The battle was about four miles away from him.

He waited. He didn't approach, and as he expected, after a while, another lightning appeared. It came from the other direction this time. They were nearly a thousand kilometers away from where they had been.

"They are both top superior cultivators as I expected." Ye Xiao was motivated in mind as he operated the Lunisolar Shadow in order to get closer to the battle.

Chapter 93: The Woeful No. 1 Assassin

“They have fought all the way here. Obviously, one of them is tired, so they have to start fighting here. Otherwise, with their cultivation capabilities, they wouldn’t have to fight so hard. They are now fighting in a life and death battle which must be the last thing the one who’s being hunted wished for.”

“The one exhausted is obviously the prey... As a man who is being hunted, he would never want to get into a tough fight against the enemy. If he has the capability to have a tough fight, he wouldn’t even try to escape...”

“To fight hand-in-hand, they have to get close to each other. The prey isn’t a match to the hunter, so he will definitely take advantage of a strike to run away in high speed. However, the hunter has finally caught up... So the second close fight eventually happened.”

“When they had their first close fight, the sound was not that loud. That means the hunter was restraining his strength. However, when the second close fight happened, the sound was a few notches louder. That means... after the first fight, the prey was hurt. Or maybe he was hurt... again...”

“Therefore... it seems like this battle is about to reach its conclusion.”

“After less than another four close fights, the prey will eventually lose his strength to defend...”

“They have been moving for over five hundred miles... They have obviously started the fight far away from the other side of the capital. They are truly top superior cultivators...”

Ye Xiao flew like the wind and cautiously approached.

He was thinking, analyzing, and estimating, but he was still calm and steady.

Finally, he was close enough to the battle.

Almost at the same time when he stopped, there came a huge explosion. - BOOM! - This time, it happened quite near to him. Endless dirt and grime flew up in the air, and then it all headed straight towards his direction. He quietly stayed down on the floor, allowing the dirt and grime to cover his body...

In the next moment, he was immediately smothered.

He had become a “sweat guy” earlier the night, and then now he became a “dirt guy”... Yet it disguised him rather well!

A sound of someone panting got closer. According to the sound, this guy must be extremely exhausted. He might freak out, fall down and never get up at any moment.

And then a sword flew over to him. It was covered by cold glow. -

Shoot! - It stopped at a point about ten meters away in front of Ye Xiao. It was stabbed into a stone that was right in front of the exhausted guy.

This sword served as an instrument to stop him from escaping and take his life!

A lightning suddenly lit up the sky. - Shoo! - The stone still looked normal after the sword struck it. However, when the rain fell on the stone, the rock splat into four parts; it was like four petals blooming.

The sword stood with its point sticking in the ground.

In fact, it was inappropriate to use “sticking” to describe it. The sword was totally exposed, and not a single part of it was stuck inside the ground. However, it didn’t fall down. It was just standing there, flashing with a cold glow. It was actually floating in midair.

Lightning once again flashed in the sky, and the world was lit and turned dark again.

The wild rain seemed to rule everything once more.

The exhausted man looked at the sword as he suck in heavy breaths. Suddenly, he made an extremely hoarse laugh and then sat on the floor. He then spoke bitterly, “You win... Kill me as you wish. No more worthless conversations.”

Ye Xiao was so close to them, and he didn't dare to move even the slightest bit.

After all, he was too close to the battle, and these two were top superior cultivators. The heavy rain had helped in concealing his existence. Otherwise, he must have been beaten up eight hundred times. The martial art he used to hide himself wasn't weak. However, the difference between his capability and theirs was too big.

There was nothing else he could do.

It was just that the place he picked was perfect to hide his whereabouts.

It was a ramp of the forest, and they were heading over to this ramp. They were about to pass through the ramp.

If the prey went over the top of the ramp, he would definitely fall down to the other side of the ramp since he was exhausted. The hunter would jump down following the prey. Then Ye Xiao would be behind them.

Because they went over Ye Xiao's location, they wouldn't be able to notice him since they would never keep an eye on the route they passed.

So it was a perfect place to hide indeed.

Basically, things should happen as Ye Xiao estimated. And it had been developing that way.

However, something out of his expectation happened.

The hunter actually threw his sword to force the prey to stop a few meters away from where he was hiding!

The prey looked at the sword and thought that it was impossible for him to escape anymore. So he suddenly felt discouraged and couldn't get up his strength anymore; he kind of just accepted his fate and sat down on the floor...

Ye Xiao didn't care whether he sat down or not!

The only thing that mattered to him was the fact that they were only seven meters away from him!

[What the hell is this! It really didn't go as I expected!] Ye Xiao cursed in mind, [For fxxk's sake, I am so unfortunate...

In such a short distance, facing two superior cultivators of the Sky Origin Stage, no matter who found me first, I will certainly die!

That is really [clamping a bird when closing the door](#)... What an unfortunate coincidence...]

It was true that he was the Xiao Monarch who was wise and knowledgeable. So although he was in the third level of the Earth Origin Stage, he was invincible to all the others who were in the same level. Even those in the fourth or sixth level of the Earth Origin Stage couldn't be a match to him. If he really fought hard, he could even defeat the superior cultivators who were in the ninth level of the Earth Origin Stage!

However, that was it. He was unable to win against someone who was in the Sky Origin Stage. Someone in the Sky Origin Stage could beat him easily in everything. Took Guan Zhengwen as an example, Ye Xiao was helpless in front of him.

And these two in front of him were miles ahead of Guan Zhengwen in terms of cultivation capability.

If he was exposed, any of these two could easily take his life. That was simply the absolute higher level suppressing the lower one. No one could do anything about it!

Under such a negative situation, Ye Xiao was a bit distressed. At the same time, he had another feeling that was strange. [How come the voice of the prey is so familiar to me?

Is it possible?

It mustn't be!

I have never been in-touch with such a high-level superior cultivator except for Guan Zhengwen!

The prey shouldn't be Guan Zhengwen. Then who the hell is he?]

While collecting his thoughts, he suddenly heard a soft voice, "Do you really have to be like this?"

Ye Xiao was shocked and he nearly exposed himself.

[Shxt! The hunter is the one I am actually familiar with!

At least the hunter is someone whose name and background I could identify!]

The voice was so peaceful, soft, calm, ringing like the river running in the mountain, and could make people feel comfortable.

It was the voice of...

The one who was in the auction... Xiu of the Heavens!

Lady Xiu-Er!

She was the girl who was qualified enough to give orders in the House of the Chaotic Storm!

She is the one who slaughtered every man of the Mu Clan in the capital!

[Oh my bloody heavenly holy gods...] Ye Xiao's heart pounded hard several times, [How come I didn't realize that this girl was a top superior cultivator in the Grandmaster Levels of the Sky Origin Stage?]

When he pondered deeper about it, he recalled something suspicious.

He had realized that Xiu of the Heavens had an extraordinary capability, but Ye Xiao was sure that she shouldn't be as capable as she was now! In the auction, she was so far away from the Sky Origin Stage, let alone the Grandmaster Levels of the Sky Origin Stage!

Ye Xiao dared to swear with his sharp eyes and his life.

And he was pretty sure that he hadn't seen her wrong!

However, since their last meeting, it has only been a month. The girl had actually reached the Grandmaster Levels of the Sky Origin Stage from the Earth Origin Stage. Wasn't it boosted too much?

[What... What the hell is going on?

What the hell is it?!]

The prey laughed hoarsely and said, “I want to be clear about the truth before I die. You asked me whether it had to be like this or not. In fact, I want to ask you the same question. What made you hunt me like this?”

In his voice, there was a sense of dejection. He was in despair.

A top superior cultivator was about to die in the hands of a girl that seemed to be about seventeen years old during a fair fight. It was unacceptable for him as he had always been proud. He would even accept his demise, but he desperately wanted to know the truth!

Xiu of the Heavens stayed quiet for a while and spoke, “Ning Biluo, I regarded you as an outstanding cultivator, so I invited you to join the House of the Chaotic Storm... I promised you that as long as you join us, the assassination affairs of the House of the Chaotic Storm will be under your command. You have the full power! Besides, I would solve the problem between you and the Saint Master. Such conditions are good enough no matter what. Yet you turned hostile and attacked in advance. Do you have an explanation for your actions?”

At this moment, Ye Xiao actually remembered the prey at once.

Ning Biluo.

The No. 1 assassin in the Land of Han-Yang.

However, he was a bit surprised. [How woeful this No. 1 assassin is.]

He had heard of him several times. When he heard about him for the second time, it was about his assassination organization fading away as Ning Biluo fought his way to escape. At that moment, he was still on the run...

The first time he met Ning Biluo was when he had just been set free from Wenren Chuchu's grasp. It was a coincidence. That day, Ning Biluo was being hunted and was fleeing madly. If Ye Xiao didn't do him a small favor, he might have died that day.

At this moment, Ye Xiao met him again, and he was still being hunted. However, the hunter was way stronger than before!

[Could he be [a rat on the street](#) in his previous life?] Ye Xiao thought.

...

Clamping a bird when closing the door. It means something unfortunate happened in coincidence.

A rat on the street (过街老鼠). People hate rats and will want to wipe out the rats on the street. So it refers to those who are hated by everybody.

Chapter 94: I Am an Assassin, Not a Dog!

[This guy has been hunted for quite a long time...] Ye Xiao thought, [His experience of being hunted is not as miserable as mine, but it is quite woeful already...]

He didn't know that Ning Biluo was being hunted because of him!

While panting, Ning Biluo dejectedly sat on the floor and asked, "The House of Chaotic Storm. I wonder whether you are Wan of the Clouds or Xiu of the Heavens?"

Xiu-Er spoke blandly, "I am Xiu-Er."

"I see." Ning Biluo smiled with self-mockery. He suddenly looked amused and said, "To die in a demon's hand, at least it won't stain my honorable name in the world."

Ye Xiao was surprised and thought, [Demon? What demon? What does he mean?]

Xiu-Er's voice turned cold, "Ning Biluo, do you know you just offended me?"

Ning Biluo rolled his eyelids and said while panting, "I know. Of course, I know... However, Lady Xiu-Er, even though you are powerful with all your hexes, you can only kill me once, right? You want to drag me back from hell and kill me again and again... Hey, hey, even if you are really a demon, I am afraid that's out of your

capability. Right?"

While speaking, he actually laughed and said, "I am unlucky to come across you while I am still carrying wounds. If I am fully recovered, I doubt that you can defeat me! Let's just say the gods didn't stand on my side!"

A figure in white fluttered. The slim figure of Xiu-Er appeared in Ye Xiao's sight. Even in the heavy rain, her clothes still looked clean and dry!

She spoke, "There is no such thing as absolutely fair in the world. In the martial world, there is no such thing as justice either... Ning Biluo, you are an assassin. Killing is normal for you. When you took people's lives, did you give them a fair chance to defend themselves? Yet now you spoke those words. Don't you think that what you said has stained your name? A man demeans himself right before his death. How pathetic."

Ning Biluo stayed silent for a while and then spoke hoarsely, "You are right. I am hypocrite by saying that. Just end my life today. I won't complain anything about it."

Xiu-Er laughed and then spoke indifferently, "You know what. I don't want to kill you. What I want is to recruit you."

Ning Biluo laughed and said, "Recruit? In such a pleasant way?"

Xiu-Er spoke calmly, "The House of the Chaotic Storm hasn't

recruited any true member for many years... Now that we are showing you our appreciation, why are you still unsatisfied? Does it really matter what way we used to recruit you?"

Ning Biluo coughed for a while. He then panted out, "What a pity... I don't want to be a demon."

The coldness in Xiu-Er's eyes increased, and her eagerness to kill turned heavier.

Even though she was not looking at Ye Xiao, Ye Xiao felt a bit terrified at the moment...

"You have offended me over and over again. Ning Biluo, as a man like you, it is immoderate to offend a lady like that." Her voice became peaceful again.

Ning Biluo was quiet.

"I want to know the true reason." Xiu-Er spoke blandly, "The House of the Chaotic Storm is world-shocking... All the superior cultivators want to be a member of it, except you. Why?"

Ning Biluo spoke after a long silence, "I know that what you said is true. However... I am a self-governed man. I am always the one who gives the orders even though I am an assassin. Perhaps I have never been a good guy... However, I will never be a dog!"

He raised his head and spoke blandly and stoutly, "I can be a bad

guy, but I will never be a dog for others! Not even a dog for the king!"

Xiu-Er stayed silent for a while before she said, "Good. Good. You are a tough guy. I have truly underestimated you."

Ning Biluo was motivated and laughed. He spoke proudly, "I am born with an unyielding character! I don't think I can ever change it in this life."

"The House of the Chaotic Storm needs assassins this time. A man like you is someone I truly don't want to lose..." Xiu-Er sighed and said, "The guy, Red in the Sky, has been missing since his last mission. Ning Biluo, I am giving you another chance here... You can still change your mind."

Ning Biluo closed his eyes and mouth. He stayed silent.

His attitude was obvious, [Just kill me. I won't change my goddamn mind!]

Xiu-Er sighed in pity and had her last try, "Fine. I won't force you. However... Ning Biluo, let me ask you another thing. If you can explain it clearly to me, and if your answer satisfies me, I will stop pushing you and give you a quick and nice death."

Ning Biluo spoke with his eyes closed, "Alright. Go ahead."

"You say you don't want to serve anybody and only wished to

fight for yourself alone. That is your personal conviction, right?" Xiu-Er asked, "For your whole life, you only obeyed yourself, is that true?"

Ning Biluo sneered, "Of course. So I am. So I always have been. I will keep it so until I die! I won't ever regret it!"

"Is that so? Then three years ago, why did you secretly lead all your men to the north and help Ye Nantian kill a lot of the generals of the Northern Wolves?" Xiu-Er spoke blandly, "Don't you think you were a dog for Ye Nantian? Were you not serving the king of the Kingdom of Chen?"

"Nonsense!" Ning Biluo suddenly opened his eyes and furiously said, "That's different! How could you bring it to the same topic?"

Xiu-Er spoke poignantly, "What you did was helping others! Don't tell me Ye Nantian and the king had given you something as payment. If you said so, I won't be satisfied. You won't die today, or tomorrow, or the day after. You will be alive for a long time. You must know how it is to be begging for death. After that 'a long time', you will realize that death is a very precious and rare dream to you!"

"I said, you can't associate these two things together. They are essentially different!" Ning Biluo shouted.

"Oh? Tell me more!" Xiu-Er spoke indifferently.

"It had nothing to do with Ye Nantian. I didn't help him. In fact... I had an enemy in the generals of the Northern Wolves. So I had to kill them! My clan was slaughtered a long time before that, and it was that enemy who did it. You were wrong about me helping Ye Nantian. For me, Ye Nantian was helping me with my revenge."

"Ye Nantian won the battle because I killed those guys, but I didn't care about it, and it had nothing to do with me. Ye Nantian alone could surely win that battle without me."

Ning Biluo spoke indifferently, "You said that I was a dog for Ye Nantian. Well, it was nonsense. We were just cooperating by coincidence!"

Xiu-Er said, "Then what about the second question?"

Ning Biluo stared at her with disdainful eyes and spoke blandly, "It turns out the wisdom of the Xiu of the Heavens is just a joke. You actually keep questioning me about serving others?! Don't you see... Even if I have fought in the battle, even if I have fought for the Kingdom of Chen, even if I didn't have an enemy in the other side, it could never prove that I am a dog for the king!"

"It is simply because I am one of the people of the Kingdom of Chen!"

Ning Biluo spoke blandly, "It is about bloodline, about the country. It has nothing to do about personality or personal business. And it certainly has nothing to do about being a dog!"

"Even though the royal court has been offering a reward for my head, when my country is in danger, I will stand forward to fight for her! Because this is the responsibility of the people in the country!"

"I hate most of the men who works in the royal court. I hold no good feelings to the royal family. I don't give a shxt to the king. I am simply a man in the martial world. Even in the martial world, I am an assassin which is always detested by the so-called noble men. But I will fight for my country when she needs me to!"

Ning Biluo sneered, "I don't want to join you, because firstly, I don't want to be your dog, secondly... you guys have no idea how to be loyal to your country. You only care about rising and falling... yet you don't care about who will rise and who will fall. I am different. I have my roots."

"Who rises and who falls... it includes my country! I can't just sit and wait doing nothing!"

Ning Biluo smiled, "So... you can recruit anyone you like, except me, the disreputable assassin!"

"Or let's just say you don't have the capability to recruit me, because you can never afford the conditions I want!" Ning Biluo laughed.

His words were solid in the heavy rain and the wild winds.

It became silent!

The world was covered by the rain and the wind.

The rain was getting heavier.

To see it from the top, the raindrops were like endless javelins falling from the sky to the earth!

The mountains were like the ocean. Water was running everywhere...

The deafening sound of flood had come over from the valley.

Ning Biluo was covered by dirt and gasping. He was in a difficult position. Yet the Xiu of the Heavens was still in a suit of white clean clothes, like a faery from the heavens.

However, Ye Xiao felt that Ning Biluo contained more of the aura of a human being than Xiu of the Heavens.

Xiu of the Heavens looked clean and saintly, yet she was full of the ruthlessness, "looking at the world's suffering, I am still casual and elegant"!

Her white clothes seemed so disgusting in the dark.

Chapter 95: The Purple Lotus Master!

After a while...

Xiu-Er sighed and said, "I guess we really have no such destiny that would tie us together. Let me fulfill your final wish and send you to your death."

A sword light flashed!

The end of her words signified Ning Biluo's death!

She swung her sword and a cold light moved quickly towards Ning Biluo's neck.

That was a sword without mercy, without any regard for life!

Suddenly, she changed her motion. The sword light that was filled with killing intent was drawn back and held in front of her chest. - Bang! - It created some sparks. It suddenly illuminated the dark surroundings which was bathed in the heavy rain, and then it died out quietly.

Her sword, which was going to kill, became a wall that she could use to defend herself!

"Who dares to initiate such a sneak attack in the dark?" She put down her sword and stood still with her sharp and cold eyes

glancing at the brushwood.

She caught the crystal that was used to attack her and was now held in between her fingers.

It was cold. It was actually an ice cone.

In the brushwood, Ye Xiao humphed and stood up. He spoke in a disdainful voice, "I have heard that the House of the Chaotic Storm is full of astuteness and resourcefulness and is the best in the Land of Han-Yang. But you actually do things as bad as compelling people to engage in prostitution. It turns out that you are just good at these dirty-pressing cunning schemes."

Right now, he did not resemble either Ye Xiao or Feng Zhiling.

He was wearing a new face!

At this moment, he was a slim man with a square face. He was about thirty years old. He was incomparably vigorous. He walked out into the rain with his shoulders steady. It looked like he was trying to take charge of all the raindrops.

He had the vigor of "peerless in the whole world and unexampled among all the great men", and he was full of confidence.

Xiu-Er was shocked when she saw him.

He casually walked over to her, and it gave her a feeling similar to when she interacted with her own master who was so proud and elegant and despised the whole world!

[They... are so similar!]

It immediately aroused her alertness.

[This man must be a peerless superior cultivator!]

It is not ordinary for someone to give off the same impressions as master!]

She was astonished and extremely cautious at the moment, yet she still looked calm and steady. Her face suddenly turned colder as she blandly spoke, "Compelling people to engage in prostitution? You are talking nonsense. May I have your name? Do you realize that you are attempting to be our enemy by slandering us. Speaking wrong words could result in you being dragged into hell from the heavens!"

Ning Biluo's face was initially red and then quickly turned blue. [She is asking me to be the head of their assassins group. That may not be a decent job... I am lucky to have someone standing up for me, but this one actually talks like I am compelled to be a prostitute. So am I good at selling my body or what...

The way this man talks... is really unbelievable.]

Ning Biluo didn't know that Ye Xiao had to say so because he couldn't think of anything else to say when he was compelled to appear.

Ning Biluo was a tough guy.

And Ye Xiao believed so.

He thought that it was worth his efforts to save such a guy!

Besides... Ning Biluo had once helped his father to kill the Northern Wolves, and he had also saved Ye Xiao once, although Ye Xiao had helped him kill those men that were chasing him. Well, those were different things though. Ning Biluo had saved Ye Xiao while he was weak and helpless, and Ye Xiao helped him in a simple and easy way.

Anyway, Ye Xiao believed that he should save Ning Biluo this time!

It would be a pity if a guy like him was killed.

If Ye Xiao was to simply watch a guy like him die in his sight, it would simply result in a nightmare that he would never be able to get rid of.

So, he had to save him!

The question was how?!

He was not capable enough. That was obvious!

If he acted recklessly, he might fail to save Ning Biluo and would also get himself killed in the process.

While Ye Xiao was collecting his thoughts from within the brushwood, Xiu-Er had already made her move. It all happened very quickly, and in that tense moment, he instinctively took action in order to save Ning Biluo.

It was not his choice; it was his instinct!

He didn't even think about the consequences when he struck.

After the strike, when he looked at the cold eyes of Xiu-Er looking at him through the rain, he was terrified. [I am absolutely not a match for this woman now!

What should I do?]

Suddenly, he had an idea. He knew it was impossible to escape. There was only one thing he could do, so he casually walked out into the open.

Facing this dangerous situation, he once again displayed the fearless vigor that he had carried in his previous life!

He casually strode forward with his hands on his back and spoke blandly, "It is not important for you to know my identity. The affairs of the people in the martial world caused by the way of the martial world should be solved by the means of the martial world. Now that I am at the sight of injustice, I have to simply render my help."

Xiu-Er calmly stared at him and sneered with her pretty face, "Rendering help at the sight of injustice huh? I didn't know that you are a knightly man... I wonder whether you have heard of this saying 'The one who wants to be a knightly man in the martial world... usually dies early.'"

Ye Xiao smiled blandly, "That is quite true. However, I have rendered my help so many times in my life, yet I am still alive. Even the House of the Chaotic Storm has never hurt me, not even a scratch. I wonder whether I am an exception to that saying?"

Xiu-Er's pupils shrank as she asked, "Who are you?"

Ye Xiao really had no other plans to deal with the current situation, so he had to keep playing. He casually put his hands on his back and spoke blandly, "How is Master Bai by the way?"

Xiu-Er was a bit surprised and confused, and then she spoke angrily, "Do you really think that it would make me believe you or fear you by mentioning Master Bai?"

Ye Xiao smiled blandly and reached out his hand. A purple cold qi

in the shape of a ball suddenly appeared in his hand. The heavy rain couldn't even dampen it. The purple qi slowly transformed into something like a purple jade, and then it unfolded slowly and turned into a small purple lotus. The lotus bloomed in his hand.

The small lotus was vividly purple. It was peaceful and calm in the heavy rain, spreading the aura of mystery. The process that turned it from the purple qi to a purple lotus was magical. However, Ye Xiao's hand didn't move a bit.

It remained still, as if saying that it was only natural.

Yet the purple lotus just appeared in his hand from nothing.

What a magical and fantastic scene!

Immediately when the lotus was formed, an extreme cold qi spread out, enveloping everything within 30 meters of the lotus!

Ye Xiao's hand steadily reached out and his eyes were half-closed. He was staring at the lotus attentively. He spoke casually, "I wonder if you have heard about this from Master Bai?"

Xiu-Er's eyes were filled with surprise again, and she looked at it carefully. She looked around the lotus and then spoke blandly, "What is it?"

Her curiosity had calmed Ye Xiao down a lot.

[As long as you don't just come to me and fight like a mad dog, it will be an easy job for me to fool a little girl like you with my great experience.]

Ye Xiao sighed and spoke slowly, "The world is great; the purple lotus is faint. It lives through the ages; it circulates through centuries. It blooms; death comes. It falls; the sky shines..."

It was a pet phrase used by a top superior cultivator whom he had killed in his previous life. He was called the Purple Lotus Master.

With the purple lotus, he killed the dissenters; in the universe, he governed worlds!

However, he was unlucky to mess with the Xiao Monarch. Ye Xiao had chased him for three thousand miles and killed him with his own hands. After that, the whole Purple Lotus Gang was wiped out.

Yet, no one in the Qing-Yun Realm knew about it because the Purple Lotus Master was always mysterious, and the Xiao Monarch always did such things covertly.

At this very moment, Ye Xiao needed to act like someone powerful, so he spoke the phrase.

He was sure that nobody would know about the Purple Lotus Master in the mortal world anyway.

However, when he finished the phrase, Xiu-Er's expression suddenly changed!

She had been calm all along, yet she actually took a deep breath and fearfully stepped back. She asked, "You... you are the Purple Lotus Master?"

Ye Xiao was astonished.

[She... She has actually heard of that guy?

A girl in the mortal world actually knows about the Purple Lotus Master?

The guy was a very mysterious figure in the Qing-Yun Realm. He was always acting strange, and it was extremely difficult to see his true face. Many people know about the Purple Lotus, yet very few of them know about the Purple Lotus Master.]

Ye Xiao pretended to be relieved and said, "Hmm... Your master didn't forget his old friend, I hope."

He was talking politely, yet his mind was agitated!

[The girl actually knows about the Purple Lotus Master. Her master shouldn't be an enemy of the dead guy, should he? So... are they friends or enemies?] Ye Xiao had no idea.

No wonder that the girl had looked at the lotus for a while. She was checking if it was real... wasn't she?

...

Chapter 96: Promise? Why Did You Save Me?

Ye Xiao rejoiced in his mind, [Thank god that I acted so well. Even if the dead Purple Lotus Master was alive, he would have failed to make a purple lotus that was better than mine...

Otherwise, I would surely be exposed, wouldn't I?]

Ye Xiao realized that things were going in an unpredictable and strange direction ever since he had shown the purple lotus...

Xiu-Er was visibly more cautious, and she asked in a low voice, "I didn't know who you were... It was said that you were hunted by the peerless Xiao Monarch in the Qing-Yun Realm. After that, no one has ever heard about you... We all thought that you were..."

Ye Xiao shook his head slowly and showed hatred on his face. He said, "The Xiao Monarch is indeed the most terrifying person in the Qing-Yun Realm. I am clearly not a match for him. In fact, if he hadn't kept hunting me like a mad dog, how would I end up in this realm... Oh."

While he was making up a story, his pulse quickened.

[She actually knows that I hunted the Purple Lotus Master?

That is weird!

Who is this Xiu-Er? And the master behind her? Where are they from?

How come I have never heard of them?

There are not many people who know what happened... Anyone who knows is a great figure in the world... But I don't have any memories about Master Bai of the House of Chaotic Storm. Why...

That is... extremely weird!

Unbelievable!

And the way she talked to me doesn't seem fearful or respectful.

Apparently, she is not afraid of the Purple Lotus Master!

Why is that? Even in the Qing-Yun Realm, there will be no more than 200 people who would dare to talk to the Purple Lotus Master like that. I don't think there is a man named Bai among those 200 people.

She is just a maid, yet she doesn't fear the Purple Lotus Master...]

Ye Xiao was shocked, [This will surely lead to complications later on!]

Xiu-Er had, by now, confirmed that he was the Purple Lotus Master.

After all, she had the same thought process as Ye Xiao, [In the mortal world, there are only the master, Wan-Er and me who know about the Purple Lotus Master!

It is impossible for other people to know about it.

And no one can speak out the pet phrase used by the Purple Lotus Master.]

She then smiled and said, "It is my pleasure to meet you in person. I have some good news for you... Your enemy, the Xiao Monarch was hunted down by the three factions three months ago. He was eventually slaughtered!"

"What the hell!"

The rough words escaped Ye Xiao's lips.

He wasn't pretending this time. He was truly astonished!

[Why does this girl know everything?

She actually knows that I got killed?

What the hell is going on?!

Is there a communicating channel connecting the Qing-Yun Realm and the mortal world?

That... That is too unbelievable!]

"It is true!" Xiu-Er thought that he was shocked by the news itself, so she nodded and said.

For Xiu-Er, it was reasonable for the Purple Lotus Master to be surprised. The Xiao Monarch was arrogant and peerless. It was only natural that such an invincible figure wouldn't be killed so easily!

Xiu-Er herself didn't believe it before she confirmed the news three times!

"The Xiao Monarch... He... He actually died..." Ye Xiao showed a strange expression. It was like mourning, and also like regret, or a bit like hatred, but it was mostly an indescribable blankness...

Such expression was exactly what the Purple Lotus Master would have shown if he was alive and had heard the news.

Xiu-Er looked at him and was now certain that it was the Purple Lotus Master who was actually standing before her.

"He actually died... Heh, heh, heh..." Ye Xiao laughed in a sad way and spoke, "How come he died so soon?"

In Xiu-Er's mind, it was naturally translated into "how can he die so soon before I can get my revenge and kill him myself...".

Xiu-Er looked at him as a sense of disdain flashed in her eyes.

She thought, [You are nothing but a loser who was hunted by the Xiao Monarch and escaped to such a low-class world... Yet you are actually thinking about revenge? That is truly just your stupid dream. If you really wanted that revenge, why didn't you go back to take it?

You have no guts to return to the Qing-Yun Realm. That's all. Do you really think you are still that Purple Lotus Master...]

Naturally, she didn't dare to speak it out.

The Purple Lotus Master might be just some garbage for the Xiao Monarch, yet he was still someone she absolutely shouldn't mess with!

Xiu-Er suddenly spoke in low voice, "Are you hurt?"

Ye Xiao became cautious immediately and spoke indifferently, "If I was not... How would I come to this place... It was a sad story of

mine anyway. However, I guess I am going to return."

He meant that his wounds were mostly cured, or completely cured.

Xiu-Er glanced at him and said, "Well. Why do you want to save this man?"

Ye Xiao spoke inscrutably, "I surely have my concerns to save him. I am afraid it is inconvenient for me to tell you about it. Would you please do me a favor? What do you think?"

Xiu-Er smiled and said, "Since the Purple Lotus Master has given his word, I must step back... Since this bloody Ning Biluo doesn't want to join us, it will be fine to let him join you... However, now that you are in the mortal world, and it seems you are going back to the upper realm soon, I wonder if you could do me a favor too?"

Ye Xiao frowned, "A favor? As a return? I don't want to owe people. Go ahead!"

"I don't dare to talk about you owing me something. I just want to ask you to help us with one thing. I don't know what it would be at this moment though. But I will come to you as soon as I have decided upon it..." Xiu-Er smiled, "As long as you promise, I will leave right away."

Ye Xiao increasingly felt that this Xiu-Er and that Master Bai were no ordinary people.

Facing the cruel and well-known Purple Lotus Master, she actually dared to make a request...

She was truly a ticklish person. As a maid was this ticklish, who knew what her master was like!

"You meant you don't have anything that needs my help right now?! I won't make such a promise!" Ye Xiao shook his head stoutly, "If it turns out that you want me to do something that I shall never do or just want me to kill myself for fun, how can I fulfill my promise then? The foundation of a deal was that both sides consider it as a fair deal. Do you really think you have the right to ask me for everything you want like that?!"

Xiu-Er's eyes lit up with a cold glow, [This Purple Lotus Master knows that I have a low cultivation strength, so he actually despises me. I will get to him sooner or later for this.] She was furious, but remained smiling, "You are misunderstanding me. My request will never cause you any embarrassment. It will go no further than requesting you to kill a target."

"Well it is not a difficult thing... to kill a person... In this world, even killing a king is an easy job." Ye Xiao acted vigorous and said, "In that case, I will say yes since your request is just that simple."

[I just need to get off all this today. And you can go to the Purple Lotus Master if you want him to fulfill his promise... only if you can find him...]

"You are a straightforward man. I will leave Ning Biluo to you then." Xiu-Er's white clothes fluttered. Her sword flashed and then disappeared. She was standing still, slim and tall, but the sword was nowhere in sight. It was really well-hidden.

"If you have time, please come to the House of the Chaotic Storm to talk to our master. He would be very happy to see you." Xiu-Er spoke with smile. When she spoke the word "master", she was obviously proud and unrestrained.

Ye Xiao realized that this Master Bai must be at a higher position than the Purple Lotus Master!

He then smiled and said, "When I am fully recovered, I will naturally go visit Master Bai and Lady Xiu-Er."

"You will be welcomed anytime. It is quite a difficult thing to have a chat with an old friend in this mortal world..." Her clothes floated, and she flew up like a fairy. She moved backward and spoke gently with a peaceful smile, "See you soon."

And then a stream of white silk rushed away. Suddenly in the rain, there appeared a pristine white bridge. It gave the impression that it would lead you to the end of the world...

Xiu-Er's slim body was walking on the bridge in the sky. She looked so beautiful and peaceful. She appeared to be moving slowly, but she was, in fact, travelling at a rapid pace. With her floating white clothes, soon she disappeared in the rain.

She didn't even glance at Ning Biluo.

Her white clothes didn't even get a raindrop or any dirt on itself!

She came clean and white, and she left clean and white.

All under the boundless heavy rain.

...

Ye Xiao moved closer to Ning Biluo who sat on the floor. Ning Biluo looked at him with a fearful expression and asked, "Who are you? What is Purple Lotus Master? Why did you save me? What do you want?"

Ning Biluo was known as the No. 1 assassin in the world, yet after all, that title only applied to the mortal world.

He knew nothing about the Qing-Yun Realm.

"You just asked me four questions in a row. You really can talk in one breath! Well, you don't need to know who I am or where I'm from. I will only tell you one thing. I saved you just because I could. That's all." Ye Xiao spoke indifferently, "Can you move?"

Ning Biluo gritted his teeth and held his hands on the floor. He stood up constrainedly and took a deep breath. He said, "Sure! My legs and arms are all fine. Why can't I."

...

Chapter 97: Anti-tracking!

Ning Biluo stood up, but his legs were trembling.

Apparently, he had reached the limits of his strength. He was supporting his body with just willpower. It seemed that taking a single step would cause him to fall down.

He was truly a tough guy!

Ye Xiao stepped forward and held his arm.

He wouldn't want to see a tough guy embarrassed. Not even in front of his own eyes.

He spoke blandly, "Don't push yourself. It will be a big joke if you let yourself fall and die because of it. Including this time, I have saved your ass twice already. I don't want to learn that I have saved a dead man!"

Ning Biluo raised his head as his eyes became sharp, "You? It's you?!"

"Hush! Don't you feel tired shouting that loudly? Do you really think that you are at the peak of your health? Do you really want to make everyone know of your location?!" Ye Xiao pointed his finger upwards.

Ning Biluo stopped talking, yet his face showed that he was thrilled.

[My savior!]

He had been hunted and nearly died that time. Ye Xiao was the one who saved his life! Nobody else knew about it, so Ning Biluo was sure that Ye Xiao was his savior when he hear what Ye Xiao said!

Ye Xiao took out a Pei-Yuan Dan Bead and put it into Ning Biluo's mouth right away.

Ning Biluo was a bit annoyed being fed forcibly, yet Ye Xiao was his savior who had saved him twice, so he didn't resist. When the dan bead went into his mouth, he felt a stream of hot qi suddenly scatter inside his mouth and then rush into his belly. After that, the hot qi spread around his Jing and Mai. Suddenly, he felt his weak body became indescribably comfortable.

His dantian had been empty, yet now as the hot qi kept running into it, it produced some energy. And then the disengaged spiritual qi in his dantian started to gather together. His whole body had regained energy and vigor in a matter of seconds.

Ning Biluo was spirited and said, "What is it? It is actually so wonderful."

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "Nothing special. Just a supreme dan

bead!"

Ning Biluo was shocked again.

He stopped talking.

[He has saved me twice. And now he has given me the precious supreme dan bead!

I continue to owe him more and more.

Considering the return...]

Ning Biluo thought, [His cultivation capability must be enormous. He is at least stronger than Xiu of the Heavens. He made the girl leave by only telling her his name. He is at least in a level that is higher than the limit of this world... What can I possibly give him in return? Things I have will only embarrass me if I take them out!]

Ye Xiao held Ning Biluo and they slowly headed to the city. When they were walking, the Pei-Yuan Dan Bead continued operating. Ning Biluo's body started to operate his cultivation automatically. He had already recovered half of his strength. It was not enough for him to fight yet, but it was enough to let him move freely.

Ye Xiao naturally stopped holding him.

Such heavy rain was truly rare. It didn't let off at all. It rained cats and dogs on the whole world.

They made sure that it was safe around them and then took a break in an abandoned shed.

Ning Biluo was exhausted and Ye Xiao had experienced astonishment.

"Thanks." Ning Biluo rested for a while and then stood up again.

He didn't seem to like sitting. As long as he was able to, he would stand, "I am not a man who is good at saying sweet words. Anyway, if there is anything you need me for, just give me a word. I will do whatever I am capable of for you."

Ye Xiao smiled and looked at him without saying a word.

Ning Biluo was annoyed, "Are you looking down upon me? Are you thinking that you won't have anything that a man like me can help with?"

Ye Xiao smiled, "No. I am just curious since you are exhausted and you have time to rest now, why aren't you sitting down?"

Ning Biluo was quiet for a while and then spoke, "Do you think I don't want to rest. I am an assassin. An assassin has no comfortable life. As long as I am still standing, I can stay alert. Once I sit down... and get used to it, laziness will keep me down forever.

Even if I can resist the laziness and stand up again, it won't be the same! I shall just give up 'sitting' and get used to standing. That's all."

Ye Xiao nodded, "That's true. That's reasonable. You are truly the No. 1 assassin in the Land of Han-Yang!"

He stopped and then continued, "However, I don't have anything you can help me with. I am just being honest." He stood up and spoke blandly, "Now that you are fine, and you have enough energy to defend yourself, I think I should better be off now."

Ning Biluo wouldn't have thought that in the raining night, someone actually saved him and asked nothing for return. He was surprised, "You... You saved me for nothing? Really?"

Ye Xiao became silent for a while and then spoke with his back to him, "At the beginning, I had a purpose. But... You said that you wouldn't serve anybody... So I don't want to push you. Besides... It is never a bad thing to have another friend in the martial world. You don't need to bear it in mind."

Right before he finished talking, he had disappeared in the heavy rain.

He had carried the thought of recruiting Ning Biluo.

But as he said, Ning Biluo had shown his attitude that he didn't want to serve anybody.

It wouldn't be helpful for Ye Xiao to force him.

It would break his faith in Ye Xiao if he were to push him around as his savior. It was impossible for him to do so!

Moreover... He knew that he was really too weak at the moment. If Ning Biluo found out his true status and his true strength, it would be too embarrassing for him. Currently, no one in the House of Ye was a match for Ning Biluo.

Although Ye Xiao believed that Ning Biluo wasn't an ungrateful guy, he knew that they would feel very uncomfortable if Ning Biluo found out the truth.

Ye Xiao was a carefree guy, so he decided against recruiting him upon pondering deeply.

He couldn't recruit Ning Biluo anyway, so he decided to just leave and let Ning Biluo remember him.

Ning Biluo watched Ye Xiao leaving. He wanted to say something, yet he didn't. He could only stare blankly.

"At the beginning, I had a purpose. But... You said that you wouldn't serve anybody... So I don't want to push you."

What Ye Xiao had said made Ning Biluo thrilled.

"What he wanted, was to recruit me..."

"Yet he gave up after he heard what I said to Xiu of the Heavens. And he just left. He didn't even say anything about what he wanted... Apparently, he is a man with extreme pride!"

"He didn't want me to struggle in difficulty, and he didn't want to be embarrassed too. So he just went away and left everything behind."

Ning Biluo was thinking.

"But I am not an ungrateful man, am I?"

"However... Do I really want to be his underling? Isn't it against my will to serve him?" Ning Biluo was collecting his thoughts but couldn't find any answers. He eventually shook his head. [I can't resist my will. I can't be your servant. But I will offer my help anytime you need me!]

He then rushed into the rain like a speedy arrow.

He was heading in the same direction as Ye Xiao.

He was at the Grandmaster Levels of the Sky Origin Stage. In the Land of Han-Yang, he was one of the most powerful men. Although he only recovered half of his strength, he was still much

stronger than Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao wasn't in hurry when he was heading back to the city, and he wasn't in his best condition, so he didn't use the One Laughter in Skyline or Lunisolar Shadow. He wasn't moving very fast.

That's why Ning Biluo could easily sense his trace before he arrived at the city.

Ning Biluo was surprised. In fact, he was shocked. And then he thought that Ye Xiao must have known that he would follow up... So Ye Xiao intended to let him catch up.

Ning Biluo was convinced that Ye Xiao was much stronger than him. Even in his best condition, he would never be a match for Ye Xiao. Besides, he was hurt at the moment!

However, Ye Xiao hadn't turned his back at all.

The next moment, something happened which surprised Ning Biluo more. When Ye Xiao was about to get into the Chen-Xing City, he actually took a breath before he leaped over the tall and huge wall.

The rain was hitting Ning Biluo's face. He was astonished.

He really couldn't understand it. What Ye Xiao had shown had really confused him.

[He actually took a breath before he jumped over the wall?! It was nothing but a wall. Yet he actually needed to take a breath? That... That was even worse than me! No. It's so much worse than me... What is going on? Maybe he is hiding his capability, but who is he hiding from?]

[If he isn't hiding anything... What gave him guts to save me from the grasp of Xiu of the Heavens?]

Ning Biluo was confused.

And then he recalled the first time Ye Xiao had saved him.

That day, he was hunted by the men of the Boundless Lord. He was wounded, and he had to operate a lot of healing martial arts to cure himself. He was trying to leave secretly after he got through the fight, yet his enemies found him...

...

Chapter 98: How is it possible?

Ning Biluo remembered that the three men who had been hunting him didn't have high cultivation levels. They were just at the first stage of the Sky Origin Stage. However, Ning Biluo had run out of energy at that time. Because his secret martial art had rebounded onto himself, he was badly weakened. If not for the assailants fearing his reputation and not daring to fight head on, he would have died a long time ago.

His enemies didn't fight him using their utmost efforts, but he was badly injured. When he was escaping, he met Ye Xiao. He showed mercy towards him and pushed him away and was surprisingly saved by him. He remembered the face. He would never forget it.

And he would never forget the shocking power of the gelid qi.

However, this time, Ye Xiao had changed his appearance. That was the reason why Ning Biluo couldn't recognize him.

Until Ye Xiao said "I have saved you twice" to disclose his identity after saving him from the Xiu of the Heavens, Ning Biluo was sure Ye Xiao was his savior.

As Ning Biluo thought deeper about it, there seemed to be many strange facts popping up here and there.

Things seemed to be suspicious to him at the moment. The last time in the long street was his first contact with Ye Xiao. While he

was busy fleeing, he protected Ye Xiao from danger. It was rather easy for him to push Ye Xiao that time.

If Ye Xiao had been a peerless cultivator, it wouldn't be so easy to push him away. In fact, Ning Biluo had pushed Ye Xiao away so easily although he was weak at that moment. That meant Ye Xiao was truly not that strong!

However, it didn't matter how strong Ye Xiao was, and it didn't matter how he saved Ning Biluo. It was not important to Ning Biluo! The truth was that Ye Xiao actually saved Ning Biluo!

Although Ye Xiao was weak, he had saved Ning Biluo twice. For Ning Biluo, this fact was more than enough to be grateful.

However, what Ning Biluo noticed was that this Purple Lotus Master seemed to be totally different from the guy in the long street. Different appearances. Different behaviors. Different ethos. They were totally different men!

Well, he was right about it though. That day in the long street, Ye Xiao was "Feng Zhiling". The funny part was that Xiu-Er knew Feng Zhiling well. So apparently, Ye Xiao couldn't show up looking like Feng Zhiling this time.

That's why Ye Xiao disguised himself with the appearance of the true Purple Lotus Master. So of course, Ning Biluo could believe that they were the same person!

While Ning Biluo thought further, he noticed a few more suspicious points. He was confused.

At the moment, Ye Xiao had disappeared. Ning Biluo followed up in a hurry. He was so confused that he had an incredible urge to find out the truth.

He climbed over the wall effortlessly, as if flying. Ye Xiao was unable to do it as breezily and elegantly as he could.

The capability of a man in the Grandmaster Levels of Sky Origin Stage wasn't a joke.

Even though it was raining heavily, he could still sense the direction where Ye Xiao was heading, so he silently followed him.

On the other hand, Ye Xiao had absolutely no idea that he was being followed.

He thought that Ning Biluo would just leave after he had gone away.

The capital was truly a place full of troubles for Ning Biluo at the moment. Even though he wouldn't encounter the Xiu of the Heavens, he would still be in a tough situation because he was now a rat on the street in the capital...

Anyway, Ye Xiao believed that Ning Biluo would never follow him!

It was quite a simple truth. [You don't want to serve anybody, so I won't force you to. I have saved you twice and I don't have any requests from you... It all clearly pointed the truth that you owe me a lot and I owe you nothing...

Then what reason do you have to follow me?]

Apparently, he was wrong about it this time. Even a wise man who had made a thousand right decisions could make mistakes after all. From his perspective, he had nothing more to do with Ning Biluo, but from Ning Biluo's perspective, he couldn't understand how the two men who had saved him could be the same guy. Besides, he was saved twice and was unable to repay the debts. So he was upset. So he eventually decided to follow Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao didn't know he was being followed, but he was cautious as usual. He had changed directions several times to check out if anybody was following him and then quietly went back to his house when he felt safe.

What he had done was enough to escape from most of the people in this world.

It was even enough to escape from those top superior cultivators like the Xiu of the Heavens.

However, it was not enough to escape from Ning Biluo.

Ning Biluo was one of the most capable cultivators in this world, yet he was still far from being the No. 1 cultivator. However, he was the No. 1 assassin in the Land of Han-Yang.

Tracking and sneaking were the special skills of an assassin.

He could sneak away by taking advantage of the tiniest of opportunity and flee far away, even when facing someone who was much stronger than him...

With the same line of reasoning, it was never a difficult task for him to track people whom others were unable to track.

He was the best assassin and also the best tracker!

That's why he could catch up with Ye Xiao.

But he was surprised!

From the whole tracking process, he was sure about one thing; his savior was not a top superior cultivator like he had thought; instead, he was quite weak in cultivation.

He found that Ye Xiao's cultivation capability was far lower than his own and was even under the Sky Origin Stage!

According to that, Ning Biluo began to speculate that this Purple Lotus Master could be the same guy who was at the long street.

They were both men with a low cultivation capability.

Yet he had been saved by this man twice from the hands of some superior cultivators who were at the Sky Origin Stage!

That was however the first strange thing.

There was second strange thing... He found that Ye Xiao was extremely cautious, even more cautious than himself. In such a heavy rain, Ye Xiao was sure that nobody would follow him, yet he changed his direction for dozens of times. Even though Ning Biluo was quite good at tracking, he had nearly lost him several times.

In fact, he had lost him, but he had a strong spiritual sensation, had abundance of experience in tracking, and he had recovered most of his strength, so he was luckily able to get back on track.

If he had been lacking in any of these three departments, he could have never kept up with Ye Xiao!

So he was sure about one thing, [In this world, nobody except me can keep following him. Others would surely be left behind! That is an absolute fact!]

"Well, maybe there is another one who can do the same as me... Red in the Sky. Maybe he can catch up. Who knows!"

Ning Biluo murmured.

He couldn't think of anyone else who was as capable in tracking as himself. He thought that Ye Xiao was more lubricious than a loach, more deceitful than a fox!

Finally, Ning Biluo saw Ye Xiao enter the House of Ye. Even though he was an experienced man, he couldn't help being astonished.

[This guy... is actually... from General Ye Nantian's house?]

He then flew into the house like a wind without hesitation.

The rainy dark night was the best cover for a stalker.

He arrived at the roof of Ye Xiao's room easily and lowered his body.

Ye Xiao entered his room and finally took a breath of relief. He thought that everything was settled!

He was preparing to return to his true appearance, yet he had a strange feeling and he didn't know why.

He felt like he was being watched by someone else. It made him feel uncomfortable!

"What is wrong? Am I followed?" Ye Xiao murmured in mind.

He then jumped up and rushed into the rain again. - Poof!- He got to the roof immediately.

When he was going to check around, he saw Ning Biluo lying in front of him!

At that moment, Ye Xiao was shocked!

And Ning Biluo was shocked too!

[You have returned to your house... I am already lying on your roof... Yet you actually came out again!

Could you even be more cautious buddy...]

The stalking specialist Ning Biluo hadn't thought that Ye Xiao would come out again. So when Ye Xiao was standing beside him, he was still lying on the roof like a fool...

"Oh! It is you!" When Ye Xiao saw Ning Biluo lying on the roof like a fool, he couldn't help feeling a bit dizzy!

[What the hell! I was so cautious all the way back, yet I actually missed this guy!

He could actually follow me to my own house and I actually failed to notice it...]

At this moment, Ye Xiao was rather frustrated.

At the same time, he felt an eagerness to improve himself. [If I am what I was in my previous life, do you really think that you could stalk me? In the past, I could kill you by simply breathing out! Damn it! I am too weak!]

After a while, they both entered Ye Xiao's room and looked at each other without uttering a word.

It was raining so heavily that staying outside in the rain was simply out of the question. When Ye Xiao discovered that it was Ning Biluo, he stopped being contentious and said, "Come on in."

Ning Biluo was stunned and he just followed him in. It seemed he was still unable to understand the whole situation.

"Well... This... This is your room?" Ning Biluo sat on the luxurious chair. He was a bit speechless.

"Yes." Ye Xiao wiped and dried his clothes with a towel.

Ning Biluo didn't use such an inconvenient way. He naturally use the method that people of the martial world usually did: operating the spiritual qi!

Some mist immediately appeared around his body, and then his

clothes became dry in just a second...

"Is... Is this your home?" Ning Biluo was still a bit blank.

[How... How is it possible?]

...

Chapter 99: How to Be Indifferent

There were very few things in the world that could make Ning Biluo feel shocked to this extent.

Yet what happened at that moment had really astonished him to an unprecedented degree.

"What are you talking about... This is my room. What else can it be if not my home?" Ye Xiao showed his back to him while carefully removing the disguise on his face.

There was no need for him to wear a disguise now, so he decided to show some sincerity.

"I see. It turns out you are Ye Nantian! The great general! No wonder there has been no one who knows about your background. It turns out you are from the higher realm, and you are here to escape your troubles! You are so weak now. Is it because you are suffering some illness?"

Ning Biluo looked at Ye Xiao's back. He was enlightened and said, "Hmm... Aren't you supposed to stay in the north? Why are you here..."

"Now I know why you saved me. You knew me for a long time..."

Ye Xiao felt funny and he turned around showing Ning Biluo a big smile, "I am not the General Ye."

At the moment, he was wearing his true face.

His handsome face which was a bit boyish was revealed to Ning Biluo.

Ning Biluo was astonished when he saw his boyish look!

[Damn it! I made a wrong guess again?]

"You... You, you, you..." Ning Biluo opened his mouth and looked at the face which belonged to a boy who was younger than 18. At that moment, he felt his brain exploding.

That was a feeling of "the whole world went wrong" in his brain.

Ning Biluo thought that the Purple Lotus Master was the great General Ye Nantian. That conclusion could perfectly explain every question in his mind. However, when Ye Xiao's true face was revealed to him, those questions in his mind returned once again!

His brain was blank for a long while.

Ye Xiao gave him a big smile, "What? Is it really that surprising?"

Now he had clearly seen the No. 1 assassin's face.

He was slim; he was neither tall nor short, only in average height, a little bit shorter than Ye Xiao himself. He was not handsome, but not ugly either.

His eyes looked like there was an ocean in them; they were sharp like swords.

He would be absolutely inconspicuous amongst a crowd. He truly had the first quality to be an assassin - inconspicuousness. However, when such a man burst out, he would be shining like a star. He would shock the whole world within a few seconds!

Yet it seemed that he was not very up to standards at the moment...

Because right now... he was looking at Ye Xiao's face with his mouth trembling. After a long while, he had finally pulled himself together and sat on the chair dispiritedly. He spoke weakly, "Please tell me the truth. Is the man who have saved me twice really you? Isn't he someone else?"

Ye Xiao laughed, "What? You have a problem with it? Do you think I need to lie to you about it?"

"It turns out... Twice, you have only shown me your disguised face... There was only one truth. You are weak." Ning Biluo's appearance was quite funny at the moment. His expression was changing continuously.

Ye Xiao was bland. He didn't reply, but only collected the thoughts in his mind, [Screw you. I have saved you twice. You have some words to say. That's fine. But the last sentence was truly unnecessary!]

What do you mean... 'weak'!]

Ning Biluo was lost in his thoughts. He finally sighed and then spoke again, "I understand... I understand why you want to recruit me... You are so weak at the moment, so you definitely need a man like me. It is indeed rather difficult to protect yourself in the capital during such a miserable time, since you are weak."

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "What a pity. You won't serve anybody."

He was a bit upset, [This guy... is truly not good at talking. He keeps mentioning something he shouldn't. I am weak indeed, but that's not his business. Does he really need to mention it again and again?]

Ning Biluo lowered his head and thought. After a while, he said, "I am sorry. Even though you have saved me twice and that made me owe you two lives... When I think about bowing in front of others and waiting for orders... I feel terrible and frustrated. So..."

Ye Xiao understood him. He nodded. He had already thought about it.

The reason why Ning Biluo could become the No. 1 assassin in the

world is his pride. So Ye Xiao said, "In fact, you don't need to feel vexatious. I never wanted to force you into anything."

Ning Biluo understood what it meant. If he hadn't followed Ye Xiao, he wouldn't need to be vexatious like this.

He was suffering from his own actions, wasn't he?

"But, how can I pay you back?" Ning Biluo asked embarrassedly.

"Heh, heh. Have I ever mentioned anything... about paying me back?" Ye Xiao smiled blandly, "You have your faith to insist. You have your path to walk on. And I have mine. We are the same kind. I understand you."

"So, whatever you think you should do, just do it." Ye Xiao said peacefully, "Don't care about anything between you and me. They are nothing but turns in life."

"But I do care. How can I not?" Ning Biluo smiled bitterly.

Ye Xiao was speechless.

[Now you care. Yet you told me seriously that you won't serve me. What do you want?

What the hell is wrong with this guy!]

"Is there anything I can do for you at the moment?" Ning Biluo seriously asked, "I can do it for you in any case. I will talk about leaving after that. It can be anything!"

"Unlucky for me. I don't have anything for you to do right now!" Ye Xiao refused stoutly.

He had his own pride too.

[You don't want to serve anybody. I won't force anybody.

You have your insistence. I have mine. We have the same quality!]

"Can't you just give me a chance to pay you back? Do you want me carry this heart of regret for the rest of my life!" Ning Biluo asked with frustration.

"Heh, heh. It won't take long. There will be a chance." Ye Xiao spoke ambiguously, "Just be patient. There will be a chance for you to pay me back soon."

Ning Biluo sighed in mind.

He understood Ye Xiao. He knew that even if there was a day that Ye Xiao would need his help, he was sure that Ye Xiao would never ask for it.

And he didn't know when Ye Xiao would need his help in the future!

Ning Biluo was a proud man. The guy in front of him was young and a bit laddish, yet he was also an extremely proud guy. He knew that Ye Xiao was even prouder than himself!

"I want to rebuilt my assassination union." Ning Biluo spoke in a low voice.

"Oh." Ye Xiao had clean up himself and walked to his bed. He casually took off his shoes and then lied on the bed. He also put both his feet on the bed casually. He was a bit impolite anyway, as there was still a guest in the room.

Yet Ning Biluo understood that Ye Xiao acted this way because he didn't want to talk further. He knew that Ye Xiao was telling him to leave now.

"I want your advice, please." Ning Biluo said.

They both understood that Ning Biluo was saying yes to his recruitment. Ning Biluo was still a bit resisting this though.

Yet he had no other choice since Ye Xiao had saved him twice.

[I will establish an assassination union for you as my return.]

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "That's unfortunate. I am not an assassin, so I don't have any advice. I think I should better keep silent in front of a specialist."

Ning Biluo stood up and said, "I have nothing to say."

He walked several steps and spoke again, "I won't leave the capital for the next several days."

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "As you wish. The world is so big and you are a free man."

He raised his head and spoke seriously, "Ning Biluo, do not take what I do for you as an exchange of interests! We are men of the martial world. It is nothing but only fate... Why take it as a deed to heart?"

Ning Biluo was stunned and then he spoke embarrassedly, "Fine then. I am off now. I won't tell anybody about you. You have my word."

Ye Xiao spoke peacefully, "I have never told you anything. Ning Biluo, as a man in the martial world, you are a bit too calculative. You don't need to!"

Ning Biluo smiled embarrassedly and thought, [Come on man. I owe you my life twice. And you won't give me any chance to pay you back. How can I not be calculative? If I just ignore it, doesn't it make me a graceless and ungrateful man!]

He walked by the window and then stopped. He spoke in a low voice, "Lord Ye, let's all step back a bit. I can serve you three years. In three years, I will follow your orders. After three years, I become a free man. How about that?"

Ye Xiao laughed, "No! I don't want it!"

And then he continued, "It is wet and rainy outside. Be safe... Don't forget to close my window when you leave, please."

Ning Biluo was refused again.

Three years was the limit of what he can do. Yet Ye Xiao refused it so stoutly. Ning Biluo understood that Ye Xiao was too proud to accept it as he had refused Ye Xiao once.

Ye Xiao would never accept this repayment.

For Ning Biluo, it was not charity; it was the biggest compromise he could make!

He then sighed with frustration and left. As Ye Xiao wished, he closed the window gently.

Ning Biluo heard Ye Xiao spoke inside, "Now you have done one thing for me, haven't you? From now on, you don't owe me anything. Go and feel relaxed. You are an assassin. I am from the

General's House. We are in different sides. We have different paths. There is no need to care too much about each other."

And then the light went off inside.

Ning Biluo was upset, [What I have done for him was only closing the window for him as he wished.

Can it really be as important as saving my life twice?]

...

Chapter 100: Tough Time For The Salesroom

Ning Biluo realized that Ye Xiao was speaking naturally. There was no anger or displeasure in his voice. It was spoken in a peaceful context. Ning Biluo knew that Ye Xiao truly didn't care about it.

[You can be indifferent, but I... Can I?]

Ning Biluo stayed on the roof in the heavy rain for a long time. Eventually, he sighed and flew away.

Ye Xiao smiled in the dark and murmured, "As an assassin, he is cute... However, he underestimated me. If I am a man who always does favors for benefits, I won't risk my own life to save you, will I?"

"Besides... If the No. 1 assassin becomes my servant... Then he will no longer be the No. 1 assassin. He will even fail to be a assassin... The change of one's faith will lower one's strength..."

"So I will never constrain you by asking you to repay the favor."

"Have a safe trip, my friend."

Ye Xiao fell asleep quickly.

The past events had truly left him exhausted.

...

The next day, in the Ling-Bao Hall Salesroom.

Ling-Bao Hall had also been through a busy time these days.

Since the big boss had arrived, the atmosphere had become tense in the Ling-Bao Hall. The whole place was full of anxiety.

Especially Master Guan, Guan Wanshan. He was having a really difficult time.

He had been looking forward for Feng Zhiling's arrival.

The big boss, the big fat guy Wan Zhenghao, had badly lost his weight these days. That was an efficient way to lose weight. He was like a mad man walking round and round in the salesroom everyday.

Hmm. Regarding his body type, it might be a bit inappropriate to describe it as "walking round and round"; "rolling round and round" should be better...

Every time he saw Guan Wanshan, he would grab him and ask, "Did Feng Zhiling come? He is here, isn't he? No?"

If he saw Guan Wanshan ten times in a day, then he will ask the

questions about Feng Zhiling at least twenty times.

When he let Guan Wanshan go, he would add, "Why hasn't he come yet? When will he come?"

During their conversation, he will ask some other questions from time to time. That was why he will ask this one question 'at least' twenty times a day.

"He couldn't be dead, could he?"

"Why is he still not coming... What's going with that bastard?"

"Why isn't he here yet? Do you know what happened to him? Did he die for some venereal disease or what?"

"I think maybe I should send someone to check the brothel. What do you think?"

"Why is he not coming? You. Explain it to me..."

It truly brought Guan Wanshan a painful headache. He was nearly freaked out.

It wasn't overstated. Everyone who had been asked the same questions dozens times a day would be freaked out. And his IQ would never stop being reduced...

Guan Wanshan thought that if the big boss kept asking him, he would go mad. [Feng Zhiling... He is not my son, is he? How can I possibly know that when he will come or why he doesn't come? You keep asking me. Who can I ask? Explain? What on earth can I explain? What clue do I have to explain? Explain your ass!

But... I can not turn down my boss, can I?]

Every time after he had humbly answered all these meaningless and repeated questions, he felt like he wanted to go mad. Maybe the next time, he would really go crazy...

As for now, when Guan Wanshan noticed the big boss, the only thing he wanted to do was to run away.

However, the salesroom was not a spacious place after all. Even he wanted to escape, there was not many places that he could hide.

He just couldn't escape the big boss, could he?

Day after day, the big boss was getting more and more anxious. Instead of coming across Guan Wanshan, he ran to Guan Wanshan's room shouting in a hurry, "Has he come? Any news? When will he come?"

When he failed to find Guan Wanshan, he asked everybody in the salesroom to look for Guan Wanshan, "Bring Master Guan to me now!"

So sometimes, Guan Wanshan was brought to the big boss.

And then the big boss started his questions, "Has he come? Any news? When will he come?"

Guan Wanshan was hearing the same vicious spells when he heard the questions. His face would turn pale and his eyes would become blank and straight. Sometimes he just wanted to die.

He really wanted to shout out, [Damn it! You keep asking the same questions eight hundred times a day. Do you think it is funny?]

However, he had thought of this words for eight million times and still couldn't dare to speak out.

He was working under the big boss's place. He couldn't be so offensive. He had to answer the boss's questions in a proper way!

In fact, the big boss, Wan Zhenghao was more upset himself.

He was so upset that he nearly wanted to kill himself.

He had made an awesome decision to store such a precious treasure. It was kept in his place for three thousand years. Yet he never had seen its true value. Every time when there was an auction, he desperately wanted it to be taken away.

For three thousand years, nobody wanted it. Even when it was bought several times, it would be returned in a short while. He had been so upset about it, because he thought that it was a curse set to have him humiliated.

In fact, it was this very treasure that brought him to today's glory. It was obviously a blessing to him. Why did he so desperately wanted to get rid of it?

He was out of his mind... Wasn't he?

Now, it was finally sold. Yet right after it was gone, he realized that it was a priceless superior treasure.

That was truly, a huge tragedy.

When he knew the truth, he almost hung himself right away.

That was just a normal thing for him...

Everyone knew that the Ling-Bao Hall was inherited from generation to generation. No matter who became the big boss, he needed to change his name to Wan Zhenghao.

That was the tradition of Ling-Bao Hall.

However, only Wan Zhenghao himself knew the truth.

All those heritors were actually the same guy... Wan Zhenghao himself. The inheriting matter was just a cover.

Nobody knew about it.

"It is lucky that nobody knows the truth. Otherwise, I will be seriously disgraced this time... I have to get the Cosmic Hades back..." Wan Zhenghao was pacing around anxiously.

[I may die if I don't get it back soon enough.

There is a slayer that I should never mess with staring at me every day...]

In his room, the middle-aged man watched Wan Zhenghao pacing and spoke indifferently, "It won't do any help pacing around. Wan Zhenghao. You brilliant bastard. You had kept such a precious treasure for so many years and you have actually never told me anything."

Wan Zhenghao was sweating because of fear. His muscles were trembling as if dancing and he spoke weakly, "I didn't know its value, did I... I thought it was just some garbage that kept bringing me disgrace... Ah. I was so blind..."

The middle-aged man sneered and said, "I have made such great efforts to keep you alive. I have taught you the secret martial arts so that you can prolong your life. I have helped you make your Ling-Bao Hall the No. 1 salesroom in the whole land... Wan

Zhenghao, and you pay me back with all this?"

Wan Zhenghao was extremely frightened and said, "Please. Please... I didn't know the truth about the Cosmic Hades. It is true... If I knew it, I wouldn't put it in the auctions so many times, would I? I wouldn't sell it for only several millions silver bars, right? It was valuable only in the hand of the outstanding superior masters like you. Besides, if I knew that you would like it, I would just give it to you as a gift. If you just gave me a slight piece of favor, it would be more valuable than billions of gold in the mortal world... There is no way I could be so stupid..."

The middle-aged man frowned and thought, [That is true. He is talking reasonably indeed.

It was just like a piece of dark gold being regarded as mud by a ignorant poor little rat... who didn't think it pretty and valuable, instead he think it had the same color with shit...]

"Any news now?" he then asked, "That guy... Feng Zhiling?"

Wan Zhenghao wanted to kill himself when he heard the question.

Recently he had been asking Guan Wanshan the same question many times over, and actually he had been asked this same question by the middle-aged man for the same amount of times. What Guan Wanshan felt was exactly what he felt.

Guan Wanshan was just freaked out being asked while Wan Zhenghao was being threatened... That were quite different things.

"Not at the moment." Wan Zhenghao was upset, because he knew what the middle-aged man would say next.

"Why don't you have any information yet..."

"When will you have anything..."

"How long do you want me to wait? Do you know how much time you have wasted me..."

These words had been said several hundred times these days. Wan Zhenghao could even recite them in reverse.

- Bang! - Suddenly the door was opened. The next moment, the old man Guan Wanshan rushed in like a vigorous seven-teen years old guy yelling excitingly, "The... That... He... He has come!"

The two men in the room were shocked at the same time.

They kept their eyes wide opened staring at the old man who looked like he had taken aphrodisiac. They were stunned.

The room they were staying was a place that nobody else was allowed to entered. Guan Wanshan was in a high position in the

Ling-Bao Hall and he knew about this room, but usually he never dared to get in. What happened to him?

Guan Wanshan shouted and then gasped. He was holding his knees. He was old after all. He got tired after being excited for a moment. His face was in red, not because he had moved tempestuously, because he was too excited.

[Oh thank god! The days that I need to be asked the same questions eight million times a day have finally come to the end...

The guy... Feng Zhiling has finally arrived!]

...